







ABS. 190. 230







Handwritten text at the top of the page, possibly a title or page number, which is mostly illegible due to fading.



Handwritten text at the bottom of the page, which is mostly illegible due to fading.

*Frontispiece?*



*Britannia presenting the Queen, and  
her Children to Religion and Liberty.*

*J. Wale delin.*

*J. H. H. sculp.*

A COMPLETE

HISTORY  
*George* OF *Studies.*  
ENGLAND,

BY

QUESTION and ANSWER,

FROM

The INVASION of JULIUS CÆSAR

TO

The YEAR M.DCC.LXVI.

Extracted from the

Most Celebrated English Historians,

PARTICULARLY

RAPIN, TINDAL, HUME, and SMOLLETT;

And calculated for the

Instruction and Entertainment of the Youth of both Sexes.

---

*Historia verò Testis (est) Temporum, Lux Veritatis, Vita Memoriae,  
Magistra Vitæ, Nuntia Vetustatis.*

CICERO.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for S. CROWDER, at the Looking-Glass, and  
J. COOTE, at the King's-Arms, in Paternoster-Row.

MDCCLXVI.

E R R A T A.

Page 6, line 9, from the bottom, for *six hundred thousand pounds*, read *seven hundred thousand pounds*.

And line 8, for *seven hundred thousand pounds*, read *eight hundred thousand pounds*.



# P R E F A C E.

**T**HE knowledge of history, especially of the history of one's own country, has been always considered as extremely useful, and even, in some cases, indispensably necessary. In a despotic government, indeed, where the power of the sovereign is absolute and unlimited, this knowledge is of less consequence; because, every thing being there ruled by arbitrary will, the subject has no other method of securing his life, his liberty, and his property, than by recommending himself to the favour of the prince, or of those who act under his commission. But in a free government, where the power of the sovereign is limited and restrained, this knowledge is of the utmost importance; because, every thing being there determined by certain fixed and established laws, the subject, who knows and obeys these laws, has nothing to fear from the resentment of the prince, but enjoys a perfect and undisturbed security. These laws, however, may be best learned from the study of history. And as the government of England is universally allowed to be one of the freest, if not the very freest, that ever existed, the study of the English history must be peculiarly useful. From this study we may derive a knowledge of the laws of the land, of the constitution of the kingdom, of the lives of those heroes and patriots who have distinguished themselves in the service of their country; and, in a word, of all those great and glorious actions, that have been performed by the natives of this island.

As this study, therefore, is so very beneficial, it cannot, possibly, be too early begun, or too carefully prosecuted. The first impressions, it is well known, are commonly the most lasting. The opinions we form, or the prejudices we im'ibe, in our tender years, we find it extremely difficult, in a more advanced age, either to alter or correct. It must, therefore, be the duty of parents, guardians, tutors, schoolmasters, and of all who are intrusted with the education of youth, to imbue their minds with proper notions of the history of their country; and for this purpose the following work is particularly calculated. Nor is this the only end, which it may be made to answer. It may likewise be of some use to persons of riper years, whether they are, or are not,

not, acquainted with the history of their country. The latter it may enable, in some degree, to acquire this necessary branch of knowledge; and to the former it may serve as a kind of remembrancer, to revive their memory; to connect in their minds the scattered events; and to help them to decide, without having recourse to larger histories, any controversy that may arise in conversation.

So much for the utility of a work of this kind in general. Why the author of the present work has presumed to offer to the public a new history of England, by question and answer, remains to be explained.

The author of the former history of England by question and answer, though, by no means, chargeable with partiality or prejudice, appears to have failed in the following particulars. He does not give, in our opinion, a sufficiently distinct account of the English constitution. He omits entirely that part of the history, which precedes the union of the Saxon heptarchy, comprehending a space of no less than 856 years; and though the events, which happened during that period, bear no proportion, either in number or importance, to the length of time, yet they ought not surely to be passed over in silence. He forgets to preserve the necessary connection between different facts of the same nature, and even between the different circumstances of the same fact. The account of parliamentary transactions is frequently interrupted by the relation of military incidents; and the history of an expedition to the East or West Indies is sometimes broken and disjointed by the mention of a battle in Germany, upon which it has no immediate or visible dependance. Thus the reader often finds it difficult to form a distinct idea of many particular occurrences, and, of consequence, is the less likely to remember them. He neglects, at least in a great measure, to mark the progress of the arts and sciences, and to record the names and properties of those great men who have contributed towards their advancement.

In all these particulars, the author of the present work has endeavoured to supply the defects of his predecessor: how far he has succeeded in his endeavours, must be left to the impartial decision of the public.



## A COMPLETE

History of *ENGLAND*,

By QUESTION and ANSWER.

## C H A P. I.

*A general Description of the COUNTRY; its Climate, Soil, Produce, &c.*Q **W**HAT is the most useful kind of study?

A. The study of history.

Q What history should one first begin to study?

A. The history of one's own country.

Q What is the name of your own country?

A. *Great-Britain*.

Q Has it always gone by that name?

A. No: it was originally called *Bratanack*, probably from the great quantity of tin, with which it abounds. It was afterwards named *Albion*, from its white chalky cliffs, as some think, which are visible from the continent. It then went by the names of *Bretanike*, and *Bretanea*. It was some time after divided into *England*, and *Scotland*; the former lying to the south, the latter to the north. And last of all, upon the accession of *James VI.* of *Scotland* to the crown of *England*, it was distinguished by the name of *Great-Britain*, which it still retains.

Q Do not the *British* dominions in *Europe* comprehend something more than the island called *Great Britain*?

A. Yes: they likewise comprehend the kingdom of *Ireland*; but of that we shall have occasion to speak, when we come to describe its conquest under *Henry II.*

Q. What is the shape of *Great-Britain*?

A. Triangular: the angles being the *Lizard-point* to the west; that of *Foreland*, or *Sandwich* near *Dover* to the east; and that of *Straitby-head* to the north.

Q. How is it bounded?

A. By the *British* channel on the south, which divides it from *France*; by the *German* sea on the east, which separates it from *Flanders*, *Germany*, and *Denmark*; by the *Deucaliedonian* ocean on the north; and by the *Irish* sea, and the *Atlantic* ocean, on the west.

Q. What is the extent of *Great-Britain*?

A. Its length is about 660 miles; its breadth about 300; and its circumference is 1836 miles.

Q. What proportion does *Great-Britain* bear to the other kingdoms of *Europe*?

A. It is nearly equal to one tenth part of *Russia*; to one third of *Germany*; to one third of *Sweden*; to one third of *Poland*; and to one third of *Turkey*. It is less than *Denmark* by one half; than *Italy* by one fifth; than *Spain* by one sixth; and than *France* by one fourteenth. It is three times as large as *Portugal*; six times as large as *Switzerland*; six times as large as the *Austrian Netherlands*; and ten times as large as the *United Provinces*.

Q. When did the southern part of *Great-Britain* first receive the name of *England*?

A. About the year 827, when *Egbert* subdued all the kingdoms of the *Heptarchy*, and reduced them into one.

Q. How is *England* divided from *Scotland*?

A. By the rivers *Tweed* and *Solway*, and the mountains of *Chirviot*.

Q. What is the general face of the country?

A. It is, in general, plain and level, though, in some parts, chequered with hills and dales; and is watered by a variety of springs and rivers.

Q. What are the principal rivers of *England*?

A. The *Thames*, the *Medway*, the *Severne*, the *Humber*, the *Trent*, and the *Ouse*.

Q. What is the nature of its soil?

A. It is rich and fruitful; producing, in great abundance, all the necessaries and conveniencies of life.

Q. What is its chief produce?

A.

*A.* Corn, cattle, wool, and timber; lead, iron, and tin; the last of which is allowed to be the best in the universe.

Q. What animals does *England* afford?

*A.* Almost all those animals, at least all the useful ones, that are to be found in the other countries of *Europe*; and some of them arrive at a greater degree of perfection here, than in any other part of the world. The oxen, particularly, and the sheep, are of a larger size; and the horses, whether for war, for hunting, or the plough, are universally preferred to those of any other country.

Q. Are there any wild beasts in *England*?

*A.* None that are dangerous. It is said, indeed, to have once abounded with wolves; but the *English* kings, by imposing a yearly tax of three hundred wolves heads upon the *Welsh* princes, found means, in a short time, to destroy the whole species.

Q. What kind of a climate does *England* enjoy?

*A.* A much more mild and gentle one than those countries which lie in the same latitude on the continent; the heat of the summer, and the cold of the winter, being, both of them, tempered by the breezes from the sea. The air, however, is not very pure, and the weather is extremely changeable.

## CHAP. II.

### Of the GOVERNMENT of *England*.

Q. WHAT is the nature of the *English* government?

*A.* 'Tis of a mixt nature; being partly Monarchical, partly Aristocratical, and partly Democratical. The Monarchy is represented by the King, the Aristocracy by the Lords, and the Democracy by the Commons, which two last compose the Parliament.

Q. Do the women succeed to the throne?

*A.* They do, in default of male issue, as in all other countries of *Europe*, except *France*, where, by what is called the *Salic* law, the women are excluded from the succession.

#### 4 HISTORY of ENGLAND.

Q. Whether is the crown hereditary, or elective?

A. 'Tis hereditary; but not so strictly, but that the true heir, and sometimes even the royal family, has been set aside, in order to make room for another, whose advancement to the throne was supposed to be more for the good of the public.

Q. How many families have sat upon the *English* throne?

A. Seven.

Q. What are their names?

A. The first is the *Saxon*, or *Anglo-Saxon* family, for, before the arrival of these people, the kingdom was never united under one sovereign; the second is that of the *Danes*; the third, that of the *Normans*; the fourth, that of *Plantagenet*, or the house of *Anjou*; the fifth, that of *Tudor*; the sixth, that of *Stuart*; and the seventh, and present family, that of *Brunswick*.

Q. How many kings did each of these families produce?

A. The *Saxon* family produced seventeen kings; the *Danish* family three kings; the *Norman*, four; the *Plantagenet*, or house of *Anjou*, fourteen; the *Tudor*, three kings and two queens; the *Stuart*, four kings, and two queens; and from the present, or *Brunswick* family, three kings have sprung.

### CHAP. III.

#### Of the KING.

Q. WHAT power is the king of *England* possessed of?

A. He is possessed of very great power, as well in civil and military, as in ecclesiastical affairs.

Q. What power has he in civil affairs?

A. He alone has the power to make peace, or declare war; to conclude leagues, or treaties; to send, or receive ambassadors; to call, prorogue, or dissolve the parliament; to confer titles of honour; to pardon criminals, or lessen the degree of their punishment; to coin money, though not to fix the current value of it, which can be done only by consent of parliament; and to dispose of all places of trust, and profit, under the government. He is supreme judge,

judge, or lord chief-justice, in all parts of his dominions. He fills up all the offices of judicature; has liberty to preside in all tribunals, and in all cases, that of high treason excepted, in which he himself is plaintiff. No bill can pass into a law without his assent; nor, should he refuse it, is he obliged to assign any reason for his refusal.

Q. Does his power extend no farther?

A. He is heir, in the last resort, in his kingdom; that is, all estates, where there is no heir, revert, or escheat to the lord of the manor, and, in default of him, to the king.

Q. What is his power in military affairs?

A. I have already observed, that he alone has the power to declare war. He has likewise the absolute command of the army and navy, and may employ them in whatever expeditions, and enterprizes, he pleases. He has also the sole nomination of all the superior officers, whether in the land or sea service. The militia too is entirely at his command. In a word, he is vested with the whole executive power of the government.

Q. What power has he in ecclesiastical affairs?

A. He is the supreme moderator, and governor of the church of *England*, over all persons, and in all causes; a title which was assumed by queen *Elizabeth*, instead of that of *Supreme Head*, which had been used by *Henry VIII.* and *Edward VI.* He has the nomination to all bishoprics, and to several other benefices; enjoys the revenues of vacant sees; lays claim to tenths and annats; nor can the clergy meet in convocation, without his express mandate; an indulgence, indeed, which has not been granted them since the beginning of the reign of *George I.*

Q. In what manner is the king of *England* waited upon?

A. In a kneeling posture; nor is any one allowed to kiss his hand, or those of any of the royal family, without paying them this mark of respect.

Q. How is he enabled to support his dignity?

A. By his fixt revenues.

Q. Are they very considerable?

A. They are.

Q. To what may they amount?

A. It is to be observed, that, before the Revolution, the whole standing revenue of the state was in the hands of the

## 6 HISTORY of ENGLAND.

prince, and was solely at his disposal. There was then no distinction between what was allotted for the support of the king's household, and what was assigned for the service of the public. By this means, the king might reserve as much as he pleased for his own private use, and employ no more than he thought proper in the service of the nation. Accordingly, it appears, that from the time of the Restoration to that of the Revolution, the public revenue had been constantly embezzled, and large sums had been frequently sunk, without being applied to the purposes for which they were granted. In order to remedy this growing evil, it was wisely enacted at the Revolution, that a separate income should be allowed for the maintenance of the king's household, and the support of his dignity; and that the rest of the revenue should be entirely subjected to the command of the parliament. This appropriation of the revenue is one of the greatest advantages produced by the Revolution, and is indeed the chief bulwark of the national liberties; as it deprives the crown of the power of disposing of the public money at pleasure; and obliges it to submit every article of expence to the examination of parliament; so that the measures of the court are continually canvassed with the utmost severity, and any embezzlement is discovered with so much ease, that delinquents can never expect to escape condign punishment.

Q. What was the amount of the whole revenue at the time of the Revolution?

A. About two millions sterling.

Q. What is the amount of that part of it at present, which is allotted for the maintenance of the king's household, and the support of his dignity?

A. King *William* had, for this purpose, or, as it is called, the *civil list*, six hundred thousand pounds; queen *Anne*, the same sum; *George I.* the same; *George II.* seven hundred thousand pounds; and his present majesty, eight hundred thousand.

A. What is the amount of that part of it which is appropriated to the public service?

A. This has been continually varying, though generally on the increasing hand, since the time of the Revolution. At first it was about three millions in time of peace; at present

sent it is about seven. But in time of war it is much greater. During queen *Anne's* wars, in 1710, for instance, it amounted to above fourteen millions; and in the course of the late war, in 1760, particularly, it fell little short of twenty millions.

## C H A P. IV.

*Of the* P A R L I A M E N T.

Q. W H A T do you mean by the parliament?

A. The two houses, the upper and lower; the first composed of the lords, the second of the commons, and both together constituting two of three parts of the legislature.

Q. How long has the parliament existed?

A. Ever since the beginning of the monarchy.

Q. Has it always gone by the same name?

A. No: it was originally called the *Wittenagemot*, or the assembly of the wise men: this name it bore during the whole time of the *Saxon* kings; but, upon the conquest of *England* by *William the Norman*, the name of *Wittenagemot* was changed into that of parliament.

Q. Was it originally constituted in the same manner as at present?

A. No: it consisted originally of one house only, in which, according to the most probable opinion, the representatives of the boroughs had no right to sit.

Q. When did they acquire that right?

A. 'Tis impossible to fix the precise time when they first acquired it; but they certainly possessed it towards the latter end of *Henry the III's* reign, about the year 1263, when the lords and commons first began to sit in separate houses.

Q. Has the parliament always enjoyed the same privileges which it possesses at present?

A. Whether it has always enjoyed the same privileges, it is extremely difficult to determine; but it may be safely affirmed, that it has not always exercised the same power.

Q. How did it acquire its present power?

A. By the profuse, or warlike disposition of the king; because, in either case, he equally wanted money; and

as the parliament has always, at least since the reign of king *John*, retained in its own hands, the power of granting money, it would never consent to the levying of any taxes, without extorting certain concessions from the crown.

Q. What power does the parliament at present enjoy?

A. 'Tis impossible exactly to determine; for, according to a great lawyer, there are three things in *England*, the bounds of which are unknown, *viz.* the prerogative of the crown, the liberties of the people, and the privileges of parliament. 'Tis a common saying, that a parliament can do any thing; the meaning of which is, that the parliament, with the royal assent, can do any thing that is not contrary to common justice. They may revive, or abrogate old laws, and make new; settle the succession to the crown; impose taxes; establish forms of religion; naturalize foreigners; dissolve marriages; legitimate bastards; adjudge an infant, or minor, to be of full age; attain a man, either alive, or after his death, of treason; grant the most free pardons; and restore in blood and name, &c.

Q. Does their power extend no farther?

A. They have even, independent of the royal authority, assumed the power of disposing of the crown, as in the case of *Edward II.* *Richard II.* *Henry VI.* and *James II.*; and this power has been the more readily allowed, as the consent of parliament is supposed to be the consent of every *Briton*. It is to be observed, however, that their power, though very great, is by no means unlimited; because no parliament can tie the hands of a succeeding one; so that, whatever is done by one parliament may be overturned by another.

Q. What is the manner of making a new law?

A. The substance of it is put into writing, which is called a bill. This is brought into the house by some member, and is seconded by another. After being thrice read, it is sent to the other house, where, after having undergone the same number of readings, it is presented for the royal assent, which, when it has obtained, it has then the force of a law. No bill can pass into a law until it has been thrice read in each house, except a bill of indemnity, which, as it comes from the throne, is, out of respect to the sovereign, only read once. Each house has a negative; nor can any law



law be enacted, without the concurring consent of the king, lords, and commons.

Q In what language does the king give his assent to bills?

A. In *French*; a circumstance which appears the more surprising, as that language has been long abolished in all law pleadings, and the retaining of it in this particular can only be considered as a badge of the *Norman conquest*.

Q What terms does he make use of?

A. If it be a public bill, he says, *Le roi le veut*, or the king wills it. If a private one, he answers, *Soit fait comme il est désiré*, that is, let it be done as is desired. If a money bill, he replies, *Le roi remercie ses loyaux sujets, accepte leur benevolence, & aussi le veut*, that is, the king thanks his loyal subjects, accepts their gift, and wills it to be so. If it be a bill of indemnity, the return is made to his majesty, by the lords and commons in these terms; *Les prelatz, seigneurs, & communes, en ce parlement assemblez, au nom des tous vous autres sujets, remercient très humblement votre majesté, & prient Dieu vous donner en santé, bonne vie & longue*, i. e. the bishops, lords, and commons, in this parliament assembled, in the name of all your other subjects, most humbly thank your majesty, and pray God to grant you, in health, a long and happy life. If a bill which the king dislikes, he says, *Le roi s'avisera*, i. e. the king will consider of it, which is a sort of civil denial.

## CH A P. V.

### *Of the HOUSE of LORDS.*

Q WHO have a right to sit in the house of lords?

A. The king, and the princes of the blood, the bishops, dukes, marquises, earls, viscounts, and barons, or lords, whose number, including the sixteen peers for *Scotland*, generally amounts to about two hundred; but, by an act passed in the reign of *Charles II.* those lords that profess the *Roman catholic religion* are excluded the house.

Q Do not others sit there occasionally?

A. Yes: the judges, the king's council at law, and the

masters in chancery, when called to give their advice in point of law; but they are not to sit in the king's presence, without his leave. To these may be added, the clerk of the crown, and the clerk of parliament; the last of whom has two under-clerks, who write kneeling behind him.

*Q.* In what does the power of the house of lords consist?

*A.* As they compose one of the three parts of the legislature, their consent is necessary towards the making of all laws. Besides as they are the supreme court of judicature in the nation, there lies an appeal to them, in civil causes, from all the inferior courts, and their decision is final and irreversible. They cannot interfere, however, when the privileges of the commons are concerned. They may try a commoner, indeed, on an impeachment of the commons; but no suit, or prosecution against a commoner, can be begun by the lords, though they may still try such a cause, and even determine it finally, in case of an appeal. They can likewise apprehend and commit any person (a member of the lower house excepted) for a breach of privilege, or reflections on their judicature, and such commitment is often in itself a sufficient punishment, as it is always attended with considerable charges; but such persons are of course released on the rising of the parliament.

*Q.* Have they no other privileges?

*A.* They have the peculiar privilege of trying all those of their own order in criminal causes; and, what is remarkable, they give their verdict, not upon oath, as other juries, but only upon their honour. These are the principal privileges they possess, considered as a house, or collective body: what they possess separately, and in consequence of their rank, will be explained with greater propriety, when we come to speak of the nobility in general.

## C H A P. VI.

## Of the HOUSE of COMMONS.

2. WHO are the constituent members of the house of commons ?

A. The representatives of the forty counties into which *England* is divided, each of which returns two members ; those of the twenty-five cities, each of which sends two, except *London* and *Ely*, the former of which sends four, the latter none ; the representatives of the universities of *Oxford* and *Cambridge*, each of which sends two members ; the sixteen barons of the *Cinque ports* and their dependencies ; the three hundred and thirty-nine burgesses of one hundred and seventy-two towns in *England*, each of which send two members, except five of them, which return only one a-piece ; the twenty-four members from *Wales* ; and lastly, the forty-five from *Scotland* ; making in all five hundred and fifty-eight members.

2. How is the number of members, returned by the several counties, regulated ?

A. By ancient custom.

2. Is it either in proportion to the number of the people they contain, or to the sum which they contribute towards the land-tax ?

A. No ; it is far from being in proportion to either ; on the contrary, the disproportion is very great in both these respects, especially in the latter, as will evidently appear from the following scheme. The number of members returned by *England* and *Wales* is 513. Now, if we suppose the whole land-tax to be divided into 513 equal parts, the number of members returned by each particular county (including its cities and boroughs), and the sum which it contributes towards the land-tax will stand as follows :

Counties.	Members of parliament.	Parts of the land-tax.
<i>Bedford,</i>	4	7
<i>Berks,</i>	9	10
<i>Bucks,</i>	14	12
<i>Cambridge,</i>	6	9
<i>Chester,</i>	4	7
<i>Cornwall,</i>	44	8
<i>Cumberland,</i>	6	1
<i>Derby,</i>	4	6
<i>Devon,</i>	26	21
<i>Dorset,</i>	20	9
<i>Durham,</i>	4	3
<i>Effex,</i>	8	24
<i>Gloucester,</i>	8	12
<i>Hereford,</i>	8	5
<i>Herts,</i>	6	11
<i>Huntington,</i>	4	4
<i>Kent,</i>	18	22
<i>Lancaster,</i>	14	5
<i>Leicester,</i>	4	9
<i>Lincoln,</i>	12	19
<i>Middlesex,</i>	8	80
<i>Monmouth,</i>	3	3
<i>Norfolk,</i>	12	22
<i>Northampton,</i>	9	12
<i>Northumberland,</i>	8	4
<i>Nottingham,</i>	8	7
<i>Oxon,</i>	9	10
<i>Rutland,</i>	2	2
<i>Salop,</i>	12	7
<i>Somerset,</i>	18	19
<i>Southampton,</i>	26	14
<i>Stafford,</i>	10	7
<i>Suffolk,</i>	16	20
<i>Surry,</i>	14	18
<i>Suffex,</i>	28	16
<i>Warwick,</i>	6	10
<i>Westmoreland,</i>	4	1

Counties.

Counties.	Members of parliament.	Parts of the land-tax.
<i>Wilts,</i>	34	13
<i>Worcester,</i>	9	9
<i>York,</i>	30	24
<i>Wales,</i>	24	11
	<hr style="width: 50%; margin: 0 auto;"/> 513	<hr style="width: 50%; margin: 0 auto;"/> 513

*Q.* What is the meaning of this scheme?

*A.* The meaning of it is, that the county of *Cornwall*, for instance, returns forty-four members, and pays only eight of the five hundred and thirteen parts, that is, about one sixty-fourth of the land-tax; whereas *Middlesex* sends only eight members to parliament, and yet pays eighty of the five hundred and thirteen parts, that is, almost one sixth, of the land-tax: and so of the others. *Scotland* sends forty-five members, and pays one fortieth part of the land-tax.

*Q.* What power does the house of commons possess?

*A.* As they compose, in the same manner with the upper house, one of the three parts of the legislature, they have a negative in the passing of all bills; nor can a money-bill, in particular, be begun any where but in their house; neither will they allow the lords to make any alterations in bills of this nature. This, indeed, is a privilege of the utmost importance, and seems to be founded on this supposition, that, as they represent the whole body of the people, upon whom the tax must ultimately fall, it is both just and reasonable, that they should have the right to regulate the manner of levying the imposition.

*Q.* How comes this privilege to be of so much importance?

*A.* Because, by means of it, they have it in their power to extort from the king and upper house, whatever they think proper.

*Q.* In what manner?

*A.* Whenever they have a mind to compel the king and peers to agree to any measure, to which they may be supposed to be very much averse, they take care to tack it to

the

the end of a money-bill, and as the lords have no right to make any alteration in bills of this nature, they must either give their assent to the article annexed, or leave the crown destitute of all kind of supply.

Q. Do the lords allow this power of the commons to be altogether indisputable?

A. No: they allow their right indeed to begin all money-bills, and even to insist on their being passed or rejected without alteration; but they deny that they have a right to tack any thing whatever to a money-bill, and strenuously contend, that all such bills should be pure and unmixed with any other matter. They have even several times come to a resolution, that they will never consent to any money-bill, to which the commons have tacked any foreign article. And hence it appears, that the privileges of the two houses are not as yet exactly defined.

Q. Does the power of the commons extend no farther?

A. They have a power to determine controverted elections; to expel such of their own members, as have merited that punishment; and to imprison any one, below the rank of a lord, who has violated their privileges, and that too, in the opinion of most people, without the offender being allowed the benefit of the act of *habeas corpus*. They may likewise impeach, before the lords, who are the proper judges, any person, even the first peer of the realm; and, notwithstanding this privilege, such is the sacred character of the commons, that the lords cannot proceed against a member of the lower house, except on a complaint from the house itself.

Q. Do they enjoy no other privileges?

A. They are free from suits, arrests, or imprisonment, except in the case of treason, felony, or breach of the peace, during the sitting of the parliament, and during every adjournment not exceeding fourteen days; but this privilege ceases if the adjournment is longer, as it does likewise upon the prorogation, or dissolution of the parliament. Formerly, indeed, they enjoyed this privilege during the space of forty days, as well before as after the session; but the inconveniencies arising from such an indulgence, became at length so great and numerous, as rendered it necessary considerably to abridge it. The commons are likewise, during

during the sitting of parliament, exempted from the drudgery of serving on juries, or attending on trials in inferior courts of justice. And, in a word, they are possessed of many other privileges, which it would be equally tedious and superfluous to mention.

## C H A P. VII.

## Of the ROYAL FAMILY.

Q. WHO is first person of the royal family ?

A. The king, undoubtedly, of whose power and prerogative I have already given an account. It may only be proper to observe here, that so careful is the law for the preservation of his majesty's person, that the very imagining, or intending his death, proved by an overt act, is high treason. And though a lunatic, or idiot, or one *non compos mentis*, cannot commit felony, or any treason, by law; yet if, during his idiocy, or lunacy, he shall kill, or go about to kill the king, he shall suffer death as a traitor.

Q. Who is the second person of the royal family ?

A. The queen-consort, as she is likewise of the kingdom, and is respected accordingly.

Q. What privileges does she enjoy ?

A. Though an alien born, she may, without denization, or naturalization, purchase lands, make grants and leases, remove her causes into whatever court she pleases, and carry on suits in her own name, a favour which is not granted to any other married woman. To conspire her death, or violate her chastity, is high treason. If she survive the king, she is called queen-dowager, and still keeps her court; nor does she lose her rank, though she marry a private gentleman, as did *Catharine of France*, the widow of *Henry V.*

Q. What title has the king's eldest son ?

A. From the time of the conquest to that of *Edward I.* he was stiled duke of *Normandy*; but *Edward*, having, in 1282, entirely subdued *Wales*, bestowed the title of *Prince of Wales* upon his son *Edward II.* and as he knew that the *Welsh* had an utter aversion to the dominion of foreigners,

he caused his queen to go and lie in at *Caernarvon* castle, that so the *Welsh* might have a prince, who was a native of their own country. 'Tis said, that *Edward*, upon the birth of the prince, presented him to the natives, as a true *Welshman*, and one who could not speak a word of any other language. He is always heir-apparent to the crown of *England*; and, at the age of fifteen, he receives, as prince of *Wales*, the homage of his subjects.

Q. Has the king's eldest son no other title?

A. He is duke of *Cornwall* and *Rothsay*; earl of *Chester* and *Flint*, and great steward of *Scotland*; and all these titles he enjoys by birth, whereas that of prince of *Wales* he has only by creation.

Q. Has he any fixt revenue?

A. He has about twenty-five thousand pounds yearly, arising from the mines in *Cornwall*; and, when he has a family, he is commonly allowed by parliament an additional revenue for the support of his household. *George II.* when prince of *Wales*, had, for this purpose, one hundred thousand pounds *per Annum*. The prince of *Wales*, though a subject, is so sacred in the eye of the law, that it is high treason to imagine his death, or violate his wife's chastity.

Q. Have the rest of the king's children any peculiar titles?

A. No: the king bestows upon them whatever titles he pleases. They have, all them, indeed, the title of royal highness, and are called the sons and daughters of *Great-Britain*, because the whole nation is supposed to have an equal interest in their welfare. All other subjects are uncovered in their presence; whoever kisses their hands must do it kneeling; and they are even served on the knee at table, unless when the king is present. It is further to be observed, that all the younger sons, as well as the prince of *Wales*, are counsellors of state by birth, in order to qualify them for managing the weighty affairs of the nation. They have not, however, like the princes of the blood in *France*, any particular appanages, or established revenue; but depend, for their support, entirely on the king's bounty.



## C H A P. VIII.

*Of the ENGLISH in general.*

Q. WHAT is the character of the *English*?

A. Brave, generous, ingenious; industrious; to these good qualities they are universally allowed, even by their enemies, to have a just title. Violent, however, and headstrong in their passions, they are too apt to be elated with prosperity, and dejected in adversity; Distant and reserved in their manner, it is extremely difficult to gain their friendship, but when once gained, it is not easily lost. Plain and simple in their address, they are more forward to shew their humanity in actions than in words. Of a middle stature, and robust constitution, they are capable, when supplied with plenty of provisions, to endure great fatigue; but, born in a fruitful country, and accustomed, from their infancy, to fare well, they are less able, than almost any other people, to support hunger; and hence it is, that, in time of war, a scarcity of provisions proves always so fatal to the *English*. Surrounded, for a considerable part of the year, with thick and foggy air, they are apt to contract a melancholy disposition; and to this cause are generally supposed to be owing the frequent instances of suicide which occur among them. More solid than the *French*, and less phlegmatic than the *Germans*, they are, if I may use the expression, an excellent compound of both; and, though they have not been, perhaps, so remarkable for their inventions as some other nations, they have certainly carried the inventions of all other nations to the highest perfection: here every useful and ingenious art is improved to the utmost; and even several of those countries, which have had the honour of inventing particular manufactures, are obliged, by the superior skill and industry of the *English* artisans, to supply themselves from *England* with those very commodities. Cut off, by the sea, from the rest of the world, they commenced mariners from necessity; but what at first might appear an inconvenience, turned out, in the end, very much to their advantage; while it effectually se-

cures

cures them from the sudden attacks of foreign foes, it has induced them to encrease their marine to such a degree, that they are now acknowledged, by all nations, as the indisputed lords of the ocean.

Q. How is the people of *England* divided?

A. Into clergy and laity; the latter being subdivided into nobility, gentry, and the inferior sort of people, of all of whom we shall particularly speak in the following chapters.

## CHAP. IX.

### Of the CLERGY.

Q. OF whom is the *English* clergy composed?

A. Of bishops, dignitaries, and inferior clergy.

Q. How many bishops are there?

A. Twenty-six; namely, the two archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York*, and twenty-four bishops.

Q. How many dignitaries?

A. Six hundred and thirty, *viz.* twenty-six deans and chapters, sixty archdeacons, and five hundred and forty-four prebendaries.

Q. How many inferior clergy?

A. 'Tis impossible exactly to determine their number. It may only be observed, that there are upwards of nine thousand seven hundred rectors of parishes, who have, each of them, the care of one church or more, and are assisted by a great number of curates and others.

Q. In what does the power of the two archbishops consist?

A. The archbishop of *Canterbury* is the first peer of the realm, and takes place immediately after the royal family; nor does any one, except the lord chancellor, or keeper of the great seal, step between him and the archbishop of *York*. The former usually crowns the king; the latter the queen-consort. The one is stiled primate of *England*; the other, of all *England*. They have, both of them, power to consecrate bishops; to call, by virtue of the king's mandate, the clergy of their respective provinces to convocation; to preside in it equally; and to prorogue or dissolve it, according to the direction of the sovereign. They inspect

spect the conduct of the bishops within their several provinces; censure those who are deficient in their duty; appoint co-adjutors to such as are infirm; and have their court of arches, to which lie appeals from the courts of the bishops. They have likewise the probate of wills, and the decision of all causes relating to heresy, bastardy, and the like.

Q. In what does the power of the bishops consist?

A. They ordain and confirm; give ministers leave to preach; grant institutions to benefices, and command induction to be given. In a word, they have the superintendence of all the clergy and laity within their respective dioceses.

Q. Have the bishops no other privileges?

A. All of them, except the bishop of *Sodor and Man*, are lords of parliament, and sit as barons in the house of peers. They are called the lords spiritual, and, as fathers and guardians of the church, are stiled fathers in God. In short, they have not only the same privileges as the temporal lords, but some that are peculiar to themselves. For, though all courts are held by the king's authority, yet the bishops courts are not properly accounted the king's courts. A bishop sends forth writs in his own name, *Telle* the bishop; and not in the king's name, as it is done by all other courts. And, whereas, in every other court there are several judges, a bishop in his court is the sole judge: nay, he may delegate his authority to another, as to a suffragan bishop, his chancellor, or commissary; a liberty, which is granted to none of the judges.

Q. What are the deans and chapters?

A. Each dean, with a certain number of prebendaries, constitutes a dean and chapter, of which, as I have already observed, there are twenty-six in *England*. They were originally a body of clergy, intended as a standing council to the bishop; lived with him in his cathedral, and were maintained at his expence; but their dependence on him growing gradually less strict and necessary, they were gratified with distinct parcels of his estate, and erected into collegiate bodies. At present they have not only authority within their own districts, but sometimes an ecclesiastical jurisdiction in several neighbouring parishes and deaneries, and, generally

generally, a temporal jurisdiction to hold courts of pleas within their own manors. When a see becomes vacant, they chuse, only for form's sake, upon the king's writ of *congè d'elire*, the person recommended to them by the sovereign; or, if they refuse, they shew cause for their refusal.

Q. Are there no other deans besides deans and chapters?

A. Yes; the deans of *Croyden* in *Surry*, *Battle* in *Suffex*, *Bocking* in *Essex*, and some few others, are deans without any chapter; but have a peculiar kind of jurisdiction. The deans of the chapel royal, *St. George's* chapel at *Windsor*, *Rippon*, and *Guernsey*, are only honorary deans, without any jurisdiction. There were once, likewise, rural deans, or arch-presbyters, who, under the bishop and archdeacon, had the peculiar care of those districts, into which our dioceses are still divided, called deaneries. Their authority, however, is now entirely lost; and few of them are to be found in any diocese.

Q. What is the office of an archdeacon?

A. He was chosen anciently from among the deacons, to be an assistant to the bishop; but, by the act of uniformity, he is now obliged to be in priest's orders; for it is to be observed, that there are three orders in the church of *England*, bishops, priests, and deacons. And whereas the bishop visits his diocese once in three years, 'tis the archdeacon's office to visit it for him the other two; when he is to enquire into every thing belonging to the churches under his jurisdiction, to reform abuses in ecclesiastical matters, and bring the more weighty affairs before the bishop. Hence it is, that he is frequently called *alter episcopi oculus*, the bishop's one eye, the dean being the other. He is likewise, upon the bishop's mandate, to induct clerks into their benefices, and so give them possession.

Q. Whom do you mean by the inferior clergy?

A. All below the rank of rural deans, whether rectors, vicars, curates, or deacons.

Q. What is their office?

A. To preach, marry, administer the sacraments, visit the sick, perform the funeral service, and discharge all the other pastoral functions.

Q. What is the established religion of *England*?

A. The protestant reformed religion, according to the episcopal form of government.

Q. Do all the subjects adhere to this form of government?

A. No; there are a great many sectaries, or dissenters; such as the presbyterians, independents, anabaptists, quakers; and *Roman* catholics; the first of whom are by far the most numerous, and approach the nearest to the established religion: the last have their estates doubly taxed, and are deprived of the liberty of presenting to livings; but in other respects are in no danger of being molested, provided they are obedient to the civil government.

## C H A P. X.

### *Of the N O B I L I T Y.*

Q. H O W many degrees of nobility are there in *England*?

A. Five, *viz.* dukes, marquises, earls, viscounts, and barons.

Q. How long has the title of duke existed?

A. Ever since the time of the ancient *Saxons*, among whom, however, it was only territorial, or official, that is, it was annexed to the government of a county, or certain district of land, and seems to have meant much the same with what is now called the lord-lieutenant of a county. It did not become personal till the year 1335, when it was conferred by king *Edward III.* on his son the prince of *Wales*, commonly called the *Black prince*, of whom we shall have occasion to speak more fully in the sequel.

Q. How long has the title of marquis existed?

A. Ever since the year 1385, when king *Richard II.* bestowed it on *Robert de Vere*, earl of *Oxford*, who was created marquis of *Dublin*.

Q. How long has the title of viscount existed?

A. Ever since the year 1439, when *John Beaumont* was, by *Henry VI.* created viscount *Beaumont*.

Q. Of what antiquity are the titles of earl and baron?

*A.* These are the most ancient of any in the kingdom; that of earl, in particular, being in use among the *Saxons*, at least among the *Dano-Saxons*, for the word is evidently of *Danish* original, and signifies the same with alderman in *Saxon*. It was continued by *William the Conqueror*, who, immediately after his having obtained the crown, created some of his followers, earls of *Arundel*, *Chester*, *Cornwall*, &c. allotting to each the third penny arising from the pleas in their respective jurisdictions. At present they have neither jurisdiction nor third penny; but, instead of these, a small annual stipend from the *Exchequer*. The word *baron* came in with the conquest, and succeeded to the *Saxon* title *thane*; and as it is the lowest order of nobility, it is often used of the whole body collectively; because, strictly speaking, all noblemen are barons, though dignified with a higher title.

Q. What privileges do the nobility enjoy?

*A.* As they are the hereditary counsellors of the crown, and constant members of parliament, they are exempted from arrests for all sorts of debt; nor can they be arrested in any cases, except those of high treason, felony, or breach of the peace. Their suits are brought immediately before the house of lords; nor can they be tried for felony, or treason, or for misdemeanor, when the commons impeach, except by their peers.

Q. Do they enjoy no other privileges?

*A.* They do: when summoned to parliament, they have liberty to hunt in the king's grounds, either in going to, or returning from it. In order to secure their honour, and prevent any scandal being thrown upon them, there is an express law, called *Scandalum magnatum*, by which any person, convicted of making a scandalous report, however true, against a peer of the realm, may be subjected to an arbitrary fine, and condemned to imprisonment, till the money be paid. In some cases, neither the sheriff nor his officers are allowed to search their houses, without the king's order first obtained, signed by six privy counsellors. They may, during any great trial in a court of justice, enter the court, and sit, if they please, without being uncovered. They are free from all attendance at courts-leet, or sheriffs-turns; nor are they obliged, in  
case

case of a riot, to attend the service of the *posse comitatus*. In a word, they possess many other privileges, which it is altogether unnecessary to mention.

Q. Do not the sons of the nobility enjoy some peculiar titles?

A. Yes, though only by the courtesy of *England*. The eldest son of a duke, marquis, or earl, is commonly distinguished by the second title of his father; the younger sons of a duke, or marquis, are all of them lords; but the younger sons of an earl, and all the sons of viscounts and barons are no more than private gentlemen. The title of lady, too, is given to the daughters of dukes, marquises, or earls; but the daughters of viscounts and barons are only private gentlewomen.

Q. Of what antiquity are the coronets used by the nobility?

A. Those belonging to earls are said to have been appointed about king *Edward* the third's time; those of viscounts in the reign of *James* the first; and those of barons in that of *Charles* the second.

## C H A P. XI.

### Of the G E N T R Y.

Q. W H O M do you mean by the gentry?

A. Those that occupy the middle place between the nobility and inferior sort of people.

Q. Whom do you comprehend in this class?

A. Knights, esquires, lawyers, physicians, merchants; in a word, every one, who, either by his birth, fortune, education, or employment, is raised above the vulgar.

Q. How many kinds of knights are there in *England*?

A. Four; and these are (to place them according to their right of precedence) knights of the garter, knights baronets, knights of the *Bath*, and knights batchelors.

Q. How many knights of the garter are there?

A. Twenty-five, besides the king, who is sovereign of the order.

Q. How long has this order existed?

A.

*A.* Ever since the year 1350, when it was first instituted by *Edward* the third; so that, of all the secular orders in *Europe*, it is by far the most ancient.

2. What gave occasion to the establishing of this order?

*A.* Authors are not agreed as to this particular. Some think it took its rise from an affair of gallantry. They say, that *Edward's* mistress, the countess of *Salisbury*, happening to drop her garter, while she was dancing at a court-ball, the king picked it up, and observing some of his courtiers to smile, as if he had not obtained this favour merely by accident, he called out, *Honi soit qui mal y pense*, i. e. evil to him that evil thinks; and declared, that many, who now laughed at the garter, should soon be proud to have the honour of wearing it: that, in order to make good his word, and perpetuate the memory of this event, he instituted the order of the garter; retaining the words above-mentioned for the motto, and the garter for the badge of the order. Others suppose it owed its origin to an affair of a military nature. They pretend, that *Edward* having revived the order of the round table, originally established by king *Arthur*, such numbers of foreign warriors crowded to his court, as excited the jealousy of the *French* king, with whom he was then at war; and who, in order to counterbalance the advantage, which his adversary had drawn from this circumstance, instituted an order of his own, which soon procured him the like number of warriors: but that that monarch, abusing the confidence reposed in him, and violating the laws of hospitality, seized several lords of the *English* party, who came, among others, to assist at the festival. That *Edward*, informed of this proceeding, conscious of the rectitude of his own intentions, and provoked at the perfidious conduct of his rival, cried out, *Honi soit qui mal y pense*, and converted the round table into the order of the garter. That he chose this badge in particular, either because in the battle of *Crecy* he had given garter for the word; or because, on that occasion, he had ordered his garter to be fixed to the end of a lance, as the signal of engaging; or, according to others, because *Richard* I. at the siege of *Acres* in *Palestine*, intending to assault the place, distributed, among some of his principal officers, certain leathern strings, to be tied about their legs,

the



the better to distinguish them from the enemy ; or finally, (for all these reasons are assigned by different authors) for no other cause than this, that blue, which is the colour of the garter, has always been deemed the emblem of fidelity and friendship.

Q. Whom do you mean by knights baronets ?

A. Those, who, by an hereditary right, have the title of *Sir* prefixed to their christian name.

Q. How long has this order existed in *England* ?

A. Ever since the year 1611, when it was first instituted by *James I.*

Q. How many knights baronets are there ?

A. Their number, at their first institution, was limited to two hundred ; but it is now much greater, and is always varying in such a manner, that there is no possibility of ascertaining it exactly.

Q. Is the receiving of this honour attended with any expence ?

A. Originally the person who received it, was obliged to pay into the exchequer, as much as would maintain, for the space of three years, in the province of *Ulster* in *Ireland*, thirty foot soldiers, at the rate of eight pence apiece a day, amounting in the whole to about one thousand one hundred pounds ; but this demand is now remitted by the crown, and has been so ever since the Restoration.

Q. Whence do the knights of the *Bath* derive that name ?

A. From the circumstance of bathing ; a practice, which, it seems, was observed by them at their first institution.

Q. When was this order established ?

A. In 1399, when *Henry IV.* in order to grace his coronation, created forty-six of these knights, who were bathed in the *Tower*.

Q. Has the order continued ever since without interruption ?

A. No : it soon after became extinct ; but was revived, in 1725, by *George I.* who made it a military order, and limited the number of knights to thirty-six, besides the king, who is the sovereign of the order ?

Q. Whom do you understand by knights batchelors ?

A. Those who have the title of *Sir* prefixed to their christian

tian name; but without any power, like knights baronets, of transmitting it to their posterity.

Q. Of what antiquity is this kind of honour?

A. 'Tis as ancient as any in the kingdom; and is, indeed, the foundation of all military honour and dignity. 'Twas usually bestowed upon noblemen's sons, and great commanders, and even upon kings themselves; nor, indeed, in former times, was any gentleman supposed to be qualified for the use of arms, until he had been invested with this dignity.

Q. Have knights wives any peculiar privileges?

A. They have all the title of lady, and take rank of the wives of esquires, and gentlemen.

Q. Who have a right to the title of esquire?

A. The younger sons of earls, the sons of viscounts and barons, the eldest sons of the younger sons of peers, and the eldest sons of baronets and knights. It is likewise due to all those who are placed in any public office, or eminent station, such as justices of the peace, members of parliament, mayors of cities, serjeants of the several offices in the king's court, sheriffs, admirals, captains in the army or navy; and to every gentleman who has a landed estate of two or three hundred a year.

## C H A P. XII.

### *Of the INFERIOR SORT of PEOPLE.*

Q. **W**HOM do you mean by the inferior sort of people?

A. Those who get their livelihood, either in a mechanic, or servile manner; such as tradesmen, mariners, husbandmen, servants, and labourers.

Q. Is there not a middle sort, between these last and the degree of a gentleman.

A. Yes: yeomen and copyholders, though these, if possessed of good estates, are justly ranked in the number of gentlemen.

Q. Whom do you understand by yeomen?

A. Yeomen

*A.* Yeomen are the same as freeholders, with this only difference, that they keep their estates in their own hands, and cultivate them themselves. Some of these, particularly in *Kent*, have estates to the amount of a thousand pounds a year.

Q. Whom do you understand by copyholders?

*A.* Copyholders are nearly the same with freeholders. The only difference is, that with the latter, the hold never becomes void; with the former, it does at the death of the tenant: but, notwithstanding this circumstance, the next heir of blood, upon paying the customary fine, takes possession of the estate.

## C H A P. XIII.

*Of the BRITONS.*

Q. WHO were the original inhabitants of *Great Britain*?

*A.* They were probably a colony of the ancient *Gauls*, or *Celts*, who came over from the northern parts of *France* to this island.

Q. From whom have we the first certain accounts of these people?

*A.* From the *Roman* writers, and particularly from *Julius Cæsar*, who, about fifty-five years before the birth of *Christ*, invaded this country.

Q. What character does he give of the inhabitants?

*A.* He says, that those who lived in the maritime provinces understood the art of tillage and agriculture; but that those who lived in the inland parts, supported themselves entirely by pasturage and hunting; that they were clothed with the skins of beasts, dwelt in huts, and were, in every respect, a very rude and barbarous people.

Q. What kind of government prevailed among them?

*A.* They were divided into a number of petty independent states, governed by their respective princes, who, nevertheless, on any great emergency, united for their common defence, under one leader.

Q. What kind of religion did they profess?

*A.* The Druidical, the moral precepts of which were not very exceptionable; but the ceremonies were altogether abominable, particularly that of human sacrifices, which it enjoined.

Q. What reception did *Cæsar* meet with, on his invasion of this island?

*A.* The natives at first made some resistance; but being defeated in several skirmishes, they were at last obliged to submit, and to promise hostages for their good behaviour.

Q. Did they keep this promise?

*A.* No; upon which *Cæsar* invaded them a second time, and again compelled them to make the like submissions.

Q. Did that great general establish the *Roman* authority in this island?

*A.* Not thoroughly; nor, indeed, can it be said to have been fully established till above a hundred years after; for, though several of the *Roman* emperors sent their generals into this country, where they always triumphed over the inhabitants, yet it was not till the year of *Christ* 78, that it was finally reduced, by *Julius Agricola*, into the form of a *Roman* province.

Q. How long did it continue in this state?

*A.* Near four hundred years; during which, however, nothing very material happened, except that the *Romans* built two walls, or ramparts; the one called *Agricola's*, or *Antoninus's* wall, between the friths of *Clyde* and *Forth*; the other, called *Adrian's*, or *Severus's* wall, between the *Tyne* and the frith of *Solway*. The design of these ramparts was to prevent the incursions of the *Picts* and *Scots*, who inhabited the northern parts of the island; and who, as they never were subjected to the *Roman* yoke, made frequent inroads into the more southern parts of the country.

Q. Was not a dangerous insurrection raised against the *Roman* government?

*A.* Yes; but this event happened before the island was properly reduced into the form of a *Roman* province.

Q. What gave occasion to this insurrection?

*A.* *Boadicea*, a *British* queen, having been cruelly treated, and even scourged like a slave, by order of the *Roman* governor, and the chastity of her two daughters having been likewise

likewise violated, she, in conjunction with the Druids, inflamed the minds of the natives to such a degree of fury, that they suddenly rose like one man, and massacred about seventy thousand *Romans* and other strangers.

Q. Was not this cruelty severely revenged?

A. Yes: *Suetonius*, the *Roman* general, who, during the insurrection, had been absent in the island of *Anglsey*, was no sooner returned, than with an army not exceeding ten thousand men, he attacked the *Britons*, who amounted to two hundred and thirty thousand, and after killing about eighty thousand of them, he entirely discomfited the rest. *Boadicea* herself, rather than fall into the hands of the conqueror, is said to have put an end to her own life by poison.

Q. Why did the *Romans*, after having been so long settled in this island, finally abandon it?

A. They were obliged to recall their forces in order to defend the more southern parts of the empire, against the inroads of the *Huns*, *Goths*, *Vandals*, and other barbarous nations, who, about this time, attacked, and, in the end, entirely subdued it.

Q. Were not the *Britons* over-joyed at their departure, and the unexpected recovery of their ancient liberty?

A. So far from it, that they considered this event, as one of the greatest calamities, that could possibly have befallen them.

Q. What was the cause of these dastardly sentiments?

A. They had enjoyed such a long and profound tranquility under the *Roman* government, that they had, in a great measure, forgot the use of arms, and were altogether unable to defend themselves against their more hardy and warlike neighbours, the *Picts* and *Scots*, who, immediately, upon the recall of the *Roman* forces, invaded the southern parts of the island.

Q. What step did the *Britons* take in this desperate extremity?

A. They had recourse to the protection of the *Romans*, and implored their assistance in the most suppliant terms. One of their addresses, in particular, was inscribed, *The groans of the Britons*, and contained the following description of their misery: *the barbarians, say they, on the one hand, chase us into the sea; the sea, on the other, throws us*

back upon the barbarians; and we have only the hard choice left us, of perishing by the sword, or by the waves.

Q. Did the Romans comply with this request?

A. They sent them assistance two several times, and effectually checked the incursions of the enemy; but at last they told them, that, as they were now their own masters, they ought to arm in their own defence, and protect, by their valour, that independence, which they had received from their ancestors.

Q. Did they follow this advice?

A. No: actuated by their own fears, and induced by the councils of *Vortigern*, their leader, they sent a deputation to the Saxons in Germany, to come over to their assistance.

## C H A P. XIV.

### Of the SAXONS.

Q. WHO were the Saxons?

A. One of the most powerful and warlike people in Germany, who, by force of arms, had made themselves masters of all the sea-coast, from the mouth of the *Rhine* to *Jutland*.

Q. From whom were they descended?

A. It is impossible to trace their history any higher than this very period, since two of their chief leaders, *Hengist* and *Horsa*, were reputed to be the great grandsons of *Woden*, their god of war; whence it appears, that the preceding part of their history must be involved in fable and obscurity.

Q. What was the character of the Saxons?

A. They were, like all the other northern nations of Europe at that time, a very ignorant and barbarous people.

Q. What was the nature of their government?

A. It was certainly of a free nature, though still with a king, or rather a general, at its head; but he was not allowed to take any step of importance, without the consent of his people, or, at least, of his great men.

Q. What kind of religion did they profess?

A. A

*A.* A species of heathenism, and one too of the most barbarous sort; of the particulars of which we know little more, than that they worshipped certain strange deities, from whose names, the appellations which we now give to the days of the week, are evidently borrowed. The two first days of the week were dedicated to the sun and moon; the third to *Tuisco*; the fourth to *Woden*, the god of war; the fifth to *Thor*, the god of thunder; the sixth to *Friga*, or *Fræa*, the goddess of pleasure; and the seventh to *Crodo*, or *Seater*.

*Q.* What were their notions of a future state?

*A.* As valour was the quality which they chiefly esteemed, all their notions of a future state were calculated to inspire them with that virtue. They believed that the souls of those, who died in battle, would be admitted into the hall of *Woden*, and reposing on couches, would satiate themselves with ale from the skulls of their enemies; whereas, the souls of those, who died a natural death, would be conveyed into the infernal regions, and would there be tormented with hunger, thirst, and every other kind of evil.

*Q.* Did the *Saxons* comply with the request of the *Britons*?

*A.* They did; and coming over, to the number of sixteen hundred men, under two of their leaders, *Hengist* and *Forsa*, they soon repulsed the *Picts* and *Scots*, and restored the tranquillity of the southern part of the country.

*Q.* How long did they continue to behave in this friendly manner?

*A.* But a very short time; for perceiving with what ease they might conquer the *Britons* themselves, and effect a settlement in the island, they called over about five thousand more of their countrymen, and entering into an alliance with the *Picts*, turned their arms against those very persons, whom they had come to defend.

*Q.* Were not the *Britons* enraged at this perfidious conduct?

*A.* They were; and taking up arms in their own defence, endeavoured, for a long time, and at first not altogether without success, to defeat the designs of their treacherous allies; but the *Saxons* being continually re-inforced with fresh supplies from their own country, were at last able, though not till after a struggle of near one hundred and fifty years, to make themselves masters of the

whole kingdom; the few *Britons* that remained being either obliged to submit to the conquerors, to take refuge in the barren mountains of *Cornwall* and *Wales*, or to fly into foreign countries; where some of them settling in the province of *Armorica*, gave to that district the name of *Brittany*, which it still retains.

Q. Were not the *Saxons* likewise called *Angles*?

A. Yes; and hence is derived the name of *England*, by which the kingdom is still distinguished.

## CHAP. XV.

### Of the HEPTARCHY.

Q. WHAT form of government did the *Saxons* establish, upon their obtaining possession of *England*?

A. As they came over at different times, and under different leaders, each chieftain assumed a sovereign power, and erected his conquests into an independent kingdom.

Q. How many of these kingdoms were there.

A. Seven, viz. *Kent*, *Northumberland*, *East-Anglia*, *Mercia*, *Essex*, *Suffex*, and *Wessex*, composing, in all, what is usually termed the *Saxon* heptarchy.

Q. How long did this heptarchy continue?

A. About two hundred and fifty years.

Q. What events happened during that period?

A. None of any great importance, except that the *Christian* religion was introduced among the *Saxons*, who had hitherto remained heathens.

Q. Had not the *Britons* embraced *Christianity* before the arrival of the *Saxons*?

A. Yes; and that too, according to the most probable opinion, as early as the time of the apostles; but the *British* race being now almost entirely extirpated, the *Christian* religion had shared the same fate.

Q. In what year were the *Saxons* converted to *Christianity*?

A. About the year 600, by one *Augustine*, a *Roman* monk, who was afterwards consecrated archbishop of *Canterbury*.





1. A view of the harbor of London  
2. A view of the harbor of London



*St. Austin preaching to K. Ethelbert &  
Q. Bertha, in the Isle of Thanet.*

*J. Wale delin.*

*L. Rodet sculp.*

Q. In which of the seven kingdoms was the *Christian* religion first embraced?

A. In *Kent*, the sovereign of which had married *Bertha*, the king of *Paris's* daughter; and as she was a *Christian*, this circumstance contributed greatly to facilitate the work.

Q. What put an end to the *Saxon* heptarchy?

A. The restless ambition of the different princes, several of whom endeavoured, in their turn, to obtain the supreme authority of the whole, and this was at last, though not without difficulty, acquired by *Egbert*, sovereign of the *West Saxons*, who having subdued successively all the other kingdoms, united them happily into one great monarchy, and thus became properly the first king of *England*.

Q. When did this great event happen?

A. In 827.

Q. Had not *Egbert* distinguished himself before this period?

A. Yes; and therefore it will be necessary to begin his history at the year 800.

## C H A P. XVI.

## S A X O N K I N G S.

E G B E R T, *the first King of England.*

From the Year 800 to 838.

	<i>Popes.</i>		MICHAEL II.	820
LEO III.	796		THEOPHILUS I.	829
STEPHEN V.	816		<i>Emperors of the West, and</i>	
PASCHAL I.	817		<i>Kings of France.</i>	
EUGENIUS II.	824		CHARLEMAGNE	800
VALENTINE I.	827		LEWIS I.	814
GREGORY IV.	828		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>			ACHARIUS	792
IRENE, <i>Empress</i>	797		CONGALLUS III.	824
NICEPHORUS I.	802		DONGALLUS	829
Michael I.	811		ALFINUS	834
LEO V.	813			

Q. WHOSE son was *Egbert*?

A. The son of *Alcund*, grandson of *Eoppa*, nephew to *Ina*, king of *Wessex*, by his brother *Ingild*; and as the royal families had become extinct in all the other kingdoms of the heptarchy, *Egbert* was thus the sole descendant of those *Saxon* adventurers, who first subdued *Britain*.

Q. Where did he pass the earlier part of his life?

A. In the court of *Charlemagne*, king of *France*, whither he had retired to quiet the suspicions of *Bitric*, who now sat on the throne of *Wessex*, and who had conceived a violent jealousy of him, as well on account of his distinguished merit and great popularity, as because he seemed to possess, by birth, a better title to the crown.

Q. How long did he continue in that court?

A. About twelve years, during which he was treated with great distinction, and accompanied *Charlemagne* in his journey to *Franckfort*, and afterwards to *Rome*, where the imperial

imperial crown was set, by pope *Leo III.* on that monarch's head.

Q. When did he return to *England*?

A. In the year 800, immediately after the death of *Bitbric*, who having, unknowingly, drank a cup of poison, which his abandoned queen had prepared for another person, was suddenly carried off; and thus left a vacancy in the throne.

Q. How was *Egbert* received by his countrymen?

A. With the greatest demonstrations of joy, and instantly placed upon the throne of his ancestors.

Q. What steps did he take upon his advancement to the throne?

A. He first attacked the *Britons* of *Cornwall*, whom he defeated in several engagements. He then turned his arms against the *Mercians*, who had entered his dominions, and who, coming to a battle, were totally routed, with the loss of their king, and the best part of their army. Encouraged by this success, he invaded *Kent*, *Essex*, and *East-Anglia*, all of which he reduced with little or no difficulty. The kingdom of *Suffex* had already been incorporated with that of *Wessex*. The *Northumbrians*, weakened by intestine divisions, were little able to oppose such a conqueror; and accordingly, on his approach to their frontiers, they sent him deputies, promising submission. And thus were united into one great monarchy, all the kingdoms of the heptarchy, which *Egbert* ordered should be thenceforth distinguished by the common name of *England*.

Q. Did *Egbert* meet with any disturbance during the remaining part of his reign?

A. None from his own subjects. The *Danes*, indeed, made three several descents upon *England*; one in 832, another the year following, and a third five years after that. In the two first of these invasions, they met with some success; but in the last, they were attacked by a numerous army, and repulsed to their ships with terrible slaughter.

Q. Had not the *Danes* appeared in *England* before the reign of *Egbert*?

A. Yes; first in the year 787, afterwards in 794; but these were inconsiderable attempts in comparison of the invasions, which they now made, and still more of those, which they made in the sequel.

Q. Who

Q. Who were the *Danes*?

A. They seem to have been a mixture of different nations, though agreeing in language, religion, and customs, inhabiting the countries of *Jutland*, *Sweden*, *Denmark*, and *Norway*, from whence they used to commit depredations on the sea coasts of *France*, as well as of *England*.

Q. How long did *Egbert* reign?

A. Thirty-seven years over *Wessex*, and ten and upwards over all *England*. He died in 838, and left his dominions to his son *Ethelwolf*.

Q. What is his character?

A. His reducing the heptarchy into one monarchy, shews him to have been an accomplished warrior; and his maintaining, during his whole reign, domestic peace and tranquility in his kingdom, bespeaks him a no less excellent politician.

## ETHELWOLF, II<sup>d</sup> King of England.

From 838 to 857.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperors of the West, and Kings of France.</i>	
GREGORY IV.	828		
SERGIUS II.	841	LEWIS I.	814
LEO IV.	847	LOTHAIRE	840
BENEDICT III.	855	LEWIS II.	855
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
THEOPHILUS I.	822	ALPINUS	834
MICHAEL III.	842	KENNETH II.	839

WHAT was the first act of *Ethelwolf's* reign?

A. He divided his dominions, and bestowed the sovereignty of one part of them upon his eldest son, *Atelstan*.

Q. Was not this an impolitic step?

A. Most certainly; and would probably have been attended with great inconveniences, had not the continual alarm, in which the kingdom was held by the *Danish* invasions, prevented all domestic dissension.

Q. Did these freebooters still continue to infest the kingdom?

*A.* Yes: they invaded it several times in the course of this reign, and committed every where the most terrible ravages. In one of their descents, in particular, they laid waste the best part of the province of *Mercia*, and burned the cities of *London* and *Canterbury*.

Q. Did they meet with no opposition?

*A.* Yes: they were frequently defeated with very great slaughter, sometimes by the governors of the different counties, twice by *Ethelwolf* himself in person, and once by his son *Athelstan*, at sea. But, notwithstanding these losses, they commonly gained the point they had in view, which seems at first to have been no more than to plunder the country, and carry off the spoil. At last, however, encouraged by success, and tempted by the richness of the soil, and the mildness of the climate, they resolved to effect a settlement in *England*; and, accordingly, they actually took up their quarters, first in the isle of *Thanet*, and afterwards in that of *Sheppey*, where they continued to reside during the whole remaining part of this reign.

Q. Did *Ethelwolf* perform no other memorable action?

*A.* He made, in 854, a journey to *Rome*, accompanied by his fourth and favourite son, *Alfred*, who was then only six years of age, and who, on his arrival in that city, was crowned by the hands of pope *Leo IV*.

Q. What was his motive in undertaking this journey?

*A.* He probably undertook it from a principle of devotion, which, he expressed in a manner extremely inconsistent with the interest of his kingdom; for, besides making a perpetual grant of three hundred marks a year, to support the lamps of *St. Peter* and *St. Paul*, and assist in supplying the necessities of the pope, he agreed to subject his whole kingdom to the intolerable load of *Rome-scot*, or *Peter's-pence*; a grievous tax, which continued to be raised in *England*, from this period, to the time of the reformation.

Q. Was this the only proof he gave of his regard for religion?

*A.* No; he gave a much more solid and substantial proof, and one attended with much better consequences; for, by a formal charter, he bestowed the tythes upon his own clergy?

Q. How

Q. How long did *Ethelwolf* reign?

A. Between nineteen and twenty years. He died in 857.

Q. How often was he married?

A. Twice: first to *Osburg*, an *English* princess; and afterwards to *Judith*, daughter of *Charles the Bald*.

Q. How many children had he?

A. None by his last queen: by his first consort, he had five sons, and one daughter, viz. *Athelstan*, who died before him; *Ethelbald*, *Ethelbert*, *Ethelred*, and *Alfred*, all of whom, in their turns, succeeded him on the throne. His daughter is said to have been married to *Buthred*, governor, or, as some call him, king of *Mercia*; for it is to be observed, that the governors of some of the provinces were still allowed to retain the title of king.

Q. What is the character of this prince?

A. He was certainly possessed of many virtues, particularly of piety, which, however, seems, in some instances, to have degenerated into superstition.

### ETHELBALD and ETHELBERT, making jointly the III<sup>d</sup> King of England.

From 857 to 866.

	<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperor of the West, and King of France.</i>	
BENEDICT III.	855			
NICHOLAS I.	858	LEWIS II.		855
			<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
	<i>Emperor of the East.</i>	KENNETH II.		839
MICHAEL III.	842	DONALD V.		859
		CONSTANTINE II.		865

Q. WHO succeeded *Ethelwolf*?

A. His two eldest sons, *Ethelbald* and *Ethelbert*, between whom, agreeable to their father's will, the kingdom was divided.

Q. What is the character of these princes?

A. The latter was a wise and virtuous prince, and enjoyed, during his whole reign, the esteem and affection of his



his subjects. The former was of a profligate and abandoned character, and by marrying *Judith*, his mother-in-law, (whom, however, he soon after, divorced) encreased still farther the popular hatred against him.

Q. How long did *Ethelbald* reign ?

A. Two years only ; and, upon his death, his brother succeeded to the government of the whole kingdom.

Q. Did this prince perform any action worthy of notice ?

A. He obtained a complete victory over the *Danes*, who had invaded his dominions and burned *Winchester*.

Q. Had either of these princes any children ?

A. *Ethelbald* had none : *Ethelbert* had two sons, *Adbelm* and *Ethelward* ; but notwithstanding this circumstance, *Ethelred*, his brother, succeeded him on the throne.

## E T H E L R E D, IV<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 866 to 871.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperor of the West, and King of France.</i>	
NICHOLAS I.	858		
ADRIAN II.	867	LEWIS II.	855
		<i>Emperors of the East.</i>	
MICHAEL III.	842		<i>King of Scotland.</i>
BASILIIUS I.	867	CONSTANTINE II.	865

Q. W H E N did *Ethelred* begin his reign ?

A. In 866.

Q. By what events was it distinguished ?

A. The *Danes* still continued their invasions, committing every where the most cruel ravages ; and instead of confining their quarters, as formerly, to the isles of *Thanet* and *Shepey*, they effected a settlement in the very heart of the kingdom.

Q. How were they able to accomplish this point ?

A. Partly by the number and valour of their forces, partly by the treachery of some *English* noblemen.

Q. Which of the *English* nobility were guilty of this crime ?

A. One

*A.* One *Bruen-Bocard*, in particular, who, it must be confessed, had great cause of complaint, his wife having been barbarously ravished by *Osbert*, king or governor of *Northumberland*. Enraged at this injury, which he considered as irreparable, he made a voyage to *Denmark*, persuaded the king of that country to undertake the conquest of *England*, promised to assist him with all his interest, and, on the arrival of the *Danish* forces, used every endeavour to forward their design.

Q. Did not the *Danes* meet with a stout resistance?

*A.* They were vigorously opposed by *Ethelred*, and his gallant brother *Alfred*, who immediately assembled an army, attacked the enemy in every quarter, obtained several victories over them, but were not able, by their utmost efforts, to expel them entirely the kingdom.

Q. Where did the *Danes* establish their quarters?

*A.* In *Northumberland*, *East-Anglia*, and *Mercia*, a great part of which they had actually subdued.

Q. What is the character of *Ethelred*?

*A.* He was endued with many virtues, particularly with piety and valour; of the former of which he gave a remarkable instance; for being, one day, employed in the exercise of religion, and being, at the same time, informed, that his brother was attacked by the *Danes*, he refused to march to his assistance, till the prayers should be finished. The latter is apparent from the noble defence he made against the enemy, and the many battles which he fought with them; in one of which, he received a wound, which put a period to his life, in the fifth year of his reign.

Q. Had he any children?

*A.* He is said to have had several; but none of them are particularly mentioned, except one, whose name was *Alfred*, and who was great grandfather to *Ethelward* the historian.

## ALFRED, surnamed the Great, V<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 871 to 901.

	<i>Popes.</i>		LEO VI.	886
ADRIAN II.	867		<i>Emperors of the West, and</i>	
JOHN VIII.	872		<i>Kings of France.</i>	
MARTIN II.	882	LEWIS II.		855
ADRIAN III.	884	CHARLES II.		873
STEPHEN VI.	885	CHARLES III.		880
FORMOSUS	891	ARNOLD		888
BONIFACE VI.	896	LEWIS III.		899
STEPHEN VII.	897		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
ROMANUS	897	CONSTANTINE II.		865
THEODORE II.	898	ETHUS		878
JOHN IX.	898	GREGORY		880
BENEDICT IV.	900	DONALD VI.		898
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>				
BASILIIUS I.	867			

Q BY whom was *Ethelred* succeeded?

A. By his brother *Alfred*, who ascended the throne in 871.

Q. Did this prince perform any memorable actions?

A. More, undoubtedly, than any of his predecessors; and even, perhaps, than any of his successors.

Q. What were the most remarkable?

A. The *Danes* having invaded his dominions, with much greater numbers and fury than ever, he marched against them at the head of his army; and though he was not able to put them to a total rout, he yet committed such havoc among them, that they were glad to engage, by a solemn promise, immediately to depart the kingdom.

Q. Did they keep their word?

A. Instead of that, they suddenly turned off into another part of the country, which they ravaged with fire and sword; and being now reinforced by fresh numbers of their countrymen, which came over under three of their princes,

*Guthrum,*

*Gutbrum*, *Oscitel*, and *Amund*, they threatened the kingdom with a total subjection.

Q. Did not *Alfred* continue to oppose them with his usual vigour?

A. He did, and in one year fought eight considerable battles against them; but the enemy being still farther reinforced, and having reduced *Chippenham*, one of the chief towns of the *West-Saxons*, the *English* were seized with a general dispondence, and, almost to a man, deserted their sovereign.

Q. What did *Alfred* do in this desperate extremity?

A. He first concealed himself in the house of a shepherd; and afterwards collecting a few of his followers, took up his quarters in the isle of *Abelney*, where he remained during a whole twelvemonth.

Q. What encouraged him to leave this retreat?

A. The bravery of *Oddune*, earl of *Devonshire*, who having been besieged by a party of the *Danes*, in his castle of *Kenwitb*, sallied out upon the enemy, killed *Hubba*, their general, put the greatest part of them to the sword, and took their famous *reafen*, or enchanted standard.

Q. What step did *Alfred* take upon the news of this victory?

A. He ordered the most considerable of his subjects, to meet him by a certain time, on the borders of *Selwood* forest, and having first examined the camp of the enemy, in the habit of a harper, he marched instantly against them; and attacking them unawares, in the neighbourhood of *Eddington*, he committed such terrible slaughter upon them, that the survivors were glad to agree to the alternative, of either abandoning the kingdom, or embracing *Christianity*. This event happened in 878.

Q. Did any of them accept the latter condition?

A. Yes; *Gutbrum* and his army, who were immediately baptized, and settled in the provinces of *Northumberland* and *East-Anglia*.

Q. Did the *Danes* return any more to *England* during this reign?

A. Yes, about the year 893, under the command of their famous general, *Hastings*; but after making descents upon different parts of the coast, and committing many outrages,

outrages, they were, at last, entirely expelled the kingdom.

Q. Were *Alfred's* great actions merely of a military nature?

A. No; his civil institutions are no less remarkable, and are even, perhaps, more worthy of praise.

Q. What were the most distinguished of these?

A. He divided the kingdom into counties, hundreds, and tythings; regulated the method of parliamentary proceedings; composed an excellent body of laws; instituted, or at least reformed juries, and extended their power to civil, as well as criminal causes. In a word, he is generally, and justly considered as the great founder of the *English* constitution.

Q. Was not *Alfred* an encourager of learning?

A. Yes; witness his founding, or at least repairing the university of *Oxford*; and inviting to his court the most learned men from all countries, and bestowing upon them handsome pensions.

Q. Did not he himself make considerable progress in learning?

A. Yes; for, besides composing several original works, he translated the pastoral of *Gregory I.* *Boethius* concerning the consolation of philosophy, and *Pede's* ecclesiastical history.

Q. In what year did he die?

A. In 901, being the thirtieth year of his reign, and the fifty-second of his age.

Q. What is his character?

A. As a warrior, legislator, politician, and patron of learning, he was never excelled, and perhaps never equalled by any king of this, or of any other nation.

Q. Had *Alfred* any children?

A. Three sons and three daughters. His eldest son, *Edmund*, died before him; his second son, *Edward*, succeeded him on the throne; and his third son, *Ethelward*, devoted himself to the pursuits of literature. His eldest daughter was married to the earl of *Mercia*; his second to the count of *Flanders*; and the third was an abbess.

EDWARD *the Elder*, VI<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 901 to 925.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperors of the West.</i>	
BENEDICT IV.	900	LEWIS III.	899
LEO V.	905	CONRAD I.	912
CHRISTOPHER	905	HENRY I.	919
SERGIUS III.	906	<i>Kings of France.</i>	
ANASTASIUS III.	910	CHARLES IV.	898
LONDON	912	ROBERT I.	922
JOHN X.	913	RODOLPH I.	923
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
LEO VI.	886	DONALD VI.	898
ALEXANDER II.	911	CONSTANTINE III.	909
CONSTANT. PORPH.	912		

Q. WHY had *Edward* the surname of *Elder*?

A. Because he was the first of that name, who sat upon the *English* throne.

Q. What were the qualities of this prince?

A. He was equal to his father in courage, conduct, and every other military virtue; but greatly inferior in knowledge and learning.

Q. What were the chief transactions of his reign?

A. His cousin-german, *Ethelwald*, son to king *Ethelbert*, the elder brother of *Alfred*, having laid claim to the throne; and having, in order to support his pretensions, put himself at the head of a strong body of freebooters, whom he had brought from *Normandy*, as well as of the *Danes* of *Northumberland*, who had chosen him their king; *Edward* immediately marched out against him, and coming up with him in the neighbourhood of *Bury*, a battle was fought with great obstinacy, in which, though the enemy were able to keep the field, they gained that advantage by the loss of *Ethelwald*, and of the greatest part of their officers, who were killed upon the spot.

Q. Did *Edward* perform no other memorable action?

A. He

*A.* He obliged *Constantine III.* king of *Scotland*, to sue to him for peace; compelled the *Welsh*, who had revolted, to return to their allegiance; united to his crown the kingdoms of *Northumberland* and *East-Anglia*, which had hitherto affected a kind of independence; and is said to have founded the university of *Cambridge*, in the year 915.

Q. Was not he assisted in his warlike enterprizes by one of his sisters?

*A.* Yes, by his gallant sister, *Elffida*, who fought many battles, and obtained many victories; and of whom it is reported, that having undergone a very difficult and dangerous labour, she refused afterwards all commerce with her husband; and renouncing the usual employments of her sex, devoted herself entirely to the exercise of arms.

Q. How long did *Edward* reign?

*A.* Twenty-four years, and died in 925.

Q. Had he any children?

*A.* By his first wife, *Elffida*, he had two sons, *Ethelwald* and *Edwin*; and six daughters, two of whom lived single, and the other four were married; the first to *Charles the Simple*, the second to *Hugh the Great*, father to *Hugh Capet*, king of *France*, the third to the emperor *Otho*, and the fourth to a *German* duke. By his second wife, *Edgiva*, he had likewise two sons, *Edmund* and *Edred*, who afterwards reigned; and two daughters, the eldest of whom was a nun, and the other married to *Lewis*, prince of *Guienne*. He had also, by *Egrwina*, the daughter of a shepherd, a natural son, named *Athelstan*, who immediately succeeded him on the throne.

A TH E L S T A N, VII<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 925 to 941.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperors of the West.</i>	
JOHN X.	913	HENRY I.	912
LEO VI.	928	OTHO I.	936
STEPHEN VIII.	929	<i>Kings of France.</i>	
JOHN XI.	931	RODOLPH I.	923
LEO VII.	936	LEWIS IV.	936
STEPHEN IX.	939	<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Emperor of the East.</i>		CONSTANTINE III.	909
CONSTANT. PORPH.	912		

Q. HOW came *Athelstan*, who was only a natural son of *Edward*, to succeed him on the throne, in preference to his legitimate children?

A. Because none of these were of a proper age, or capacity, for managing the weighty affairs of government; and *Athelstan* was supposed to be possessed of every virtue, which could qualify him for the discharge of that important trust.

Q. Did his future conduct justify this favourable opinion?

A. Yes; he proved one of the best and most accomplished princes, that ever sat upon the *English* throne.

Q. What great actions did he perform?

A. He suppressed an insurrection, which was raised in *Northumberland*, by *Anlaf* and *Godfred*, the two sons of *Sithric*, late king, or governor, of that province. He marched into *Scotland*, at the head of a numerous army, and compelled *Constantine*, king of that country, who had given protection to *Anlaf*, to sue for peace, in the most suppliant terms. He afterwards defeated, in the neighbourhood of *Brunsbury*, the same *Constantine*, together with *Anlaf*, and several *Welsh* and *Danish* princes, who had made an irruption into *England*, and most of whom perished in the action. This victory was chiefly ascribed to the bravery of *Turketul*, the *English* chancellor.

Q. Did he perform any other memorable actions?

A. He



*A.* He afforded protection to queen *Edgiwa*, his sister, wife to *Charles the Simple*, king of *France*, who had fled to his court, with her young son *Lewis*, in order to secure him from the cruelty of *Rodolph*, the usurper; and upon the death of this last, he contributed greatly to the restoration of *Lewis*, who, on account of his being educated beyond sea, was usually distinguished by the surname of *Outre Mare*, or *Ultrs Marine*. In this reign, is said to have lived *Guy of Warwick*, who overcame *Colbrand*, the famous *Danish* giant; but this story, though particularly related by some historians, is not mentioned by any author of credit.

Q. In what year did *Athelstan* die?

*A.* In 941, after a reign of sixteen years; and having no children, was succeeded by his brother *Edmund*.

## EDMUND, VIII<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 941 to 946.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperor of the West.</i>	
STEPHEN IX.	939	OTHO I.	936
MARTIN III.	943	<i>King of France.</i>	
		LEWIS IV.	936
		<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Emperor of the East.</i>		CONSTANTINE III.	909
CONSTANT. PORPH.	912		

Q. WHAT is the character of *Edmund*?

*A.* He was equally distinguished for his civil and his military abilities.

Q. What proof did he give of the former?

*A.* Besides reducing into a more regular system the laws of his predecessors, he enacted many new ones of his own. In his reign, robbery was first punished with death.

Q. In what instances did his military talents appear?

*A.* He defeated the *Northumbrians*, who had revolted, and reduced them to their former allegiance. He likewise conquered *Cumberland* from the *Britons*, and bestowed it on *Malcolm*, king of *Scotland*, on condition that he should do him homage for it, and protect the *North* from all future invasions of the *Danes*.

Q. In

Q. In what manner did he die ?

A. He was assassinated.

Q. By whom ?

A. By one *Leof*, a notorious rebel, whom he had banished the kingdom.

Q. How did this happen ?

A. While he was celebrating the feast of *Augustine*, in memory of the conversion of the *Saxons*, on the twenty-sixth day of *May*, 946, he observed, that this ruffian had the boldness to enter the hall where he himself dined, and to sit at table with his attendants. Enraged at this insolence, he ordered him to leave the room, and, on his refusing to obey, he leaped upon him, and seized him by the hair; but the wretch, pushed to extremity, suddenly drew a dagger, and gave *Edmund* a wound, of which he instantly expired.

Q. Had *Edmund* any children ?

A. By his queen, *Elgiva*, he had two sons, *Edwin* or *Edwy*, and *Edgar*; but as they were very young, they did not immediately succeed him on the throne.

## EDRED, IX<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 946 to 955.

	Pope.		OTHO II.	953
AGAPOTUS		946	King of France.	
Emperor of the East.			LEWIS IV.	936
CONSTANT. PORPH.		912	Kings of Scotland.	
Emperors of the West.			CONSTANTINE III.	909
OTHO I.		936	MALCOLM I.	949

Q. WHO succeeded *Edmund* ?

A. His brother, *Edred*.

Q. What events distinguished his reign ?

A. The *Danes* of *Northumberland* having revolted, he reduced them to obedience; but breaking out, soon after, into another rebellion, and having even added treachery to rebellion, by attacking his army, while on its march home, he suddenly marched back into the heart of their country, and

and ravaging it; every where with fire sword, and effectually secured it with *English* garrisons.

Q. Did the rest of his reign pass in tranquillity?

A. Yes; and this time he spent in the exercises of devotion, or rather of superstition; for he sometimes descended so low, as to suffer himself to be scourged by the monks.

Q. Whose advice did he chiefly follow?

A. That of *Dunstan*, abbot of *Glastonbury*, an artful and ambitious ecclesiastic, who had the sole direction of his conduct, as well in temporal as in spiritual concerns.

Q. What use did *Dunstan* make of his power?

A. A very bad one; for he employed it in introducing the practice of celibacy among the clergy; a custom, which, however advantageous to the church, is extremely pernicious to civil society.

Q. In what year did *Edred* die?

A. In 955, being the fourth year of his reign.

Q. Had he any children?

A. Yes; two sons, *Bertfred* and *Elfred*, but they did not succeed him on the throne.

Q. Where was he interred?

A. In the old minster without the city of *Winchester*. His bones, with those of some other monarchs, are said to be preserved to this day, in a gilt coffin, fixed in the wall, on the south side of the choir.

## E D W Y, X<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 955 to 959.

	<i>Pope.</i>		<i>Kings of France.</i>
JOHN XII.	955	LEWIS IV.	936
<i>Emperor of the East.</i>		LOTHAIRE I.	956
CONSTANT. PORPH.	912	<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Emperor of the West.</i>		MALCOLM I.	949
OTHO II.	953	INDULPHUS	958

Q. WHO succeeded *Edred*?

A. His nephew, *Edwy*, eldest son of king *Edmund*.

Q. When did he begin his reign?

D

A In

*A.* In 955, being then about sixteen or seventeen years of age.

*Q.* What character do historians give him?

*A.* That he was possessed of the most amiable figure, and even endued with the most promising virtues, and would have been the favourite of his people, had he not been engaged in a controversy with the monks.

*Q.* What gave occasion to this dispute?

*A.* *Edwy* having married a beautiful princess of the blood royal, named *Elgiva*, who, though only his second or third cousin, was within the degrees of consanguinity prohibited by the cannon law, the monks exclaimed against him as guilty of incest, and even obliged him to agree to a divorce.

*Q.* Were they satisfied with this concession?

*A.* No: they seized the queen, burned her face with a red-hot iron, and banished her into *Ireland*; and upon her venturing to return to *England*, they again apprehended her, and put her to death in the most cruel manner. She is said to have been hamstrung, and to have expired a few days after, in the most exquisite torments.

*Q.* Did not *Edwy* resent this complication of injuries?

*A.* Yes; he expelled the monks from several of their monasteries, which he bestowed upon the secular clergy.

*Q.* What was the consequence of this proceeding?

*A.* The monks raised such a ferment in the nation, that the *Mercians* broke out into an open rebellion, and placing *Edgar* at their head, the younger brother of *Edwy*, a boy only of thirteen years of age, they soon made themselves masters of the greatest part of the kingdom.

*Q.* How did *Edwy* bear his misfortunes?

*A.* He was seized with such a deep melancholy, as soon brought him to his grave. He died in 959, being the fifth year of his reign.

*Q.* Who was the principal author of all this mischief?

*A.* *Dunstan*, commonly called *St. Dunstan*, though very unworthy of that title. He first encouraged the monks in their insults on the royal authority; and afterwards excited the people to rebel against their sovereign.

EDGAR, XI<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 959 to 975.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperor of the West.</i>	
JOHN XII.	955	OTHO II.	953
BENEDICT V.	964		
JOHN XIII.	965	<i>King of France.</i>	
DOMNUS II.	972	LOTHAIRE I.	956
BENEDICT VI.	972		
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
ROMANUS the Younger	959	INDULPHUS	958
NICEPHORUS	963	DUFFUS	967
JOHN TRIMEZES	969	CULENUS	972

Q WHO succeeded *Edwy*?

A. *Edgar*, his brother, who, before the death of *Edwy*, had obtained the sovereignty of the best part of the kingdom.

Q In what year did he ascend the throne?

A. In 959, being then only about sixteen years of age.

Q What is the character of this prince?

A. He was certainly possessed of very great abilities, and governed his kingdom with admirable wisdom.

Q What were the most memorable of his actions?

A. He took such effectual measures for securing his dominions against foreign invasions, and domestic insurrections, that his whole reign was one continued scene of tranquillity; and hence he is usually distinguished by the surname of *Pacific*.

Q What were the measures he took for this purpose?

A. He maintained a large body of regular forces in the northern counties, in order to overawe the mutinous *Danes*; and supported such a powerful, and well-appointed navy, as protected his coasts from all kind of danger.

Q Did he perform nothing else remarkable?

A. He inflicted severe punishments on such magistrates as were guilty of corruption; and, the better to ensure the administration of justice, made an annual circuit through

the different parts of his dominions. He likewise changed the tribute of the *Welsh* into three hundred wolves heads, and pardoned all crimes committed before a certain period, on condition the criminals should produce a certain number of these animals tongues; an expedient, which produced such diligence in hunting them, that the creature has been no more seen in this island.

Q. What steps did he take with regard to the church?

A. He obtained permission from pope *John XIII.* to summon a general council in his dominions; and in this assembly, the secular clergy, who were accused of many irregularities, but whose greatest crime seems to have been their living in marriage, contrary to the pope's orders, were deprived of their benefices, which were bestowed upon the monks.

Q. Was *Edgar's* private life as unexceptionable as his public conduct?

A. Very far from it. It was dissolute and licentious to the last degree.

Q. What particulars can you mention to this purpose?

A. He broke into a convent, carried off a nun by force, whose name was *Wilfrid*, and even committed violence on her person.

Q. Can you produce no other instance?

A. Yes; his marriage with *Elfrida* was attended with circumstances, which were equally singular and horrid in their nature.

Q. Please to relate the most material of these.

A. *Edgar*, hearing that this young lady, the daughter of *Olgar*, earl of *Devonshire*, was universally reputed the greatest beauty in the kingdom, resolved, if her charms should prove answerable to report, to raise her to his bed and throne; and in order the more certainly to inform himself of the truth, he desired *Ethelwold*, his principal favourite, to make a visit to the parents, and bring him an account of their daughter's accomplishments.

Q. How did *Ethelwold* execute his commission?

A. Struck with the lustre of *Elfrida's* beauty, he resolved to procure her in marriage for himself; and having, by false description of her charms, diverted the king from his purpose of marrying her, he, sometime after, observed

to his majesty, that though the homeliness of her person rendered her unworthy to be consort to a sovereign, her high birth and great riches must make her an eligible match to a subject; and, therefore, if the king had no objection, he was determined to ask her in marriage for himself.

Q. Did the king comply with his request?

A. Yes; and *Ethelwold* was soon after married to *Elfrida*; but dreading the discovery of the artifice he had employed, he confined her strictly in his castle in the country, and would never allow her to appear at court.

Q. Was it possible to keep the matter long secret?

A. No: *Edgar* was soon informed of the truth; and having paid *Ethelwold* a visit at his castle, was so enchanted with the beauty of *Elfrida*, who, notwithstanding her husband's entreaties to the contrary, used every art to set off her charms, that he instantly resolved to take vengeance on his favourite. For this purpose, he drew him, under pretence of hunting, into a neighbouring wood, where having stabbed him with his own hand, he soon after publicly married *Elfrida*. The lady herself, to expiate the crime, of which she had been guilty, in contributing, in some measure, to her husband's death, established on the spot, where his blood was spilt, a society of nuns, to pray for his soul.

Q. When did *Edgar* die?

A. In 975, being the seventeenth year of his reign, and the thirty-third of his age?

Q. Had he any children?

A. By his first wife, the daughter of earl *Ordmer*, he had a son, named *Edward*, who succeeded him on the throne; and by his second wife, *Elfrida*, he had a son, called *Ethelred*, who succeeded to *Edward*. He had likewise, by the nun *Wilfrid*, a natural daughter, whose name was *Editha*, and who is greatly extolled on account of piety.

EDWARD *the Martyr*, XII<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 975 to 978.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of France.</i>	
BENEDICT VII.	975	LOTHAIRE I.	956
<i>Emperor of the East.</i>			
BASILIIUS II.	975	<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Emperor of the West.</i>		CULLENUS	972
OTHO II.	953	KENNETH III.	977

Q. WHO succeeded *Edgar*?

A. His eldest son, *Edward*, who began his reign in 975, being then in the fifteenth year of his age.

Q. Did he succeed without opposition?

A. No: a strong party was formed against him, by the intrigues of his step-mother, the fair *Elfrida*, who, under pretence that he was not legitimate, endeavoured to raise her own son, *Ethelred*, to the throne; but *Dunstan*, and the nobility, declaring in favour of *Edward's* title, that prince was anointed and crowned at *Kingston*.

Q. What events distinguished his reign?

A. The total expulsion of the secular clergy from the possession of their benefices, and the full establishment of the monks in the monasteries.

Q. By whose influence was this effected?

A. By that of *Dunstan*, who, by this time, was advanced to the see of *Canterbury*.

Q. How was he able to accomplish this point?

A. Partly by his interest with the king and people, partly by the help of some pious impostures, which he was pleased to call miracles.

Q. What were the principal of these?

A. At one time, he declared he had received an immediate revelation from heaven in favour of the monks; at another, he made a crucifix to speak to the same purpose; and, on a third occasion, he contrived matters so, that the floor of the hall, where the assembly was met, sunk all of a sudden, and killed several of the members.

Q. Did



Q. Did not the people suspect these cheats?

A. Whatever might be the private sentiments of a few individuals, they durst not declare them publicly; and with regard to the people in general, they firmly believed them to be real miracles.

Q. In what manner did *Edward* die?

A. He was stabbed by the orders of his step-mother, *Elfrida*, whose beauty of person seems only to have been exceeded by the deformity of her mind.

Q. How was this cruel act committed?

A. ONE day, while he was hunting in *Dorsetshire*, he happened to pass near a place, called *Corse-castle*, where *Elfrida* resided; and as he had always shewn her the greatest respect, he thought it his duty to take this opportunity of paying her a visit. Accordingly, he rode up to the gate of the castle, without any attendants; and while he was drinking a cup of wine, that was brought him, a ruffian, whom *Elfrida* had prepared for the purpose, stabbed him in the back.

Q. What did *Edward*, when he found himself wounded?

A. He instantly rode off at full speed; but fainting, in a short time, through loss of blood, he fell from his saddle, his foot stuck in the stirrup, and he was dragged along by his unruly horse, till he expired. His body being found, was interred at *Wareham*, from whence it was afterwards transported to *Shaftesbury*, where it is said to have performed a great many miracles; and *Edward* was canonized as a saint and martyr.

Q. When did this catastrophe happen?

A. In 978, being the third year of his reign.

Q. What became of *Elfrida* after this barbarous deed?

A. She built monasteries, and submitted to many penances; but, notwithstanding all her marks of contrition, whether real or affected, she continued, till the day of her death, to be held in detestation by every humane person.

ETHELRED II. XIII<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 978 to 1016.

	<i>Popes.</i>		OTHO III.	983
BENEDICT VII.	975		HENRY II.	1002
JOHN XV.	984			
JOHN XVI.	995		<i>Kings of France.</i>	
GREGORY V.	996		LOTHAIRE I.	956
SILVESTER II.	999		LEWIS V.	986
JOHN XVII.	1003		HUGH CAPET	987
JOHN XVIII.	1003		ROBERT II.	996
SERGIUS IV.	1009			
BENEDICT VIII.	1012		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
	<i>Emperor of the East.</i>		KENNETH III.	977
BASILLIUS II.	975		CONSTANTINE IV.	1002
	<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		GRIMUS	1005
OTHO II.	953		MALCOLM II.	1014

Q. WHO succeeded *Edward the Martyr*?

A. His brother *Ethelred*, the second of that name, who ascended the throne in 978.

Q. What is the character of this prince?

A. He was so lazy and indolent, that he obtained the surname of *Ethelred the Unready*?

Q. Did he enjoy a peaceable reign?

A. No: it was continually disturbed by the invasions of the *Danes*, who had now, after a long interval, renewed their attempts against this island.

Q. Did not they meet with a vigorous opposition?

A. Very far from it. The *English* were at once so mean-spirited and imprudent, as to purchase a peace of them, five several times, with large sums of money. The money, raised for this purpose, was usually distinguished by the name of *Danegelt*.

Q. What effect did this produce?

A. It encouraged the *Danes* to continue their invasions, and to impose on the country such intolerable exactions, that at last the people were so thoroughly enraged, that,  
by

by orders of *Ethelred*, they massacred, in one day, all the *Danes* in *England*, and, among the rest, *Gunilda*, the king of *Denmark's* sister, who had married earl *Paling*, an *English* nobleman.

Q. Was not this barbarity severely revenged ?

A. Yes: *Sweyn*, king of *Denmark*, invaded *England* with a powerful army; made an entire conquest of the kingdom; and compelled *Ethelred* to fly for refuge to the court of *Richard*, duke of *Normandy*, whose sister, *Emma*, he had married.

Q. How long did he continue there ?

A. Till the death of *Sweyn*, in 1014, upon which he immediately returned to *England*, and re-ascended the throne.

Q. Did he possess it quietly during the rest of his reign ?

A. No: *Canute* proved an enemy no less formidable than his father *Sweyn*, and even carried his cruelty to a still greater height. At one time, in particular, he cut off the hands and noses of all the *English* hostages, and in that shocking condition, set them ashore at *Sandwich*.

Q. Did he meet with no opposition ?

A. Yes: prince *Edmund*, the eldest son of *Ethelred*, made head against him with a considerable army; and would probably have obliged him to abandon the kingdom, had he not been basely betrayed by the perfidious *Edric*, who deserted to *Canute* with a strong body of forces.

Q. What was the consequence of *Edric's* treachery ?

A. *Canute* subdued the greatest part of the kingdom, and seemed likely, in a short time, to become master of the whole; when, in 1016, death put a period to king *Ethelred's* life, in the fiftieth year of his age, and the thirty-seventh of his reign.

Q. Had he any children ?

A. By his first wife *Elgiva*, he had *Edmund*, who succeeded him; *Athelstan*, who died an infant; and *Edwy*, who was afterwards murdered by order of *Canute*: and three daughters; the first, called *Edgiva*, married an *English* earl, who was killed in battle; the second, called *Edgitha*, had the ill fortune to be married to the traitor *Edric*, duke of *Mercia*; and the third, named *Edgina*, was espoused to *Urbred*, earl of *Northumberland*. By his second wife, *Emma*

of *Normandy*, he had two sons, *Alfred* and *Edward*; and a daughter named *Goda*. The sons were, immediately after their father's death, conveyed by their mother into her own country. The daughter was married, first to *Walter*, earl of *Mantes*, and, afterwards, to *Eustace*, earl of *Boulogne*.

## EDMUND, surnamed *Ironside*, XIV<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1016 to 1017.

	<i>P. pe.</i>		<i>King of France.</i>	
BENEDICT VIII.	1012	ROBERT II.		997
	<i>Emperor of the East.</i>			
BASILIIUS II.	975		<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
	<i>Emperor of the West.</i>	MALCOLM II.		1014
HENRY II.	1002			

Q. WHO succeeded *Ethelred*?

A. His eldest son, *Edmund*, who acquired the surname of *Ironside*, from his great strength of body. He began his reign in 1016.

Q. What is the character of this prince?

A. He was alike distinguished for his courage and his conduct; and had he not been cut off in the prime of his youth, would probably have equalled, in every other respect, the most illustrious of his predecessors.

Q. In what condition did he find the kingdom at his accession to the throne?

A. In a most miserable one; the greatest part of it being possessed by *Canute*, king of *Denmark*, who, immediately upon the death of *Ethelred*, laid siege to *London*, which was almost the only city, that had not submitted to the terror of his arms.

Q. Did he take it?

A. No: for *Edmund* having defeated him in two great battles, obliged him, in a short time, to raise the siege. Soon after, he obtained a third victory over him; but being prevented, by the counsels of the perfidious *Edric*, from improving his advantage, *Canute* was able to repair his loss, and even to give *Edmund* such a terrible overthrow, as seemed to threaten him with utter destruction.

Q. How did *Edmund* act in this desperate extremity ?

A. Notwithstanding the loss he had suffered, he soon re-assembled his broken forces, and even offered the enemy battle ; when the leading men of both armies, wearied out with the calamities of war, obliged the two kings to come to a compromise, and to divide the kingdom between them.

Q. In what manner was it divided ?

A. *Canute* had, for his share, the provinces of *Mercia*, *East-Anglia*, and *Northumberland* : the southern parts were left to *Edmund*.

Q. How long did this prince survive the treaty ?

A. But a few days, being barbarously murdered by the order of *Edric*, his brother-in-law, who suborned two domestics for that purpose, and, immediately, upon the commission of the fact, carried the news of it, with joy, to the *Danish* king, *Canute*.

Q. How did *Canute* receive the information ?

A. Though he was shocked at the barbarity of the deed, yet, as he had further occasion for the traitor, he thought it prudent to dissemble his sentiments, and even promised to raise him above all the other lords of the kingdom ; a promise, indeed, which he afterwards fulfilled, though in a manner very different from what *Edric* expected ; for he soon caused the head of that ruffian to be publicly cut off, and to be fixed upon one of the highest gates in *London*.

Q. When did *Edmund* die ?

A. In 1017, after a reign of less than a year ; and his death made way for the succession of *Canute* to the government of the whole kingdom.

Q. Had *Edmund* any children,

A. By his wife *Algitha*, he had two sons, *Edmund* and *Edward*, and a natural son, whose name was *Edwy*.

## C H A P. XVII.

## D A N I S H K I N G S.

CANUTE, surnamed the Great, XV<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1017 to 1035.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperors of the West.</i>	
BENEDICT VIII.	1012	HENRY II.	1002
JOHN XIX.	1024	CONRAD II.	1024
BENEDICT IX.	1033		
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		<i>Kings of France.</i>	
BASILIIUS II.	875	ROBERT II.	997
CONSTANT. X.	1025	HENRY I.	1031
ROMANUS III.	1028	<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
MICHAEL IV.	1034	MALCOLM II.	1014

2 W H E N did *Canute* begin his reign ?

*A.* In 1017.

2 What were the first acts of his government ?

*A.* He had no sooner ascended the throne, than he dispatched the sons of *Edmund Ironside*, the true heirs of the crown, to the court of his ally, the king of *Sweden*, whom he requested, that, on the arrival of the *English* princes, he should immediately put them to death; but that monarch, detesting the thought of committing such a base and barbarous action, and being, at the same time, afraid, by affording them protection, to incur the displeasure of *Canute*, ordered them to be conducted to the court of *Solomon*, king of *Hungary*.

2 What reception did they meet with in this last place ?

*A.* A very favourable one: *Edmund*, the elder, was soon after married to *Solomon's* sister; but dying without issue, that prince gave his sister-in-law, *Agatha*, daughter of the emperor, *Henry II.* in marriage to *Edward*, the younger brother;

brother; and she bore him *Edgar Atheling, Margaret*, afterwards queen of *Scotland*, and *Christina*, who retired into a convent.

Q. Had *Canute* any wars to maintain?

A. Yes, against the king of *Sweden*, whom he defeated in a great battle; as also against the king of *Norway*, whom he expelled from his kingdom. He likewise obliged the king of *Scotland* to do him homage, for the lands which that prince held in *England*.

Q. How did he employ himself during times of tranquillity?

A. In regulating the civil administration of his kingdom, and in repairing the cities, abbeys, and churches, which had been damaged, or demolished, during the late wars. In particular, he built a splendid church over the tomb of *Edmund*, king of *East-Anglia*, who had been killed by the *Danes*; and, in memory of that prince, gave to the town the name of *St. Edmund's-bury*, which it still retains.

Q. Did not he make a journey to *Rome*?

A. Yes; and, during his abode there, he obtained from the pope some considerable privileges in favour of the *English* school, established in that city.

Q. Did not he give a remarkable proof of his piety, and good sense?

A. Yes: one day, while he was walking by the sea-side, one of his courtiers, in admiration of his grandeur, exclaimed, that he was king both of earth and sea. Upon this, *Canute* ordered a chair to be brought, and sitting down on the shore, while the tide was making, he spoke to the sea in the following terms: "O sea, thou art subject to me, and this land is my property; I command thee not to approach nearer to me, nor to presume to wet the feet of thy master." But as the sea, notwithstanding his orders, rose still higher, and even washed him with its waves, he turned to his courtiers, and addressed them in these words: "Let us confess," said he, "that there is no being, to whom the title of king of earth and sea belongs, except him who created them by his power, and preserves them by his goodness. Let us, therefore go, and acknowledge him as such."

Q. What did he for this purpose?

A. He

*A.* He immediately went to the abbey-church of *Winchester*, took his diadem from his head, and with it crowned a crucifix; and could never be persuaded to wear it for the future, but confessed himself unworthy of that honour.

Q. Did he always continue in this disposition?

*A.* Yes; to the end of his life, which happened in 1035, after a reign of eighteen years.

Q. What is the character of this prince?

*A.* It was so different in the different periods of his life, that it is almost impossible to describe it. Though, in making his way to the throne, he had violated every law, humane and divine, yet he had no sooner attained that dignity, than he seemed at once to change his nature, and continued, during the best part of his reign, to govern his kingdom with such justice, equity, and prudence, as secured him the affection of his own subjects, and commanded the esteem of all other nations.

Q. Had he any children?

*A.* Yes: by his first wife, *Alfwen*, daughter of the earl of *Hampshire*, he had two sons, *Sweyn* and *Harold*; and by his second wife, *Emma* of *Normandy*, widow of king *Ethelred*, he had a son, named *Hardicanute*, and a daughter, called *Gunilda*, who was married to the emperor, *Henry IV.* To *Sweyn* he gave *Norway*, to *Hardicanute* *Denmark*, and *Harold* succeeded him on the throne of *England*.

## HAROLD, surnamed Harefoot, XVI<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1035 to 1039.

<i>Pope.</i>		<i>King of France.</i>	
BENEDICT IX.	1033	HENRY I.	1031
<i>Emperor of the East.</i>			
MICHAEL IV.	1034	<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Emperor of the West.</i>		MALCOLM II.	1014
CONRAD II.	1024		

Q. WHENCE did *Harold* derive the name of *Harefoot*?

*A.* From his great agility in running and walking.

Q. Did



Q. Did he succeed to the crown with the unanimous consent of the nation?

A. No: most of the *English* would have preferred *Hardicanute*, whom they considered as their countryman; but as the will of the late king was in favour of *Harold*, and his cause was supported by the *Danes*, he easily carried it against all opposition.

Q. Did he perform any memorable action?

A. None but what must ever be held in the utmost abhorrence. Prince *Alfred*, the son of *Ethelred* by his queen *Emma*, having come to pay him a visit, was treacherously seized by the king's order, his eyes were put out, and he was thrown into prison, where he soon after died.

Q. What were the qualities of *Harold*?

A. Treachery and cruelty seem to have been his principal qualities; and these rendered him so odious to his subjects, that he was on the point of being deposed, when death put a period to his life.

Q. When did this happen?

A. In 1039, in the fifth year of his reign.

## HARDICANUTE, XVII<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1039 to 1041.

<i>Pope.</i>		<i>Emperor of the West.</i>	
BENEDICT IX.	1033	HENRY III.	1039
		<i>King of France.</i>	
		HENRY I.	1038
		<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>			
MICHAEL IV.	1034		
MICHAEL V.	1041	MALCOLM II.	1014

Q. WHO succeeded *Harold*?

A. His brother *Hardicanute*, or *Canute the Hardy*, who began his reign in 1039.

Q. What is the character of this prince?

A. He possessed most of the ill qualities of his brother, together with that of intemperance. He appears, however, to have been a dutiful son, and an affectionate brother; for he invited both *Emma* and *Edward* to his court, and treated them with great hospitality.

Q.

Q. Did not prince *Edward*, on his arrival in *England*, enter an accusation against *Goodwin*, duke of *Wessex*, as having been concerned in the murder of his brother *Alfred*?

A. Yes; but that nobleman found means to escape the danger, by presenting a magnificent galley to the king, who immediately put a stop to the prosecution.

Q. What were the chief transactions of *Hardicanute's* reign?

A. Very few, and such as reflect disgrace upon his memory.

Q. Please to mention them?

A. He caused the body of the late king, his brother, to be dug up, to be publicly beheaded, and thrown into the *Thames*; where it was found by some fishermen, and brought to the *Danes*, who privately interred it in the church of *St. Clement*, which was the *Danish* burying ground.

Q. Can you give no other instance of his cruelty?

A. Two of the collectors of his customs having been murdered by the inhabitants of *Worcester*, he ordered the duke of *Wessex*, and some other noblemen, to march against that city, to raze it to the ground, and to destroy the inhabitants.

Q. Did they obey his orders?

A. They executed the first part of them; but were too generous to comply with the last.

Q. Of what disease did *Hardicanute* die?

A. Of a surfeit, which he got at the wedding-feast of a *Danish* nobleman; and the *English* were so little affected by his death, that they turned it to a subject of mirth, and, for a long time, distinguished the anniversary of it by the name of *Hock-holiday*.

Q. In what year did this happen?

A. In 1041, being the third year of his reign.

## C H A P. XVIII.

S A X O N K I N G S *Restored.*

EDWARD, *surnamed the Confessor*, XVIII<sup>th</sup>  
King of England.

From the Year 1041 to 1066.

	<i>Popes.</i>	MICHAEL VI.	1056
BENEDICT IX.	1033	ISAAC I.	1057
GREGORY VI.	1044	CONSTANT. XII.	1059
CLEMENT II.	1045	<i>Emperors of the West.</i>	
DAMASCUS II.	1048	HENRY III.	1039
LEO IX.	1049	HENRY IV.	1056
VICTOR II.	1055	<i>Kings of France.</i>	
STEPHEN X.	1057	HENRY I.	1031
NICHOLAS II.	1059	PHILIP I.	1060
ALEXANDER II.	1061	<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		MALCOLM II.	1014
MICHAEL V.	1041	DONALD VII.	1045
CONSTAN. MONOM.	1042	DUNCAN	1052
THEODORA	1054	MALCOLM III.	1059

Q. WHO succeeded *Hardicanute* ?

A. *Edward*, the youngest son of *Ethelred*, in whom the *Saxon* line was restored.

Q. Was he the true heir of the crown ?

A. No: *Edward*, the son of *Edmund Ironside*, had a better title; but as he was at that time absent from the kingdom, and the present opportunity behoved speedily to be embraced, it was thought most prudent to overlook his claim in this critical emergence.

Q. Had neither of the two last kings any children ?

A. None that are mentioned by historians; and even if they had had any, such was the aversion which the *English* had conceived to the *Danish* yoke, that it is more than probable, they would not have allowed them to succeed to the throne.

Q. By

Q. By whose interest was this revolution effected?

A. By that of *Goodwin*, duke of *W'effex*, one of the most powerful noblemen that ever appeared in *England*.

Q. Did not he impose some conditions on *Edward*, before he would employ his interest in his favour?

A. Yes: he required him to engagé, by a solemn oath, that he would marry *Editba*, his daughter; and *Edward* was forced to agree to the proposal, in spite of his reluctance, to marry the daughter of a man, whom he considered as the murderer of his brother, *Alfred*: Every thing being thus settled, he was crowned at *Winchester*, in the year 1041, being then, it is said, about forty years of age.

Q. Was not his accession to the throne attended with some insults and outrages against the *Danes*?

A. Yes; but with regard to the story of their having been all massacred, which is mentioned by some historians, it is not supported by any good authority.

Q. Did none of the descendants of *Canute* endeavour to assert their right to the crown of *England*?

A. *Sweyn*, king of *Norway*, fitted out a powerful armament for that purpose; but a war breaking out between him and the king of *Denmark*, he was obliged entirely to abandon the enterprize.

Q. Did not the ambition of *Goodwin* and his sons threaten the kingdom with some great disturbance?

A. Yes: they actually rose in arms, and assembled a numerous army; but being opposed by a superior force, they were deserted by their troops, and driven into banishment. Nevertheless, they were, in a little time, recalled; and *Goodwin* dying soon after, was succeeded in his honours, his interest, and estate, by his son *Harold*, who afterwards ascended the throne of *England*.

Q. Was not the death of *Goodwin* attended with some singular circumstances?

A. It is reported, that as he was one day at dinner with the king, that monarch said to him, that had his brother *Alfred* been now alive, they would have mutually assisted each other, and while he spoke, he eyed the earl with a very disdainful air.

Q. What reply did the earl make?

A. Knowing well that the king suspected him of having been concerned in his brother's death, he took a bit of bread

bread in his hand, and saying, " May this be the last morsel I ever swallow, if I am any way guilty of that prince's death," he put it in his mouth.

Q. What was the consequence ?

A. It instantly choaked him, and left the company at a loss to determine, whether it were owing to an apoplectic fit, or to a judgment from heaven. This incident, however, is not mentioned by our best historians.

Q. Is not *Edward* accused of having treated his mother, queen *Emma*, with great severity ?

A. Yes, and not entirely without foundation ; for, having conceived a grudge against her, on account of her marrying *Canute*, the great enemy of his family, and preferring her children by the second marriage to those she had by the first, he now stripped her of all her treasures, and confined her, during the remainder of her life, to a monastery in *Winchester*. But with regard to his accusing her of a participation in her son *Alfred's* murder, and of a criminal correspondence with the bishop of *Winchester*, and also of her justifying herself by the *fiery ordeal*, or by treading unhurt, blindfolded and barefooted, over nine burning plough-shares, these are allowed, by our most sensible historians, to be merely the inventions of the monkish writers.

Q. Was *Edward's* reign distinguished by any military transaction ?

A. *Macbeth*, a *Scottish* nobleman, having murdered *Duncan*, his lawful sovereign, and banished his son, *Malcolm Kenmore*, usurped the throne of that kingdom ; upon which, *Sirward*, earl of *Northumberland*, marched against that bloody tyrant, defeated and killed him in a great battle, and established *Malcolm* on the throne of his ancestors. *Harold* too, the son of earl *Godwin*, repulsed the *Welsh*, who had invaded the western borders, and pursuing them into their own country, reduced them, at last, to such extremity, that they were glad to purchase a peace of him, by presenting him with the head of *Griffith*, their prince.

Q. What did *Edward* do for improving the civil administration of his kingdom ?

A. He collected the laws of his predecessors, *Ethelbert*, *Iva*, and *Alfred*, and digested them into one body, which he called, *The Common Law of England*.

Q. How

Q. How long did these laws continue in force ?

A. 'Till the time of *William the Conqueror*, who, about the fifth year of his reign, introduced into *England* the feudal law, which was then the prevailing form of government all over *Europe*.

Q. Did not the *English* soon desire the restoration of *Edward the Confessor's* laws ?

A. Upon the accession of *Henry I.* they demanded, and were promised, the restoration of these laws ; and that monarch, accordingly, granted a charter, in which he restored the laws of king *Edward*, and abolished most parts of the feudal system, excepting that of military tenures, which he retained, as an amendment made by his father, though he lessened some of the grievances of it.

Q. Were the people of *England* satisfied with this concession ?

A. Yes : till the old oppressions were renewed in the reign of king *John*, when the barons, and chief tenants of the crown, extorted from that prince a new charter of liberties, which was, probably, somewhat short of that granted by *Henry I.* and yet fuller than that of *Henry III.* and this continues to this very day to be part of the *Common Law of England* ?

Q. What is the character of king *Edward* ?

A. He was, in general, of a mild and peaceable temper, had no great genius, and was not subject to any violent passions. The monks honoured him with the title of *Saint* and *Confessor* ; and even asserted, that many miracles were wrought by him, as well during his life time, as after his death. They further add, that he observed an inviolable chastity with his wife, *Editba*, and that this continence proceeded from a principle of religion ; though it is more probable, that it was owing to the hatred he had conceived against her, as being the daughter of a man, who had murdered his brother.

Q. Have you nothing else remarkable to mention of this prince ?

A. He was the first who pretended, in imitation of the *French* monarchs, to cure, by his touch, the disease called the king's-evil ; a practice, which was continued by all his successors, till the year 1714, when it was wisely dropped  
by

by the present royal family, who observed, that as it had always been ridiculous in the eyes of men of sense, so it could no longer raise the amazement even of the populace.

Q. Did not he erect some considerable buildings?

A. He converted a little monastery into a most beautiful cathedral, named *Westminster-abbey*, which he endowed with rich revenues, and dedicated to *St. Peter*; and he there built his own sepulchre, which has since been employed as the common burying-place of all the *English* monarchs. He likewise built another church, which was consecrated to *St. Margaret*, a little without the abbey.

Q. When did *Edward* die?

A. On the fifth day of *January*, 1066, in the sixty-fifth year of his age, and the twenty-fifth of his reign. He expired in the room of his palace at *Westminster*, now called the *Painted chamber*; and was solemnly interred in the sepulchre he had built.

## H A R O L D II. XIX<sup>th</sup> King of England.

1066.

<i>Pope.</i>		<i>King of France.</i>	
ALEXANDER II.	1061	PHILIP I.	1060
<i>Emperor of the East.</i>			
CONSTANT. XII.	1059	<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Emperor of the West.</i>		MALCOLM III.	1059
HENRY IV.	1056		

Q. WHO succeeded *Edward*?

A. *Harold*, the son of the late earl *Godwin*, who ascended the throne in 1066.

Q. Had he any right to the crown?

A. Not even the smallest pretension.

Q. How then came he to obtain it?

A. The people either bestowed it upon him, or they acquiesced in his usurpation, after he had seized it.

Q. Who was the true heir to the crown?

A. *Edgar Atheling*, the grandson of *Edmund Ironside*; but as that prince was possessed of but very mean abilities.

and

and was supposed to be incapable of supporting the weight of government, his title was overlooked on the present occasion.

Q. Is not *Edward* said to have bequeathed his crown, to *William* duke of *Normandy*?

A. It is pretended, indeed, that he made a will to that purpose; but no proof could ever be produced that any such will existed.

Q. Did not *William* endeavour to assert the right, which this supposed will gave him?

A. Yes; and with that view, he sent ambassadors to *Harold*, to summon him to resign his crown; and, in case of refusal, to reproach him with the violation of his oath, and to declare war against him.

Q. What oath had *Harold* taken?

A. While he was at the court of *Normandy* about some other business, *William* had acquainted him with the will of king *Edward* in his favour, and obliged him to swear, that he would support his pretensions.

Q. What answer did *Harold* now give to the demand of the duke of *Normandy*?

A. That he was able to defend his right against any one who should dispute it with him.

Q. Was *William* intimidated by this answer?

A. No: he began to prepare for an invasion of *England*; and in the mean time, prevailed on *Toston*, king *Harold's* brother (who having been stripped of his employments for his numerous crimes, had, in a fit of rage, abandoned his country) to make a descent upon that kingdom, in order to pave the way for the execution of his enterprize.

Q. What success did *Toston* meet with?

A. He was repulsed in his first attempt; but retiring afterwards to the court of *Norway*, he persuaded *Harold Harsager*, the king of that country, to undertake the conquest of *England*; and that prince, accordingly, embarked his army on board a fleet of five hundred ships, with which he entered the *Humber*, laid waste *Yorkshire*, took the capital of that county, and was proceeding in his ravages, when, being encountered by the king of *England*, at the head of a numerous army, his troops were defeated, and himself and *Toston* slain in the action.

Q. Was



Q. Was *William* discouraged by these unpromising circumstances?

A. No: having assembled an army of sixty thousand veteran troops, he put them on board a fleet of three thousand ships, and setting sail for *England*, landed them without opposition, on the twenty-ninth of *September*, at *Pevensey* in *Suffex*, from whence he advanced to *Hastings*, where he established his quarters.

Q. What reasons did he alledge for his descent upon *England*?

A. His motives, he said, were, to revenge the death of prince *Alfred*, brother to king *Edward*; to restore *Robert*, archbishop of *Canterbury*, to his see; and to assert his own right to the crown of *England*, which, he pretended, had been bequeathed him by *Edward the Confessor*.

Q. How did *Harold* behave upon the news of this invasion?

A. He instantly marched against the enemy, and coming up with them at *Hastings*, fought there the great and decisive battle, which finally determined the fate of *England*, and put *William* in possession of the crown of that kingdom.

Q. Pray mention the most remarkable circumstances of the action?

A. The *English* had taken post on a rising ground, where they wisely resolved to stand upon the defensive. The *Normans*, therefore, began the attack; but met with such a stout and vigorous resistance, that, after a long and obstinate dispute, they were beginning to fall into some disorder, when *William*, coming up, restored the battle, and renewed the attack with redoubled fury. Finding, however, that, after all his efforts, the main body of the *English* continued absolutely impenetrable, he ordered his troops to make a seeming retreat, and when the *English*, believing them routed, pursued them into the plain, the *Normans* turned suddenly upon these last, and repulsed them to the hill with great slaughter. The same experiment was repeated a second time, and with the same success; but notwithstanding the loss of the *English* in these two encounters, a good body of them still kept together, and seemed even determined to dispute the victory with the enemy, till at last king *Harold*, after performing incredible feats of valour,

was unfortunately killed by an arrow, and his two valiant brothers, *Gurth* and *Leafwin*, were likewise slain. The *English*, dispirited by the fall of these princes, immediately took to flight, and were hotly pursued by the victorious *Normans*, who committed great havock among them, till at length darkness put an end to the carnage.

Q. To what cause chiefly do historians ascribe the defeat of the *English*?

A. Partly to the habits of luxury and idleness, which they had unhappily contracted during a peace of fifty years continuance, and their total neglect of military discipline; partly to the resentment, which the army had conceived against *Harold*, for reserving to himself the whole plunder of the field, in the late engagement with the *Danes*.

Q. What numbers are supposed to have fallen on both sides?

A. The loss of the *Normans* is said to have amounted to about fifteen thousand men; that of the *English* was much more considerable.

Q. Was the body of king *Harold* found?

A. Yes, but all disfigured with blood and wounds, and was decently interred in *Waltham-abbey*, which he himself had founded.

Q. Had he any children?

A. By his first wife, whose name is not known, he had three sons, *Godwin*, *Edmund*, and *Magnus*. By his second wife, called *Algotha*, he had one son, named *Wolf*, who was knighted by *William Rufus*; and two daughters, the first of whom, *Gunilda*, grew blind, and spent her day in a convent; and the second married *Waldemar*, king of *Russia*, by whom she had a daughter, espoused to *Waldemar*, king of *Denmark*.

## NORMAN KINGS.

## C H A P. XIX.

WILLIAM, surnamed the Conqueror, XX<sup>th</sup> King  
of England.

From 1066 to 1087.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperor of the West.</i>	
ALEXANDER II.	1061	HENRY IV.	1056
GREGORY VII.	1073		
VICTOR III.	1085	<i>King of France.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		PHILIP I.	1060
CONSTANT. XII.	1059	<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
ROMANUS IV.	1068	MALCOLM III.	1059
MICHAEL VII.	1071	DONALD VIII.	1068
NICEPHORUS I.	1078		
ALEXIS I.	1081		

Q. WHOSE son was William?

A. Of Robert, duke of Normandy, by one of his mistresses, named Harlotte, a skinner's daughter of Falaise; whence he was, at first, distinguished by the surname of the Bastard; but this he afterwards, upon his subduing England, changed into that of Conqueror.

Q. Can you mention any of the particulars of this amour?

A. As Robert was one day taking the air on horseback, he happened to pass by a company of country girls, who were dancing; and was so struck with the handsome person, and graceful carriage of one of them, viz. the above-mentioned Harlotte, that he prevailed on her to cohabit with him, and ten months after, in the year 1066, she was delivered of this William, of whom we are now speaking.

Q. Did William succeed to his father's dominions?

A. As Robert had no legitimate issue, and, besides, was very fond of his natural son, he, upon setting out on a pilgrimage to Jerusalem, in the year 1033, appointed William

heir to his dominions, in case he should die on his journey; and this event actually happening, *William* succeeded to the dukedom of *Normandy*, in 1035, being then only nine years of age.

Q. Were not his dominions, during his minority, disturbed, as well by foreign invasions, as domestick insurrections?

A. Yes: *Henry I.* king of *France*, attacked his dutchy, and the barons of *Normandy*, in their contention for power, raised several disturbances; but *William*, having arrived at the years of maturity, repulsed the former, and reduced the latter, and effectually established the tranquility of his dukedom.

Q. What were the consequences of the battle of *Hastings*?

A. The *English*, at first, made some show of resistance, and, being headed by *Edwin* and *Morcar*, Earls of *Northumberland* and *Mercia*, they even proclaimed *Edgar Atheling* king; but *William* advancing with his army towards *London*, and the clergy, in general, declaring in his favour, the magistrates of the capital came out in a body, and presented him with the keys of the city, in token of their submission.

Q. Did the rest of *England* follow their example?

A. No: *York* and *Oxford* still held out; but *William*, having reduced these places, punished the inhabitants with such severity, as overawed even the most stubborn spirits; and every one thenceforth strove who should be first in paying him homage.

Q. When was *William* crowned?

A. On *Christmas-day*, 1066, by *Aldred*, archbishop of *York*, the archbishop of *Canterbury* being deemed unqualified for that office, as he had received his pall from *Benedict IX.* who was reckoned an usurper.

Q. Did *William* enjoy a peaceable reign?

A. No: he was almost continually employed in suppressing the insurrections of his rebellious subjects, or repelling the attacks of her restless neighbours.

Q. Which of his neighbours attacked him?

A. The *Danes* invaded *England*, and took the city of *York*; but *William* marching against them, at the head of a numerous army, they were glad to abandon the kingdom, without coming to a battle. The *Welsh* continued,

as usual, to infect the western borders; but were always driven back, with considerable loss, into their mountains and forests. *William*, king of *Scots*, too, made an inroad into the northern counties; but he was not only repulsed into his own country, but obliged to do homage to *William* for the whole kingdom of *Scotlaad*.

Q. Did not *William's* eldest son, *Robert*, carry on a war against him?

A. Yes; and in the course of it, many battles, or, at least, skirmishes were fought; in one of which, *Robert* happened to encounter with his father, who was concealed by his helmet; and as both of them were valiant, a fierce combat ensued, till at last the young prince wounded the king in the arm, and threw him from his horse. Calling for assistance, his son discovered him by his voice, and being struck with remorse for the crime he had committed, he threw himself at his father's feet, and begged pardon for his offence, which he, in some measure, obtained.

Q. How did *William* govern the *English*?

A. He treated them at first with great lenity, and confirmed their ancient laws and privileges; but when he found them engaged in perpetual conspiracies against his government, he altered his conduct, and punished the rebels with the utmost severity.

Q. What punishments did he inflict upon them?

A. He deprived some of their estates, put out the eyes of others, cut off the hands and feet of several, and condemned many, either to death, or to perpetual imprisonment.

Q. What other instances can you give of his tyranny?

A. He seized the treasures belonging to the monasteries, upon pretence that the rebels had concealed there their most valuable effects; excluded the *English* from all places of trust and profit; imposed the tenure of knight's service upon all lands held of the crown; and laid a tax of six shillings upon every hide of land, answerable to the tax called *Danegelt*. He deprived the *English*, as far as he could, of all their ancient privileges, abolishing their laws, and establishing those of *Normandy* in their room. He divided the kingdom into about 700 baronies, and 60,000 knight's fees; and bestowed all the former, either upon

*Normans*, or other foreign adventurers; and such of the *English*, as retained their possessions, were content to be admitted into the second class. He laid waste the county of *Hampshire*, for the extent of thirty miles, and converted it into a habitation for wild beasts, which he called the new forest. At the same time, he denounced the most severe penalties against those who should presume to hunt in any of the royal forests; and while the killing of a man might be attoned for by a moderate fine, the killing of a deer or boar, or even of a hare, was punished with the loss of the delinquent's eyes.

Q. What other hardships did *William* impose upon the *English*?

A. He commanded them to use the *Norman* or *French* tongue only, in their law proceedings; caused the laws of the land to be translated into that language; and ordered it to be taught in all schools; a practice, which has never since been entirely discontinued. In a word, he governed *England* as a conquered country; and it may be safely affirmed, that no sovereign ever ruled with a more arbitrary and despotic sway. With regard to the *corfeu*, or the obliging the inhabitants to put out their fires and lights, on the sounding of a certain bell, this was a law, which *William* had previously established in *Normandy*, and the same custom prevailed in *Scotland*.

Q. Did *William* perform no generous actions?

A. He was extremely generous to all his *Norman* captains; for, indeed, he divided among them the greatest part of *England*; and his receiving into favour *Edgar Atheling*, the true heir of the crown, is mentioned by several historians as a proof of his clemency.

Q. Had he any dispute with *France*?

A. Provoked at *Philip* the First's having sacked *Dol*, to which he had laid siege, and at some raileries which that prince had thrown out against his great belly (for he was now very corpulent) he entered *France* at the head of a numerous army; and having taken *Mantes*, he first plundered it, and then set it on fire; but this action cost him his life.

Q. In what manner?

*A.* Entering the place before the flames were extinguished, his horse happened to tread on some hot ashes, which made him plunge with such violence, that *William* was thrown forward, and bruised upon the pommel of the saddle to such a degree, that he was soon after seized with a fever, which carried him off on the 9th of *September* 1087; this being the sixty-first year of his age, the twenty-first of his reign over *England*, and the fifty-second of that over *Normandy*.

*Q.* Where was he interred?

*A.* In *St. Stephen's* abbey in *Caen*, which he himself had founded, and endowed with rich revenues.

*Q.* What is the character of *William*?

*A.* He was a prince of great courage, capacity, and ambition; to the gratification of which last, he sacrificed all the dictates of justice, and all the feelings of humanity. He was stern and haughty in his carriage, jealous and reserved in his temper; his aspect was severe and imperious, his stature tall and portly, and the composition of his bones and muscles so strong, that there was hardly a man of that age who could bend his bow, or handle his arms.

*Q.* Had he any children?

*A.* Yes: by his wife, *Matilda*, daughter to *Baldwin V.* earl of *Flanders*, he had four sons, viz. *Robert*, *Richard*, *William*, and *Henry*; and five daughters, viz. *Cicely*, abbess of a monastery in *Caen*; *Constantia*, married to *Alain Fergant*, duke of *Brittany*; *Alice*, who was contracted to *Harold*, but died in his infancy; *Adela*, married to *Stephen*, earl of *Blais*, whose son of the same name afterwards mounted the throne of *England*; and *Agatha*, who was betrothed to the king of *Gallicia*, but died in her journey to that country.

*Q.* In what manner did he divide his dominions?

*A.* To *Robert*, his eldest son, he left *Normandy* and *Maine*; *Richard* was killed by a deer in the *New-forest*; to *William* he gave *England*; and to *Henry* he bequeathed nothing but his mother's possessions; but upon that prince's complaining to him of the small patrimony he had received, *William* is said to have comforted him with the hopes, that the dominions of his brothers would be one day united in his person; an event which accordingly happened.

## C H A P. XX.

WILLIAM II. *surnamed Rufus*, XXI<sup>st</sup> King  
of England.

From 1087 to 1100.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Emperor of the West.</i>	
VICTOR III.	1086	HENRY IV.	1056
URBAN II.	1088		
PASCHAL II.	1099	<i>King of France.</i>	
		PHILIP I.	1060
		<i>Emperor of the East.</i>	
ALEXIS I.	1081	<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
		DONALD VIII.	1068

Q. WHO succeeded *William the Conqueror*?

A. His second son, *William*, surnamed *Rufus*, or *Red*, from the colour of his hair.

Q. Why was his eldest son, *Robert*, excluded?

A. Because he had raised a rebellion against his father, for which reason he had only *Normandy* for his portion.

Q. By whose interest chiefly did *William* succeed?

A. By that of *Lanfranc*, archbishop of *Canterbury*, who solemnly crowned him on the 27<sup>th</sup> of *September*, 1087.

Q. Did nobody espouse the cause of duke *Robert*?

A. Yes: *Odo*, bishop of *Bayeux*, earl of *Kent*, his uncle, jealous of the great credit, which *Lanfranc* had obtained, formed a scheme for setting *Robert* on the throne; and his measures were taken with so much art, that it was generally thought, they would have proved successful.

Q. What defeated them?

A. The indolence of *Robert*, and the activity of *William*; the latter of whom suppressed the conspiracy, before the former could pass into *England*.

Q. Did



Q. Did not *William* retaliate this injury upon his brother?

A. He entered *Normandy* at the head of a powerful army, and reduced several places; but, in 1090, their common friends interposed, and effected a reconciliation, upon this condition, that, on the demise of either without issue, the survivor should succeed to all his dominions.

Q. Was this peace lasting?

A. No: in 1091, *William* returned into *Normandy*, seized upon several cities, and was proceeding in his conquests, when *Robert*, engaging in a crusade, and not having money sufficient to defray the expence of his journey to the *Holy Land*, mortgaged his whole dukedom to his brother *William*, for ten thousand marks of gold; a very considerable sum in those days.

Q. Was *William* engaged in any other wars?

A. He obliged *Malcolm*, king of *Scots*, to pay him the same homage he had paid to the king his father; and some time after, *Malcolm* having invaded *England*, was surprized in the neighbourhood of *Alnwick*, by a party of earl *Morvbray's* troops, and himself and his son, *Edward*, slain.

Q. Had not *William* likewise some disputes with the *Welsh*?

A. Yes; for these people continuing their inroads into *England*, *William* drove them back with considerable slaughter, and even penetrated a great way into their country; but the *Welsh* betaking themselves to their mountains and fastnesses, sallied out occasionally upon the dispersed parties of the *English*, whom they put to the sword without opposition; and *William* finding it impossible to bring them to a battle, was obliged, after rebuilding the castle of *Montgomery*, to return into *England*.

Q. In what manner did *William* die?

A. As he was hunting in the *New Forest*, attended by one *Walter Tyrrel*, a *French* knight, that gentleman let fly an arrow, which glancing accidentally, either from a tree, or from the horns of a stag, pierced the king's breast, and instantly slew him. This event happened on the second of *August*, in the year 1100, in the thirteenth year of the king's reign, and about the fortieth of his age.

Q. Was *William* ever married?

A. No; nor does it appear, that he had ever any illegitimate children.

Q. What is his character?

A. He was certainly a violent and tyrannical prince; a perfidious, encroaching, and dangerous neighbour; an unkind and ungenerous relation; and the only good quality he seems to have possessed, was his signal courage, which rose almost to a degree of ferocity.

Q. Were the *English* sorry for his death?

A. On the contrary, they considered it as one of the most fortunate events that could possibly have happened; and they further observed, that as the *Conqueror* had been guilty of extreme violence, in expelling all the inhabitants of *Hampshire*, in order to form the *New Forest*; so providence, by a just retribution, had rendered that place fatal to several of his posterity; for, besides *William*, who now lost his life in it, his elder son, *Richard*, and his grandson of the same name, natural son of duke *Robert*, were both killed by accident in the same *New Forest*.

Q. What monuments did *William* leave behind him?

A. He rebuilt *London-bridge*, which had been demolished by torrents; surrounded the *Tower* with a strong rampart; and erected *Westminster hall*, which, though one of the largest buildings in *Europe*, he affected to despise as a petty bed-chamber.

## C H A P. XXI.

HENRY I. *surnamed Beau-Clerc*, XXII<sup>d</sup> King  
of England.

From 1100 to 1135.

	<i>Popes.</i>	HENRY V.	1105
PASCHAL II.	1099	LOTHARIUS II.	1125
GELASIVS II.	1118	<i>Kings of France.</i>	
CALISTUS II.	1119	PHILIP.	1060
HONORIUS II.	1124	LEWIS VI.	1103
INNOCENT II.	1130	* <i>King of Denmark.</i>	
CELESTIN II.	1134	NICHOLAS.	1107
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
ALEXIS I.	1081	DONALD VIII.	1063
JOHN COMNEN.	1118	EDGAR	1103
<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		ALEXANDER	1117
HENRY IV.	1056	DAVID.	1134

Q. WHO succeeded *William*?

A. His younger brother, *Henry*, in prejudice to *Robert*, his elder brother, who alone was entitled to the crown, as well by the right of primogeniture, as by virtue of the last treaty concluded between him and *William*.

Q. Where was *Robert* at the time of his brother's death?

A. In *Italy*, where having, in his return from *Palestine*, married *Sibylla*, daughter of the count of *Conversana*, he had lingered for a twelvemonth; and this imprudent delay gave *Henry* an opportunity of seizing upon the crown.

Q. What steps did he take for this purpose?

A. He was no sooner informed of his brother's death, than he hastened to *Winchester*, where seizing the royal trea-

\* Although *Denmark* be one of the most ancient kingdoms in *Europe*, and *Nicholas*, according to some authors, be no less than the seventy-eighth sovereign, yet the preceding part of its history is involved in such impenetrable obscurity, that it is absolutely impossible, before this period, to ascertain exactly the succession of its kings.

sure, he proceeded thence directly to *London*, and partly by presents, partly by promising to enlarge and confirm the privileges of the people, he procured such a number of friends, that on the 5th of *August*, 1100, in less than three days after his brother's decease, he was solemnly crowned in *London*, by *Maurice*, bishop of that city.

Q. Did he perform the promise he had made?

A. He granted his subjects a very advantageous charter, in which he confirmed several privileges they had enjoyed under the *Saxon* kings. He redressed many grievances, that had been complained of during the reign of his father and brother; reformed the abuses, which had crept into the court; enacted severe penalties against offenders; and promised a general confirmation of *Edward the Confessor's* laws.

Q. What did *Robert* do upon the news of his brother's having usurped the throne?

A. He immediately returned to his dukedom of *Normandy*, where having assembled a small body of forces, he made a descent upon *England*, and was instantly joined by a good number of the inhabitants.

Q. What success did he meet with in this enterprize?

A. *Henry* marched against him with the utmost dispatch, and resolved to give him battle; but just as the two armies were on the point of engaging, the leading men on both sides interposed their good offices, and effected an accommodation upon this condition, that *Robert* should resign all pretensions to the crown of *England*, in consideration of which, he should receive an annual pension of three thousand marks; and that all the *English*, who had declared in his favour, should be indulged with a pardon.

Q. Did *Henry* perform his part of the treaty?

A. Not very faithfully: upon which *Robert*, who had a great share of knight-errantry in his temper, came over a second time, almost unattended, to *England*, with a view of persuading his brother to fulfil his engagements; and *Henry*, taking advantage of *Robert's* imprudence, compelled him, before he would allow him to depart, to resign his pension.

Q. Did not *Robert* resent this ungenerous treatment?

A. Yes,

*A.* Yes, and throwing out some menaces against *Henry*, he furnished that prince with a plausible pretence for undertaking the conquest of *Normandy*; a scheme, indeed, which he seems long to have meditated, and which he now at last accomplished.

*Q.* In what manner?

*A.* Having assembled an army, he passed over into *Normandy*, where he reduced several places, and coming up with his brother, in the neighbourhood of *Tenchebray*, he fought with him a battle, in which *Robert* lost both his liberty and his province.

*Q.* How did *Henry* dispose of his brother?

*A.* He carried him into *England*, and committed him close prisoner to the castle of *Cardiff* in *Wales*; where, after lingering out a miserable captivity of twenty-eight years, he died in 1133; leaving behind him a son, named *William*, who was almost as unfortunate as his father.

*Q.* What misfortunes did he meet with?

*A.* *Lewis le Gros*, the *French* king, intended to bestow upon him the investiture of *Normandy*; but being disappointed in that design, he gave him the county of *Flanders*, which, however, he did not long enjoy; for, the year following, he was killed at the siege of *Alost*.

*Q.* Did not this attempt of *Lewis* occasion a war between *France* and *England*?

*A.* Yes; and in a battle which was fought in the course of it, *Henry* narrowly escaped being killed by one *Crispin*, a *Norman* knight, who attacked him: nevertheless, he unhorsed his antagonist, and defeated the *French*; and the great standard of *France* being taken, was carried in triumph to *Roan*.

*Q.* How was this war terminated?

*A.* By the mediation of pope *Calistus II.* who, in 1120, had an interview with the two kings at *Gisors*, where he persuaded them to agree to a peace. The war, however, soon broke out afresh, and was carried on, for some time, with equal success on both sides; but, at last, both parties being weary of the quarrel, a new peace was happily concluded.

*Q.* Had *Henry* any other wars to maintain?

*A.* Yes; against the *Welsh*, whom he drove back into their mountains, but was not able entirely to subdue.

Q Was not he engaged in a dispute with the clergy?

*A.* Yes.

Q Please to mention the most remarkable circumstances of it.

*A.* The kings of *England* had always had the privilege of bestowing investitures upon bishops, by delivering to them the pastoral staff and ring; and also of exacting from them, as barons of the realm, an oath of allegiance. By the former, the prelates were supposed to receive their spiritual dignity; by the latter, they were entitled to the temporalities of their see. In consequence of this privilege, though the chapter had been indulged with a seeming right of election, the sovereign had, in reality, the sole power of appointing bishops. But this practice having been condemned by a council assembled at *Rome*, in 1104, *Anselm*, who now held the see of *Canterbury*, forbade all the *English* prelates, either to receive the investiture, or to take the oath of allegiance; and in order the more effectually to enforce his injunction, he himself refused to comply with these ceremonies.

Q What did *Henry* do upon this occasion?

*A.* He defended, with great vigour, the prerogatives of his crown; and *Anselm* having gone to *Rome*, and obtained from the pope an approbation of his conduct, he strictly prohibited that prelate from entering his dominions?

Q What was the issue of this controversy?

*A.* The king and the pope, being equally afraid to exasperate each other, were glad, at last, to come to a compromise. *Henry* resigned the right of bestowing investitures; and the pope allowed him to retain the privilege of exacting from the bishops an oath of allegiance.

Q Was *Henry* ever married?

*A.* Twice; first to *Matilda*, daughter of *Malcolm*, king of *Scots*; and afterwards to *Adelais*, daughter of *Godfrey*, count of *Louvain*.

Q Had he any children?

*A.* By his last consort he had none; by his first he had *William*, duke of *Normandy*, and *Matilda*, who was married first to the emperor *Henry V.* and afterwards to *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, count of *Anjou*.

Q. What became of *William*?

A. He was drowned in his passage from *Normandy* to *England*, in 1120, together with his natural sister, *Matilda*, countess of *Perche*; for the crew of the ship being intoxicated with liquor, carried her upon the rocks near *Barfleur*, where she instantly foundered; and this unexpected catastrophe had such an effect upon the king, that he fainted away, when he received the news of it; and was never seen to smile, from that moment, to the day of his death. *Henry* had likewise, besides the countess of *Perche*, several other natural children (some historians say twelve), the most remarkable of whom was *Robert*, earl of *Gloucester*.

Q. How did he settle the succession, upon the death of his son?

A. He appointed his daughter, *Matilda*, heiress of all his dominions; and upon the birth of her son, named *Henry*, whom she bore to *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, (for she had no children by the emperor,) he obliged all his subjects to take an oath of allegiance to her and the young prince.

Q. When did *Henry* die?

A. On the first of *December*, 1135, in the sixty-eighth year of his age, and the thirty-sixth of his reign.

Q. To what was his death supposed to be owing?

A. To a fever he contracted from a surfeit of lampreys, a kind of food, of which he was always very fond. He died at *St. Denis le Forment*; and his body being embalmed, according to the rude fashion of the times, was brought over to *England*, and solemnly interred in the abbey of *Reading*.

Q. What were the qualities of *Henry*?

A. His person was manly, his countenance engaging, his eyes clear, serene, and penetrating. He was brave, affable, sagacious, and eloquent; extremely temperate in his meals; inexorable against offenders; and so great a lover of learning, that he acquired the surname of *Beauclerc*, or the scholar: but all his good qualities were sullied with avarice, cruelty, and lust. In order to atone for these vices (for such were the only atonements known in that age) he founded the episcopal sees of *Ely* and *Carlisle*, and endowed several abbeys.

## C H A P. XXII.

STEPHEN, XXIII<sup>d</sup> King of England.

From 1135 to 1154.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of France.</i>	
CELESTIN II.	1134	LEWIS VI.	1108
LUCIUS II.	1144	LEWIS VII.	1137
EUGENIUS III.	1145	<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
ANASTAS. IV.	1153	ERIC IV.	1135
ADRIAN V.	1154	ERIC V.	1139
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		SWEIN IV. and CANUTE V.	
JOHN COMNEN.	1118		1148
EMANUEL COM.	1143	<i>King of Portugal.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		ALONSO I.	1140
LOTHARIUS II.	1125	<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
CONRAD III.	1138	DAVID	1134
FREDERIC I.	1152		

Q. DID the English observe the oath of allegiance they had taken to *Matilda* and her son?

A. No; though it is hard to say what they would have done, had not they been prevented by the ambition of *Stephen*, surnamed of *Blois*, who, upon the death of *Henry I.* found means to ascend the throne.

Q. What pretensions had he to that dignity?

A. He was son to *Ad-la*, daughter of *William the Conqueror*, and of *Stephen*, earl of *Blois* and *Champagne*.

Q. What titles had he before his advancement to the throne?

A. He was earl of *Blois*, *Champagne*, *Mortaigne*, and *Boulogne*, in *France*; and besides, was possessed of an immense property in *England*.

Q. How came he to acquire this property?

A. By the generosity of the late king, who had invited him, and his brother *Henry*, to court, and loaded them with the greatest favours. To the former, he had given a large estate



estate in land, and married him to *Matilda*, daughter and heiress of *Eustace*, count of *Boulogne*, and niece to *Matilda*, *Henry's* first wife. The latter he had created abbot of *Glastonbury*, bishop of *Winchester*, and procured him to be appointed legate of the holy see.

Q. What were *Henry's* motives in bestowing these favours upon his nephews?

A. In order to strengthen the interest of his daughter, *Matilda*, whose cause, he imagined, they would the more heartily espouse; but the credit they had obtained by his countenance, was treacherously employed, not in supporting the title of the empress, but in raising *Stephen* to the throne.

Q. Did he succeed with the unanimous consent of the nation?

A. No; but as none were prepared to oppose his usurpation, they thought it most prudent to submit to his government. He was crowned at *Westminster*, by the archbishop of *Canterbury*, on the 26th of *December*, 1135.

Q. Did not he endeavour to gain the favour of the *English*, by granting them a charter of liberties?

A. Yes; and in this he confirmed the prerogatives of the church; acknowledged he held the crown by no other tenure, than the election of the people and the clergy; repealed all the laws relating to hunting; and promised to abolish the tax called *Danegelt*.

Q. Did not the empress assert her right to the throne?

A. Yes; and with that view she came over to *England*, in 1139, accompanied by her brother, *Robert*, earl of *Gloucester*.

Q. What success did she meet with in this enterprize?

A. The earl of *Gloucester*, being joined by a great number of barons, attacked *Stephen* in the neighbourhood of *Lincoln*, where he not only defeated the royal army, but likewise took the king himself prisoner.

Q. What was the consequence of this victory?

A. Almost the whole kingdom submitted to *Matilda*, who was just upon the point of obtaining the crown, when she imprudently lost it by her own pride and arrogance.

Q. In what manner?

A. Ste-

*A.* *Stephen's* queen intreated her, in the most suppliant terms, to set her husband at liberty, promising, that, upon that condition, he should resign the crown, and retire into a convent; the legate, who had lately espoused her cause, and to whose interest she had been, in a great measure, indebted for her success, desired that prince *Eustace*, *Stephen's* son, might enjoy *Boulogne*, and the other patrimonial estates of his father; and the *Londoners* applied to her for the establishment of the *Confessor's* laws, in place of those of king *Henry*: but instead of granting these requests, which were so reasonable, *Matilda* denied them all, in the most haughty and peremptory manner.

Q. Did not the petitioners resent this indignity?

*A.* The *Londoners* formed a scheme for seizing the person of the empress, who was obliged to save herself by flight: the legate immediately abandoned her cause, and espoused again the party of his brother; and *Stephen's* queen was so exasperated, that having levied a great body of troops, and reinforced them with those which her son, *Eustace*, had brought to her assistance, she marched without delay, in quest of the enemy; and coming up with them in the neighbourhood of *Winchester*, she entirely defeated them, and took the earl of *Gloucester* prisoner. This event happened in 1141.

Q. What followed upon this victory?

*A.* As the earl of *Gloucester*, though a subject, was as much the soul of the one party, as the king was of the other, the empress, sensible of his great merit, consented to exchange the prisoners upon equal terms. The civil war was then rekindled with greater fury than ever.

Q. How long did it last?

*A.* Till the 6th of *November*, 1153; when *Stephen*, having lost his son, prince *Eustace*, and finding himself hard pressed by the arms of the empress, agreed to a treaty upon the following conditions: that he should continue to reign during the remainder of his life; that, upon his death, *Henry*, *Matilda's* son, should succeed to the throne; and that *William*, *Stephen's* son, should possess *Boulogne*, and the patrimonial estates of his father.

Q. Had *Stephen* any other enemies to encounter?

*A.* Yes;

*A.* Yes; the *Welsh* and the *Scots*; the former of whom he drove back into their forests; and the latter he defeated in a great battle, called the battle of the *standard*, from a kind of crucifix, which the *English* had erected on a waggon, and carried along with them as a military ensign.

*Q.* How long did he survive his treaty with the empress?

*A.* Hardly a twelvemonth; for he died on the 25th of *October*, 1154, in the fiftieth year of his age, and the nineteenth of his reign, and was buried in the abbey of *Feverham*, which he himself had founded.

*Q.* What is the character of *Stephen*?

*A.* He was certainly a prince of great industry, activity, and courage; was not deficient in ability; had the art of gaining men's affections; and, notwithstanding his precarious situation, never indulged himself in the exercise of any cruelty or revenge.

*Q.* Did he leave any children?

*A.* Besides his son *Eustace*, who died before him, he had another son, called *William*, who was earl of *Boulogne*, in right of the queen, his mother. He had likewise a daughter, named *Mary*, espoused to *Philip* of *Alsatia*; and two natural sons, *William* and *Ger vase*, the last of whom was abbot of *Westminster*.

## The HOUSE of ANJOU, or PLANTAGENET.

## C H A P. XXIII.

HENRY II. XXIV<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1155 to 1189.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of France.</i>	
ALEXANDER III.	1154	LEWIS VII.	1137
LUCIUS III.	1181	PHILIP II.	1180
URBAN III.	1185	<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
GREGORY VIII.	1167	SWEIN IV. and CANUTE V.	
CLEMENT III.	1188		1148
		VALDEMAR I.	1157
		CANUTE VI.	1182
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
EMANUEL COM.	1143	ALONSO I.	1140
ALEXIS II.	1180	SANCHO I.	1185
ANDRONICUS I.	1183	<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
ISAAC II.	1185	DAVID	1134
		MALCOLM IV.	1163
<i>Emperor of the West.</i>		WILLIAM	1165
FREDERIC I.	1152		

2. WHO succeeded *Stephen* ?

*A.* Henry II. son to the empress *Matilda*, by her second husband, *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, count of *Anjou*.

2. By what title did he succeed ?

*A.* As well by that of hereditary right, derived from his grandfather, *Henry I.* king of *England*, as by virtue of the late treaty, which he had concluded with *Stephen*.

2. Was not he possessed of very large dominions before his accession to the throne ?

*A.* He was master, in right of his father, of *Anjou*, *Tou-raine*, and *Maine*; in that of his mother, of *Normandy*; and in that of his wife, of *Guienne*, *Poitou*, *Xaintogne*, *Auvergne*, *Perigord*, *Angoumois*, and *Limousin*.

2. Who

Q. Who was his wife ?

A. *Eleanor*, daughter and heiress of *William*, duke of *Guienne*, &c. She had been married before to *Lewis VII.* king of *France*; but having, by her unguarded behaviour, excited the jealousy of that monarch, she had been formally divorced from him; and was, soon after, married to *Henry*, who thus got possession of all her dominions.

Q. When was *Henry* crowned ?

A. On the 19th of *December*, 1155.

Q. What were the first acts of his reign ?

A. He revived the laws of the *Confessor*, and confirmed the charter of *Henry I.* He cleared the kingdom of all those foreign mercenaries, who had been invited into it by *Stephen*, and had been guilty of innumerable disorders; revoked all the grants made by his predecessor, and even those which necessity had extorted from his mother; demolished the castles, which had been lately erected, and which served as so many sanctuaries to rebels and freebooters; repaired the coin; suppressed robbery and violence; enforced the execution of the laws; and bestowed the earldom of *Huntingdon* on *Malcolm* king of *Scots*, who, in return, restored to him the counties of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Westmoreland*.

Q. Was *Henry* engaged in any wars ?

A. Yes, in several. His first was against his brother *Geoffrey*, who had seized upon *Anjou* and *Maine*, to which he pretended he had a just title. *Henry* was no sooner informed of this event, than he passed over to the continent, and expelled *Geoffrey* from both these provinces. He likewise subdued *Nantz*, which he added to his dominions. At the same time, *Conan*, duke of *Brittany*, betrothed his daughter, and only child, yet an infant, to the king's third son, *Geoffrey*, who was of the like tender years; and the duke dying in a few years after, *Henry*, on pretence of being guardian to his son and daughter-in-law, put himself in possession of that principality.

Q. Did not *Henry* carry on a war against *Raymond*, count of *Thoulouse* ?

A. Yes; in order to assert his wife's claim to the dominions of that prince, to which she was justly intitled, in right of her mother, *Philippa*, sole issue of *William*, count of

of *Thoulouse*; but *Raymond* being assisted by *Lewis*, king of *France*, a treaty was at last concluded; and *Lewis* gave his daughter, *Margaret*, in marriage to *Henry*, the king of *England*'s eldest son.

Q. Was not *Henry* likewise engaged in a war with *Scotland*?

A. Yes; in the course of which, he took *William*, king of *Scots*, prisoner, and obliged him, before he would restore him to liberty, to do homage to him for his whole kingdom. He also repulsed the *Welsh*, who had invaded the western borders.

Q. Was not *Henry* engaged in a dispute with the clergy?

A. Yes, and one too of the most dangerous nature.

Q. What gave occasion to this dispute?

A. The design which the king had formed to retrench the privileges of the clergy, or rather to confine them within their ancient bounds, and the obstinate and inflexible temper of *Thomas a Becket*, archbishop of *Canterbury*.

Q. Who was this *Thomas a Becket*?

A. He was the son of a tradesman in *London*; his mother a *Syrian*. Having been bred to the law, and acquired great reputation in that profession, he had been successively advanced to several high offices in the state, till at last he attained to the post of chancellor. The king now promoted him to the archbishopric of *Canterbury*, hoping, that as he owed every thing to the royal bounty, and was thoroughly acquainted with his majesty's design with regard to ecclesiastical privileges, he would heartily concur in rendering it effectual.

Q. Did he do so?

A. Very far from it. He was no sooner installed in his see of *Canterbury*, than he began to extend, to a greater length than ever, the usurpations of the clergy.

Q. Did not the king resent this ingratitude?

A. Yes; and he obliged *Becket*, though not without difficulty, to agree to certain articles, called the *Constitutions of Clarendon*, by which the immunities of the church were considerably diminished. But these constitutions having been condemned by the pope, *Becket* retracted the assent he had given; at which the king was so much provoked, that he instantly caused that prelate to be impeached of high-treason.

Q. What

Q. What was the result of this controversy ?

A. *Becket* appealed to the pope, and soon after withdrew to the continent, where his cause was espoused by *Lewis*, king of *France*, and *Alexander III.* who then filled the papal chair.

Q. Was not *Henry* incensed at the partiality of his holiness ?

A. So highly, that he began to take some steps towards acknowledging *Paschal*, the anti-pope ; and *Alexander*, in revenge, threatened to lay *England*, and all the king's dominions, under an interdict,

Q. Were not *Henry* and *Becket* at last reconciled ?

A. Yes, on the 22d day of *July*, 1170 ; upon which, *Becket* returned to *England*, after having been banished from it for the space of six years.

Q. How did he behave upon his return ?

A. He had no sooner arrived in *England*, than, instead of retiring quietly to his diocese, he issued a sentence of excommunication against several of the king's ministers, who had incurred his displeasure.

Q. What did *Henry* upon receiving the news of these proceedings ?

A. He broke out into a violent passion, and exclaimed, that he should never enjoy a moment's quiet while *Becket* was alive ; and that he had no faithful servants about him, otherwise he had not been so long exposed to the insults of that imperious prelate.

Q. What was the consequence of these dangerous expressions ?

A. Four gentlemen of the king's household, taking them to be a hint for *Becket's* death, went over to *England*, and attacking that prelate in the cathedral of *Canterbury*, clove his head before the altar, which was all besmeared with his blood and brains. This murder was perpetrated on the 29th day of *December*, while *Becket* was employed in saying *Vespers*.

Q. What effect did it produce ?

A. It inflamed the pope to such a degree, that he threatened to lay *Henry* under the sentence of excommunication ; nor was it till after the king's ambassadors had arrived at *Rome*, asserted his innocence in the most solemn manner,

and

and swore that he would stand to the award of his holiness, that the pontiff could be dissuaded from putting his menaces in execution. Soon after, he accommodated matters with the court of *Rome*, and received absolution from two of the pope's legates.

Q. Did he give any other mark of his submission?

A. In 1174, he made a pilgrimage to *Becket's* tomb, where, after having spent a whole day in fasting and prayer, and watched the holy relicks during the night, he submitted to the mortifying penance of receiving several lashes from the prior and the monks.

Q. What character do historians give of *Becket*?

A. Some represent him as a most illustrious martyr, while others affirm, that he was a perfidious traitor. And so doubtful was his character, even among the clergy, that, forty years after his death, a dispute arose in the university of *Paris*, whether his soul was in heaven or hell.

Q. Was not *Ireland* conquered during this reign?

A. It was.

Q. Pray give me some account of that country.

A. *Ireland* is an island situate to the west of *Great Britain*, extending in length about 300 miles, in breadth about 150. It is bounded on the north by the *Deucealedonian* sea, on the west by the *Atlantic* ocean, on the south by *St. George's* channel, and on the east by the *Irish* sea, which separates it from *Great Britain*. It is blest with a fruitful soil, a temperate climate, and is said to be possessed of this peculiar property, that no serpent, or other venomous animal, will live in it.

Q. Who were the original inhabitants of *Ireland*?

A. They were probably a colony of *Britons*, who, straitened for room in their own country, transported themselves into that island.

Q. What kind of government prevailed among them?

A. They were divided into a great number of petty independent states, each ruled by its respective chieftain. At the time of the island's being conquered, besides several smaller tribes, there were five principal sovereignties in the country, viz. *Munster*, *Leinster*, *Meath*, *Ulster*, and *Connaught*.

Q. What gave occasion to the conquest of *Ireland*?

A. Der-



*A. Dermot Macmorrogh, king of Leinster, having, for his cruelty and tyranny, been deprived of his dominions, applied to Henry, who was then in Guienne, and offered to hold his kingdom in vassalage of him, provided that, by his assistance, he should be restored to his possessions.*

Q Did Henry accept his offer ?

*A. Not having time to undertake the expedition himself, he granted permission to all his English subjects to assist the exiled prince. Accordingly Richard Strongbow, earl of Pembroke, Robert Fitz-Stephens, Maurice Fitz-gerald, and others, having assembled a body of 1080 men, passed over to Ireland, and with this small force, in the space of a few months, made an entire conquest of the island ; so that when Henry arrived there, he had nothing else to do but to receive the homage of his new subjects. Strongbow married the daughter of Dermot, upon whose death, he not only succeeded to the dominions of that prince, but was likewise appointed seneschal of Ireland. This event happened in 1172.*

Q Did not Henry's sons raise a rebellion against him ?

*A. Yes, and one that embittered extremely the latter years of his life.*

Q To what cause is this rebellion supposed to have been owing ?

*A. To the ambitious and ungrateful temper of the young princes themselves, who wanted to supplant their father on the throne; to the insidious arts of the French king, who encouraged and assisted them in this unnatural enterprize ; and to the more criminal instigations of their own mother, Eleanor, who had become jealous of her husband, and who took this method to revenge the wrongs, which she imagined she received.*

Q Was this war distinguished by any remarkable event ?

*A. No ; for, though it lasted several years, it consisted only of petty skirmishes and encounters, and was at last terminated by an accommodation that was effected between Henry and his sons.*

Q Was this peace lasting ?

*A. Some years after, Richard, the king's eldest surviving son, (for prince Henry was now dead) raised another insurrection*

rebellion

rection against him, and being assisted by *Philip*, king of *France*, reduced him to such extremity, that he was glad to agree to any conditions, which they were pleased to prescribe.

Q. Did the king long survive this treaty?

A. No; indignation at the hard terms imposed on him by his son, *Richard*; resentment at the treachery of his barons and other subjects, who had, most of them, deserted him; and, above all, vexation at the ingratitude of his favourite son *John*, who had entered into a strict correspondence with the enemy: these passions preyed upon his anxious mind, and threw him into a state of the deepest despair. He cursed, in the agony of his grief, the day in which he was born; and bestowed, on his undutiful and rebellious children, a malediction, which he could never, afterwards, be prevailed on to retract. The more his heart was disposed to friendship, the more he resented the unnatural behaviour of his sons; and these domestic calamities, by depriving him of every comfort in life, quite broke his spirits, and threw him into a lingering fever, of which he expired at *Chinon*, on the 6th of *July*, 1189, in the fifty-seventh year of his age, and the thirty-fifth of his reign. His body was carried to *Fontevrault*, which he had ordered for the place of his interment.

Q. What is the character of *Henry*?

A. He was possessed of every accomplishment, both of body and mind, that could fit him for the high station, in which he was placed. Brave, active, generous, merciful, just, and prudent; he was alike qualified to engage the affections, and command the esteem of his subjects. In a word, he was one of the greatest, and most illustrious monarchs, that ever sat upon the *English* throne.

Q. How many children had he?

A. By his queen, *Eleanor*, he had five sons, two of whom only, viz. *Richard*, his third, and *John* his youngest, survived him; but *Geoffrey*, his fourth son, who was killed in a tournament at *Paris*, left a son, called *Arthur*, who was duke of *Bretagne*. *Henry* had also three daughters, viz. *Maud*, married to the duke of *Saxony*; *Eleanor*, wife of *Alfonso*, king of *Castile*; and *Joan*, consort to *William II.* surnamed *the Good*, king of *Sicily*.

Q. Had

Q. Had he any natural children?

A. By the fair *Rosamond*, daughter of Lord *Clifford*, he had two sons, viz. *William Longue-espée*, or *Long-sword*, earl of *Salisbury*; and *Geoffrey*, archbishop of *York*. There was also one *Morgan*, a *Welshman*, provost of *Beverly*, who pretended to be a natural son of *Henry*, by the lady of a knight, named *Ralph Bloet*; but this pretence seems to have been founded on nothing but the man's own vanity and madness.

Q. What do historians relate concerning the fair *Rosamond*?

A. That *Henry* concealed her in a labyrinth at *Woodstock*, in order to secure her from the jealousy of his queen, who, nevertheless, found means, during her husband's absence in *Normandy*, to destroy her rival by poison. But this story is not supported by any good authority.

Q. Is not *Henry* said to have carried on an intrigue with *Alice*, sister to the *French* king, and betrothed to his own son, *Richard*?

A. Yes; and even to have had a child by her: but this story is still worse founded than the former. It is certain, however, that *Richard* made use of this pretence for refusing to marry that princess.

## C H A P. XXIV.

RICHARD I. *surnamed* Cœur de Lion, or Lion's Heart, XXV<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1189 to 1199.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of France.</i>	
CLEMENT III.	1188	PHILIP II.	1180
CELESTINE III.	1191		
INNOCENT III.	1198	<i>King of Denmark.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		CANUTE VI.	1182
ISAAC II.	1185		
ALEXIS	1193	<i>King of Portugal.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		SANCHO I.	1185
FREDERIC I.	1152		
HENRY VI.	1190	<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
PHILIP I.	1197	WILLIAM	1165

Q. WHO succeeded Henry II. ?

A. Richard I. his eldest surviving son.

Q. Where was Richard at the time of his father's decease ?

A. In France, where having concluded a peace with Philip, king of that country, he repaired to Rouen, and was invested with the ducal sword of Normandy; after which, he went over to England, and on the third of December, 1189, was solemnly crowned at Westminster.

Q. What were the first acts of his reign ?

A. He set at liberty his mother, queen Eleanor, who, on account of her having encouraged the rebellion of her sons, had been detained in prison ever since the year 1173: he banished from his presence all those who had assisted him in his insurrection against his father, and confirmed in their offices the ministers and servants who had continued faithful to their former master; and he bestowed upon his brother, John, the government of no less than six counties.

Q. Did not Richard engage in a crusade ?

A. Yes, in conjunction with Philip, king of France; and, in order to collect money for this purpose, he made use of several

several expedients, which were equally pernicious to the public interest, and dangerous to his own authority.

Q. What were the principal of these?

A. He renounced, for the sum of 10,000 marks, the superiority of *Scotland*, which his father had gained: he put to sale all the revenues and manors of the crown, all places of trust and profit, and even the seats in the courts of justice; and when some of his ministers took the liberty to remonstrate against such imprudent proceedings, he frankly told them, that he would sell *London* itself, if he could find a purchaser.

Q. To whom did he intrust the government of the kingdom, during his absence?

A. To *Hugh*, bishop of *Durham*, and *William Longchamp*, bishop of *Ely*, his chancellor, who, at the same time, was appointed the pope's legate.

Q. When did he set out on his expedition to the *Holy-Land*?

A. Having settled his affairs in *England*, he went over to the continent, and on the 25th of *June*, 1190, had an interview with *Philip*, king of *France*, at *Vexelai*, where these two monarchs swore not to invade each other's dominions, during the crusade. They then reviewed their armies, which amounted to 100,000 men, and proceeded on their march to *Sicily*, where they spent the winter.

Q. Did not a quarrel break out between them, in that country?

A. Yes, by the intrigues of *Tancred*, king of *Sicily*, who being equally apprehensive of danger from both these princes, endeavoured to embroil them with each other. Nevertheless, all their disputes being compromised, *Philip* set sail for *Palestine*, and was soon after followed by *Richard*, accompanied by his sister, the queen dowager of *Sicily*, and *Berengaria* of *Navarre*, who had been lately betrothed to him.

Q. Had he a favourable passage?

A. No: his fleet was dispersed in a storm, and wrecked upon the coast of *Cyprus*; upon which, *Isaac*, king of that island, pillaged the ships that were stranded, threw the seamen and passengers into prison, and would not even permit the princesses to shelter themselves in the harbour of *Limisso*.

Q. Did not *Richard* resent this barbarity?

A. He immediately landed his troops, attacked *Isaac*, defeated his army, took himself prisoner, loaded him with silver chains, seized upon his kingdom; and having consummated his marriage with *Berengaria* of *Navarre*, set out for the *Christian* camp before *Acon*.

Q. Did *Richard* and *Philip* carry on their operations with unanimity and concord?

A. No; for *Richard* having, by his noble achievements, eclipsed the fame, and excited the jealousy of the *French* monarch, this last took every opportunity of expressing his resentment; and accordingly, upon the taking of *Acon*, which surrendered on the 12th of *July*, 1191, after having been besieged above two years, and cost the *Christians* 300,000 men, *Philip*, under pretence of sickness, quitted the camp, and set out on his return for his own country. He left, however, about 10,000 of his troops, under the duke of *Burgundy*, to assist the *croises* in their future enterprizes.

Q. What exploits did *Richard* perform after the departure of *Philip*?

A. He attacked *Saladine*, emperor of the *Saracens*, who was at the head of an army of 300,000 men; and he obtained over him a complete victory, having killed in the action about 40,000 of his forces. He then repaired the maritime cities of *Ascalon*, *Joppa*, and *Cæsarea*, which *Saladine* had demolished; but he was soon after obliged to return back to *England*.

Q. On what account?

A. Partly for want of provisions; partly by the desertion of the other *Christian* princes; and partly from the apprehensions he was under, lest *Philip*, during his absence, should invade his dominions.

Q. What did *Richard* before he left *Palestine*?

A. He bestowed *Isabella*, widow of *Conrade*, marquis of *Montferrat*, and king of *Jerusalem* (who had been murdered, in *Sidon*) upon *Henry*, count of *Champagne*, his nephew, who succeeded *Conrade* on the throne of *Jerusalem*. He gave his kingdom of *Cyprus* to *Guy de Lusignan*; and concluded a truce for three years with *Saladine*.

Q. By whom was *Conrade* murdered?

A. By

*A.* By the emissaries of a *Saracen* prince, commonly called *The Scheic*, or *The Old Man of the Mountain*, who had inspired his fanatical subjects with such a devoted submission to his will, that they courted danger, and even certain death, in the execution of his orders. His people went by the name of *Assassins*, whence the word has been transferred into most modern languages, to signify a murderer. This is the method, which he always took to revenge himself of his enemies.

*Q.* Did *Richard* return to his kingdom in safety?

*A.* No; for being cast away on the coast of *Istria*, intending to travel, in a pilgrim's disguise, through *Germany*, he fell into the hands of *Leopold*, duke of *Austria*, whom he had affronted at the siege of *Acon*.

*Q.* What treatment did he meet with from *Leopold*?

*A.* He was kept, for some time, a close prisoner, and then delivered to the emperor, *Henry VI.* his inveterate enemy, who not only threw him into a dungeon, but loaded him with irons.

*Q.* What did *Philip* do, upon his return to his kingdom?

*A.* He entered into a league with *Richard's* brother, *John*, a most vicious and abandoned prince, and endeavoured to set him on the throne of *England*; and when *Richard* was seized in *Germany*, these confederates, in order to forward their scheme, went so far as to affirm, that the king of *England* was actually dead.

*Q.* Did they succeed in their endeavours?

*A.* No; for *Richard* having recovered his liberty, upon paying a ransom of 100,000 marks (about 200,000 pounds of our present money) returned to *England*, and effectually disconcerted all their projects. *Philip* was then so sensible of the utter impossibility of accomplishing his design, that he wrote to prince *John* in the following terms: *Take care of yourself; the devil is broke loose.*

*Q.* When did *Richard* arrive in *England*?

*A.* On the 13th of *March*, 1194, after having been absent from it four years; fifteen months of which he had passed in prison. Immediately upon his arrival, he was crowned again at *Winchester*, with a view, as was supposed, of wiping off the disgrace of his captivity.

Q. Was not he reconciled to his brother *John*?

A. Yes, by the intercession of his mother, queen *Eleanor*.

Q. Did not he likewise conclude a truce with *France*?

A. He did; at first, for one year, and afterwards for five: but the terms, on both sides, were so ill observed, that the war, in all likelihood, would have soon broke out afresh, had not *Richard* been suddenly cut off.

Q. In what manner?

A. Having laid siege to the castle of *Cbalus*, in order to compel the viscount *Limoges* to deliver to him a considerable treasure, which that nobleman had found in his grounds, and which *Richard* claimed as superior lord of the country; he one day ventured to approach the place the better to survey it, when one *Bertram de Gourdon*, an archer, took an aim at him, and pierced him in the shoulder with an arrow; of which wound he died, on the 6th of *April*, 1199, in the forty-second year of his age, and the tenth of his reign.

Q. What is the character of *Richard*?

A. He was a prince of such distinguished valour, as justly to have merited the surname of *Cœur de Lion*, or *Lion-bearded*: all *Europe* and *Asia* resounded with his fame; and the *Saracens*, in particular, had conceived such an idea of his military prowess, that they were wont to still their children with the terror of his name. This good quality, however, was more than counterbalanced by his many vices: he was haughty, cruel, ambitious, revengeful, and domineering; and was thus better fitted to dazzle men by the splendor of his actions, than either to promote their happiness, or his own glory, by a just and equal administration of government.

Q. Did he leave any children?

A. Only one natural son, named *Philip*, to whom he bequeathed the lordship of *Cognac* in *Guienne*. *Richard* was the first king of *England*, who took three lions passant for his arms, in which he has been imitated by all his successors.

Q. Did not some disturbances happen in *London*, during this reign?

A. Yes; an insurrection was raised in it by one *William Fitz-Csbert*, commonly called *Longbeard*, a lawyer, who had rendered himself extremely popular with the lower rank of citizens;



citizens; but this ruffian, after having been guilty of many enormities, such as murdering the inhabitants, and breaking open and plundering their houses, was at last seized and hanged, together with nine of his accomplices. In this reign, the citizens of *London* are said to have been first divided into different corporations, or societies; or, as they are termed, companies.

## C H A P. XXV.

JOHN, surnamed *Lack-land*, XXVI<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1199 to 1216.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>French emperors of Constant.</i>	
INNOCENT III.	1198	BALDWIN I.	1204
HONORIUS III.	1215	HENRY I.	1206
		<i>King of France.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		PHILIP II.	1180
ALEXIS III.	1195	<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
ALEXIS IV.	1203	CANUTE VI.	1182
ALEXIS V.	1204	VALDEMAR II.	1203
THEODORE I.	1204	<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
		SANCHO I.	1185
<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		ALONSO II.	1212
PHILIP I.	1197	<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
OTHO IV.	1208	WILLIAM.	1165
FREDERIC II.	1212	ALEXANDER II.	1214

Q. WHO succeeded *Richard I.*?

A. His brother, *John*, surnamed *Sans-terre*, or *Lack-land*.

Q. Was he lawful heir to the crown?

A. No; *Arthur*, duke of *Brittany*, son to *Geoffrey*, *John's* elder brother, had a preferable title; and *Richard* had even, when he set out for the holy land, declared this prince his successor on the throne; but he had afterwards thought proper, either on account of the tender years of

*Arthur*, or for some other reason, to alter this will, and to appoint his brother, *John*, heir to all his dominions.

Q. By whose interest was *John* enabled to support the destination, which his brother had made in his favour?

A. By that of his mother, queen *Eleanor*; *William Marechal*, chief justiciary; and *Hubert*, archbishop of *Canterbury*; by which last, he was solemnly crowned at *Westminster*, on the 28th of *May*, 1199.

Q. Did no body espouse the cause of prince *Arthur*?

A. *Philip*, king of *France*, took him under his protection, and endeavoured to make him master of the foreign dominions of *England*; but *Constance*, his mother, having carried him off from the *French* court, a peace was concluded between *Philip* and *John*, on condition that the former should abandon the cause of *Arthur*, and restore all the places he had taken from the *English*; and that the latter, on his part, should not assist the emperor, *Otto*, in his wars against *France*.

Q. Did not the war soon break out afresh?

A. Yes; for *John* having divorced his wife, *Avisa*, daughter to the earl of *Gloucester*, and persuaded the count of *Angoulesme* to give him in marriage his daughter, *Isabella*, who had been betrothed to *Hugh*, count de la *Marche*; this last nobleman was so enraged at the injury, that, in conjunction with *Philip*, he prevailed on the barons of *Poitou*, to rise in arms.

Q. What was the result of this second war?

A. *Philip* summoned *John* to appear before his parliament, and answer there for his violent proceedings; and *John* refusing to obey his orders, *Philip* entered *Normandy* with a numerous army. In the mean time, he bestowed his daughter, *Mary*, upon prince *Arthur*, whom he sent with a strong body of troops to make a diversion in *Poitou*.

Q. How did *Arthur* conduct this enterprize?

A. Hearing that his grandmother, queen *Eleanor*, who had always been his enemy, had taken refuge in the castle of *Mirabel*, he laid siege to that place, and while he was carrying it on, he was suddenly surprized by his uncle, king *John*, who carried him prisoner to *Rouen*, and having put him to death with his own hands, threw his body into the *Seine*.

Q. Was

Q. Was not this murder severely punished?

A. The whole world was struck with horror at the barbarous deed; and the *Bretons*, in particular, complained to *Philip*, as their liege lord, and demanded justice for the inhuman violence. *Philip* summoned *John* to stand trial before him; and, upon his non-appearance, passed sentence upon him; declared him guilty of felony and parricide; and adjudged him to forfeit to his superior lord, all his feignories and fiefs in *France*. In order the more effectually to execute this sentence, he entered his territories with a numerous army, and conquered *Anjou*, *Touraine*, *Main*, and *Poitou*; and finally re-united to the crown of *France* the whole province of *Normandy*, two hundred and ninety-four years after it had been separated from it, by *Charles the Simple*, who gave it to *Rollo* the Dane. This event happened in 1205.

Q. Did not *John* endeavour to preserve his dominions?

A. He made some weak attempts for this purpose; but his measures were so ill concerted, and so feebly executed, that they all ended in his own disgrace and overthrow.

Q. Was not *John* engaged in a quarrel with the pope?

A. Yes, and one that gave him infinite uneasiness.

Q. Pray mention the most remarkable particulars.

A. Upon the death of *Hubert*, archbishop of *Canterbury*, some of the younger monks of *Christ-church* in that city, without the knowledge of the elder monks, or the consent of the king, secretly chose *Reginald*, their sub-prior, to succeed him; but the king, being offended at this invasion of his prerogative, peremptorily commanded them to desist from the election, and strongly recommended to them *John de Gray*, bishop of *Norwich*, who was accordingly chosen by all the monks, and seated on the archiepiscopal throne.

Q. Did the new archbishop meet with no opposition?

A. Yes, from the suffragan bishops of *Canterbury*, who had always had a right of concurring in the election; and who, not having been consulted upon this occasion, sent an agent to *Rome*, to maintain their cause before his holiness. The king too, and the convent of *Christ-church*, dispatched twelve monks of that order, to support their election before the same tribunal.

Q. What decision did the pope give?

*A.* He not only refused to confirm either election, but compelled the monks, who had arrived in *Rome*, to elect to the see of *Canterbury*, cardinal *Langton*, an *Englishman* by birth, but bred in *France*, and a doctor of the university of *Paris*.

Q. What did king *John* do, upon receiving the news of these proceedings?

*A.* He protested against the election that had been made at *Rome*, and expelled the monks of *Christ-church* from their monastery; upon which, his whole kingdom was laid under an interdict: a circumstance which exasperated that headstrong monarch to such a degree, that he banished all the clergy who complied with the interdict, treated the adherents of *Langton* with the utmost severity, and even threatened to cut off all correspondence with the *Roman* pontiff.

Q. Was the pope intimidated by these menaces?

*A.* No; he excommunicated king *John*, and all who should presume to have any commerce with him; absolved his subjects from their oath of allegiance; solemnly deposed him from his throne; gave his dominions to *Philip*, king of *France*; and granted indulgences to every one who should declare war against him.

Q. What was the result of this controversy?

*A.* After a long and violent struggle, *John* was obliged to yield to the superior power of his holiness, and even to submit to the mortifying condition of acknowledging himself a vassal of the *Roman* see; and, in token of his submission, he took his crown from his head, and laid it at the feet of *Pandolph*, the pope's legate, who was pleased to restore it to him. He further engaged, that he should pay an annual tribute, of a thousand marks, to the see of *Rome*; and that, if any of his successors should endeavour to revoke, or infringe this agreement, they should, from that moment, forfeit all right to the crown.

Q. Might not *John* have made a vigorous opposition?

*A.* Yes, and perhaps finally have prevailed in the contest, had he been possessed of the affections of his subjects; but he had rendered himself, by his numerous vices, so odious to his people, that they were glad to see him reduced to the lowest ebb of misery.

Q. Did





*King John signing Magna Charta.*

Q. Did the king of *France* accept the offer, which the pope had made him of the kingdom of *England*?

A. Yes, and was preparing for an invasion of that country, when he heard of the accommodation between king *John* and the pope.

Q. Did this put a stop to his intended expedition?

A. No; he was determined to execute the enterprize, notwithstanding the prohibition of his holiness, and was just upon the point of embarking his troops, when the defeat of his fleet by the earl of *Salisbury*, the *English* admiral, effectually disappointed his ambitious views.

Q. Was not king *John* elated with this victory?

A. So much, that he went over to the continent, with a view of recovering his foreign dominions; but after a few feeble efforts for that purpose, he was obliged, on the approach of a *French* army, to abandon the design.

Q. Did he enjoy tranquillity during the remainder of his reign?

A. No: he was engaged in a fierce contest with his barons, which, however detrimental to himself, was extremely advantageous to his subjects.

Q. What gave occasion to this dispute?

A. The barons, enraged at *John's* tyranny, required him to restore the laws of king *Edward*, and renew the charter of *Henry* 1.; and upon his refusal, they assembled their forces, and bestowed the command of them upon *Robert Fitz-walter*, whom they stiled, *Mareschal of the army of God and of Holy Church*. They then proceeded to *London*, where they were received with open arms; and having compelled those barons, who adhered to *John*, to come over to their party, they reduced that prince to such extremity, that he was obliged to grant them the two famous charters, commonly called the *Magna Charta*, or *Great Charter*, and the *Charta de Foresta*, or *Charter of Forests*; which have ever since been considered as the chief foundation of the *English* constitution.

Q. Did not *John* endeavour to revoke these grants?

A. Yes; and for this purpose, he levied an army of *Brabançons*, or foreign banditti, with which he over-ran and laid waste the whole kingdom; and the barons were so incensed at these cruel outrages, that they were tempted to

have recourse to the dangerous expedient of inviting over *Lewis*, son to the king of *France*, upon whom they proposed to bestow the crown of *England*.

Q. Did *Lewis* accept the invitation?

A. He landed at *Sandwich*, on the 21st day of *May*, 1216; and being presently joined by several of the *English* nobility, he soon made himself master of the greatest part of the kingdom.

Q. What was the result of these hostilities?

A. *John* was reduced to the very brink of ruin, and seemed just upon the point of being deprived of his crown, when grief for the loss of his baggage, which was swallowed up in the washes of *Lincolnshire*, threw him into a fever, which put a period to his life. He died at *Newark*, on the 19th of *October*, 1216, in the fifty-first year of his age, and the eighteenth of his reign.

Q. What is the character of *John*?

A. It seems to have been a compound of every vice that can disgrace human nature, with hardly a single virtue, or good quality, to throw into the opposite scale; though his conduct, odious and detestable as it was, procured to the people the most important advantages; his tyranny first prompted the barons to assert, and his sloth and cowardice afterwards enabled them to obtain, those inestimable rights and privileges, which now form the basis of the *English* constitution, and distinguish the people of *Great Britain* above every other nation on the face of the earth.

Q. Had he any children?

A. By his first wife, *Aviza*, heiress of the house of *Gloucester*, he had none; but by his second wife, *Isabella*, daughter to *Aymar*, count of *Angouleme*, he had two sons, viz. *Henry*, his successor; and *Richard*, earl of *Cornwall*, and king of the *Romans*: and three daughters, namely, *Jane*, wife to *Alexander II.* king of *Scots*; *Eleanor*, married first to *William Marechal*, earl of *Pembroke*, and afterwards to *Simon de Montfort*, earl of *Leicester*; and *Isabella*, consort to the emperor, *Frederic II.* He had also ten natural children; but none of them were any wise distinguished.

Q. Had *John* no disputes with his other neighbours?

A. He obliged the king of *Scotland*, and the prince of *Wales*, to do him homage. He took prisoner the king of *Connaught*,



*Connaught*, an *Irish* prince, who had rebelled; and he reduced to his obedience the greatest part of that kingdom.

Q. What were the most remarkable events, that happened in the other countries of *Europe*, during his reign?

A. The taking of *Constantinople* by the *French* and *Venetians*, in 1204; and the crusade against the *Albigenses*, a species of sectaries in the south of *France*, who were entirely exterminated. This crusade is said to have given rise to the *bloody inquisition*.

## C H A P. XXVI.

H E N R Y III. *surnamed of Winchester*, XXVII<sup>th</sup>  
King of England.

From the Year 1216 to 1272.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of France.</i>	
HONORIUS III.	1215	PHILIP II.	1180
GREGORY IX.	1227	LEWIS VIII.	1223
CELESTIN IV.	1241	S. LEWIS IX.	1226
INNOCENT IV.	1243	PHILIP III.	1270
ALEXANDER IV.	1254	<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
URBAN IV.	1261	VALDEMAR II.	1203
CLEMENT IV.	1265	ERIC V.	1240
GREGORY X.	1271	ABEL	1250
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		CHRISTOPHER I.	1252
THEODORE I.	1204	ERIC VII.	1259
JOHN III.	1222	<i>* King of Sweden.</i>	
THEODORE II.	1225	VALDEMAR.	1251
JOHN IV.	1259	<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
MICHAEL VIII.	1259	ALONSO II.	1212
<i>Emperor of the West.</i>		SANCHO II.	1223
FREDERIC II.	1212	ALONSO III.	1248
<i>French emperors of Constant.</i>		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
HENRY I.	1206	ALEXANDER II.	1214
PETER II.	1217	ALEXANDER III.	1249
ROBERT DE COUR	1221		
BALDWIN II.	1237		

Q. WHAT did the *English* do upon the death of king *John*?

\* The observation, which we made with regard to the history of *Denmark* (see note p. 81) is still more applicable to that of *Sweden*.

A. They

*A.* They immediately divided into two parties; one of which adhered to the cause of *Lewis*; the other to that of *Henry*, eldest son to the late king.

Q. Which of these parties prevailed in the contest?

*A.* That which declared in favour of prince *Henry*.

Q. How were they able to gain the superiority?

*A.* Partly by the interest of *William Marechal*, earl of *Pembroke*, who drew over to prince *Henry's* side a great many barons of the *French* faction; partly by the influence of *Gualo*, the pope's legate, who excommunicated *Lewis*, and all his adherents.

Q. When was the young prince crowned?

*A.* On the 28th of *October*, 1216, by the name of *Henry III.* and as he was yet a minor, (being only in the tenth year of his age) the earl of *Pembroke* was appointed regent, or guardian of the kingdom.

Q. What did this nobleman do, in order to encrease the popularity of the king?

*A.* He made him confirm the two charters, and even grant the people some additional privileges.

Q. Did not *Lewis* endeavour to preserve the footing he had gained in the kingdom?

*A.* Yes; and for that purpose, brought over some supplies of men and money from *France*: but his general, the count *de Perche*, having been defeated and killed by the earl of *Pembroke*, in the great battle of *Lincoln*, which was fought on the 19th of *May*, 1217; and the succours sent him by his consort, *Blanche* of *Castile*, having been attacked and repulsed by the fleet of the cinque ports, on the 24th day of *August*, of the same year; *Lewis* was obliged to agree to a treaty, by which he renounced all pretensions to the crown of *England*; and he and his foreign troops immediately left the kingdom.

Q. How long did the earl of *Pembroke* govern the kingdom?

*A.* Till his death, which happened in 1219.

Q. Who succeeded him the regency?

*A.* *Peter de Roches*, bishop of *Winchester*, a *Poitevin*, and *Hubert de Burgh*, who, during the late reign, had defended *Dover* against all the attempts of *Lewis* and his party. This last nobleman was, at the same time, created chief-justiciary of *England*.

Q. How

Q. How did these two ministers behave in their high office?

A. They acted, at first, with great unanimity; but, at last, a jealousy broke out between them, while each of them endeavoured to engross to himself the favour of the king; which, after a short struggle, was gained by *Hubert de Burgh*, who, in the year 1226, procured a bull from the pope, declaring *Henry* to be of full age, in consequence of which, the bishop was dismissed from his office.

Q. What use did *Hubert* make of his great credit?

A. He employed it, in some things, for the interest of the king, and that of the people; but, in many, he abused it to the prejudice of both.

Q. What instances can you give of the former?

A. He restrained the licentiousness of the turbulent barons, and preserved order and good government in the kingdom.

Q. What examples can you produce of the latter?

A. He punished some rioters by martial law, which was considered as a violation of the great charter.

Q. Did not the king, about this time, undertake an expedition to *France*?

A. Yes, whither he had been invited by the male-contents of that kingdom; but he returned, soon after, without performing any action of importance.

Q. Did not the barons form a combination against *Hubert de Burgh*?

A. Yes, and succeeded so far, that that nobleman, who had been created earl of *Kent*, and married a daughter of the *Scottish* king, was banished from court; and the bishop of *Winchester* restored to the administration.

Q. Did the conduct of this prelate answer the expectations of the public?

A. No: for being a foreigner himself, he bestowed places of trust and profit upon none but foreigners; a circumstance, which enraged the *English* to such a degree, that they rose in arms, under the earl of *Pembroke*, and would probably have compelled the king to dismiss his foreign ministers, had not *de Roches* found means to sow jealousy among the male-contents, and thereby to disconcert their measures. He even suborned some assassins, who murdered the earl of *Pembroke* in *Ireland*. Nevertheless, this odious minister

was,

was, at last, disgraced, at the instigation of the archbishop of *Canterbury*; and he, and all his associates, were banished from court.

Q. Did the removal of this minister free the *English* from the dominion of foreigners?

A. No; for *Henry* having, in 1236, married *Eleanor*, daughter to *Raymond*, count of *Provence*, his court was filled with a fresh swarm of foreigners. His mother too had, upon the death of her husband, espoused *Hugh*, count of *la Marche*, to whom she had been originally betrothed; and, in consequence of this alliance, great numbers of adventurers came over to *England* from that country: and as the king, who was of an easy temper, was entirely governed by those about him, he conferred every office, in church and state, upon these new favourites.

Q. Were not the *English* provoked at this partiality to foreigners?

A. So much, that they formed a confederacy against the king and his ministers, and chose for their general, *Simon de Montfort*, earl of *Leicester*.

Q. What success did the confederates meet with?

A. They obliged the king to agree to certain articles, intitled, *The Statutes or Provisions of Oxford*; by which the sovereign authority was lodged in the hands of twenty-four commissioners, called *conservators*, twelve of whom were nominated by the king, and twelve by the parliament.

Q. Was this accommodation lasting?

A. No: a fresh quarrel soon broke out between the two parties, upon which they agreed to refer their dispute to *Lewis*, king of *France*; but not being satisfied with his decision, they had recourse to arms, and coming to an engagement at *Lewes*, on the 14th of *May*, 1264, the barons obtained a complete victory; having taken the king himself, his son, prince *Edward*, his brother *Richard*, earl of *Cornwall*, and his nephew, *Henry d'Almain*, prisoners.

Q. How did the earl of *Leicester* dispose of these illustrious captives?

A. He confined the two princes, *Edward* and *Henry*, in *Dover castle*, and committed the king of the *Romans* to the tower of *London*; but himself kept king *Henry*, and carry-

ing

ing him about with him through all parts of the kingdom, made use of his authority to get into his possession, such towns and fortresses as had hitherto adhered to the royal cause.

Q. How did *Leicester* employ his great power?

A. In some things he abused it in the most scandalous manner; but he was the author of one regulation, which, notwithstanding his numerous failings, must endear his memory to every sincere lover of his country.

Q. What was that?

A. He ordered *two knights* to be returned for every *shire*, or *county*, in the kingdom, and *one or two burgessees* for every *burgh*, to represent the body of the people in parliament; and this institution (as we have before observed) is generally regarded as the true origin of *The House of Commons*. This happened in 1265, being the forty-ninth year of the present reign.

Q. How long did *Leicester* enjoy his authority?

A. About fifteen months; at the end of which, prince *Edward* escaped from prison, and assembling a body of forces, attacked *Leicester* in the neighbourhood of *Evesham*, on the 4th day of *August*, 1265, when the earl lost, at once, both the battle and his life; as did also *Henry*, his eldest son.

Q. What was the consequence of this victory?

A. All the royalists were restored to liberty, and the king re-established in the possession of his throne.

Q. Did none of the confederates make any farther resistance?

A. *Simon*, second son of the earl of *Leicester*, held out, for some time, in the island of *Axholm*; but was, at last, obliged to submit. *Adam de Gourdon* too, a courageous baron, maintained himself, for some months, in the forests of *Hampshire*; but being attacked by prince *Edward*, who engaged him in single combat, he was wounded and taken prisoner, and was not only indulged with his life and liberty, but even admitted into the prince's service.

Q. Did not the earl of *Gloucester* raise another insurrection?

A. Yes; he instigated the populace of *London* to take up arms; and prince *Edward* was obliged to collect an army  
of

of 30,000 men, in order to suppress them; but this seems to have been done without any great effusion of blood on either side.

Q. Was Henry's reign distinguished by no other remarkable events?

A. None of any great importance. The pope, indeed, made a tender of the kingdom of *Sicily* (of which he pretended to be the superior lord) to *Edmund*, earl of *Lancaster*, Henry's second son, provided that prince would take the trouble of conquering it; and *Henry* was so foolish, as to accept the offer: but his barons refusing to assist him in the enterprize, he was finally obliged to abandon the project. His brother also, *Richard*, earl of *Cornwall*, was elected king of the *Romans*; but not being possessed of any personal, or family interest in *Germany*, he never attained to the dignity of emperor.

Q. When did Henry die?

A. On the 16th of *November*, 1272, in the sixty-sixth year of his age, and the fifty-sixth of his reign. He was interred before the high-altar in *Westminster abbey*.

Q. Had he any children?

A. By his queen, *Eleanor of Provence*, he had nine children, five of whom died in their infancy; but four of them survived him, viz. *Edward*, who succeeded him on the throne; *Edmund*, earl of *Lancaster*; *Margaret*, married to *Alexander III.* king of *Scots*; and *Beatrix*, wife to *John de Dreux*, duke of *Brittany*.

Q. What is the character of Henry III.?

A. He was certainly a prince of very mean abilities, a slave to his passions, devoted to favourites, fickle, capricious, and violent in his temper; and to these causes, rather than to his arbitrary principles, ought to be ascribed all the disturbances that happened in his reign. Greedy of money, but profuse in his expences, he was perpetually employed in pillaging his subjects, or lavishing his wealth upon worthless minions. Gentle, however, and merciful in his disposition, he was never guilty of any act of cruelty; but contented himself with punishing the rebels in their effects, when he might justly have deluged the scaffold with their blood.

Q. Were not the Jews greatly oppressed in this reign?

A. Yes,

*A.* Yes, as well as during several of the preceding, and many of those which followed ?

*Q.* What kind of hardships did they suffer ?

*A.* The king demanded of them whatever sums of money he pleased ; and, on their refusal, he punished them in the most arbitrary manner.

*Q.* What kind of punishments did he inflict upon them ?

*A.* I shall only mention one particular, as it may serve to give us some idea of the manners of the age. King *John*, the father of *Henry*, demanded 10,000 marks from a *Jew of Bristol* ; and, on his refusal, ordered one of his teeth to be drawn every day, till he should consent. The *Jew* lost seven teeth ; and then paid the sum required of him.

*Q.* Can you give no other instance of the rudeness and barbarity of the age ?

*A.* Historians tell us, that, in the reign of *Henry II.* *Thomas a Becket*, the chancellor, lived with greater splendor and magnificence, than any subject in *England* had ever done before ; and, as a proof of this, they add, that his apartments in winter were, every day, covered with clean straw or hay, and in summer, with green rushes or boughs, lest the gentlemen, who paid their court to him, and could not, by reason of their great number, find a place at table, should soil their fine cloaths by sitting on a dirty floor.

## C H A P. XXVII.

EDWARD I. *surnamed Long-shanks*, XXVIII<sup>th</sup>  
King of England.

From 1272 to 1307.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of France.</i>	
GREGORY X.	1271	PHILIP III.	1270
INNOCENT V.	1276	PHILIP IV.	1285
ADRIAN V.	1276		
JOHN XXI.	1276	<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
NICHOLAS III.	1277	ERIC VII.	1259
MARTIN IV.	1281	ERIC VIII.	1286
HONORIUS IV.	1285		
NICHOLAS IV.	1288	<i>Kings of Sweden.</i>	
CELESTIN V.	1294	VALDEMAR	1251
BONIFACE VIII.	1294	MAGNUS LADIS. I.	1277
BENEDICT IX.	1303	BIRGER	1290
CLEMENT. V.	1305		
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
MICHAEL VIII.	1259	ALONSO III.	1248
ANDRONICUS II.	1283	DENIS	1279
<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
FREDERIC II.*	1212	ALEXANDER III.	1249
RODOLPHUS	1273	JOHN BALIOL	1293
ADOLPH. of Nassau	1291	ROBERT BRUCE	1306
ALBERT I.	1298		

2. WHO succeeded Henry III.?

A. Edward I. *surnamed Long-shanks*, his eldest son.

2. Where was this prince, at the time of his father's decease?

\* After the death of *Frederic*, there was an interregnum in the empire till *Rodolphus*; during which, the following princes either reigned, or were elected, viz. *Conrad III.* *William*, earl of *Holland*; *Richard*, earl of *Coenwall* (this king's uncle); *Edward IV.*; and *A'phonso*, king of *Castile*.



*A.* On his return from *Palestine*, whither he had gone in 1200, with *Lewis*, king of *France*.

Q Did he perform any remarkable actions in that part of the world?

*A.* Though he had but a small army, he defeated the *Saracens* in several battles, and struck such a terror into them, that they employed an assassin to deprive him of his life.

Q How did the ruffian execute his enterprize?

*A.* Having procured admittance to the prince, under pretence of carrying on a negotiation, he took an opportunity, when there was nobody in the room, but *Edward* and himself, to aim a dagger at his breast. *Edward*, however, warded off the stroke, though in so doing, he was wounded in the arm; and perceiving the infidel about to repeat his blow, he struck him on the breast so forcibly with his foot, that he threw him to the ground; and then wresting the dagger from his hand, he instantly plunged it in the barbarian's heart.

Q Did not *Edward* take vengeance on the *Saracens* for this base attempt?

*A.* No: the soldan of *Babylon* protested his innocence in the most solemn manner, and *Edward* was pleased to admit his apology. Soon after, he concluded a truce with that monarch, and then set out on his return for *England*.

Q Where was he, when he received the news of his father's death?

*A.* At *Messina* in *Sicily*, from whence he repaired to *France*; did homage to *Philip* for *Guienne*; and having settled the affairs of that province, came over to *England*, where he was crowned at *Westminster*, on the 19th of *August*, 1274; *Alexander III.* king of *Scots*, *John*, duke of *Bretagne*, and the wives of these two princes, *Edward's* sisters, being present at the solemnity. It is said, that in order to add to the grandeur of the ceremony, five hundred horses were turned loose, with liberty to every one to keep as many of them as he could catch.

Q What were the first acts of *Edward's* government?

*A.* He applied himself, with equal diligence and success, to the reformation of those abuses, which had taken place during the reign of his father. And as the adulteration of

the coin was one of the principal evils complained of, and the *Jews* were chiefly suspected of that crime, no less than two hundred and eighty of these people were hanged at once for this enormity in *London*, besides those who suffered in other parts of the kingdom. He likewise appointed a commission, to enquire into the encroachments on the royal forests, and even into the validity of the titles, by which the barons held their estates; but this last measure he was soon obliged to drop.

Q. In what manner?

A. Earl *Warrenne*, who, during the preceding reign, had performed the most important services to the crown, being required to show his titles, drew his sword, and said, that was his title; adding, that *William*, the *Norman*, did not conquer *England* for himself alone; his ancestor was a joint adventurer in the cause; and he himself was determined to maintain what had, from that period, remained unquestioned in his family.

Q. What were the first military exploits of *Edward*?

A. *Llewellyn*, prince of *Wales*, having refused to assist at his coronation, or even to do homage for his principality; *Edward* marched against him at the head of a numerous army; and having cooped him up in a narrow corner, reduced him to such extremity, that he obliged him to agree to whatever terms he thought proper to impose.

Q. What were these?

A. That *Llewellyn* should pay to *Edward* 50,000*l.* as a reparation of damages; should do homage to him for his principality; permit all the barons of *Wales*, except four about *Snowdon*, to swear fealty in the same manner; and should relinquish the country between *Cheshire* and the river *Conway*.

Q. Did the prince of *Wales* observe this treaty?

A. No: provoked at some personal insults, which he had received from *Edward*; enraged likewise at the many hostilities, which the lords marchers (as they were called) had committed upon the *Welsh* borders; and being further instigated by the suggestions of his brother *David*, who exhorted him to recover his ancient independance; *Llewellyn* was tempted to take up arms: but being defeated and slain by *Mortimer*, one of the lords marchers, his head was cut off,

off, and fixed on the tower of *London*. His brother *David*, too, who succeeded him in the principality, being taken prisoner, was brought to a formal trial before all the peers of *England*, and was hanged, drawn, and quartered, as a traitor; though guilty of no other crime, than that of defending by arms the liberty of his native country, together with his own hereditary authority.

Q. Did the *Welsh* make any further resistance?

A. No: they, all of them, submitted to the arms of *Edward*; and thus was *Wales*, after a struggle of eight hundred years (for it had never been conquered by the *Saxons*) finally subjected to the crown of *England*.

Q. Did not *Edward* employ a stratagem to reconcile the *Welsh* to the *English* government?

A. Yes; by presenting to them his infant son, *Edward*, who was born at *Caernarvon*, as a *Welshman* by birth, and one who could speak no other language. This *Edward* was the first prince of *Wales*, and the eldest sons of the kings of *England* have, ever since, borne that title.

Q. Was not *Edward* engaged in a war with the *Scots*?

A. Yes, and one that laid the foundation of that violent animosity, which long prevailed between the two nations.

Q. What gave occasion to this war?

A. The attempt which *Edward* made, first to acquire a superiority over *Scotland*, and afterwards entirely to subdue it.

Q. What prompted him to make this attempt?

A. The reference made to him by the competitors for the crown of *Scotland*.

Q. In what manner?

A. *Alexander III.* king of *Scots*, had, by his wife, *Edward's* sister, an only daughter, called *Margaret*, married to *Eric*, king of *Norway*, to whom she bore a daughter of the same name with herself; and soon after died. *Alexander* being, about this period, killed by a fall from his horse, was succeeded by his grand daughter, *Margaret of Norway*, who, at the same time, was affianced to the young prince of *Wales*; by which marriage, had it taken effect, the crowns of *England* and *Scotland* would have been united; but the princess dying in her passage from *Norway*, the throne of *Scotland* thereby became vacant.

Q. Who laid claim to it?

A. No less than twelve persons; but the two, whose pretensions seemed to be the best founded, were *John Baliol* and *Robert Bruce*, both of them sprung from the royal family of *Scotland*.

Q. How nearly were they related to it?

A. It is to be observed, that the posterity of *William*, king of *Scotland*, the prince who was taken prisoner by *Henry II.* being all extinct by the death of *Margaret* of *Norway*; the right of the crown was devolved on the line of *David*, earl of *Huntington*, brother to *William*, whose male line being also extinct, left the succession open to the posterity of his daughters, who were three in number. *Baliol* was grandson of the eldest of these daughters; *Bruce* was the son of the second: so that *Baliol* was related to the royal family in the third degree, but sprung from an elder branch; *Bruce* was related to it in the second degree, but sprung from a younger.

Q. In whose favour did *Edward* give sentence?

A. In that of *Baliol* (who was undoubtedly the true heir of the crown) but not till he had required from him, as well as from the other competitors, a solemn acknowledgment of his superiority over *Scotland*.

Q. Did they comply with his request?

A. Yes; their desire to obtain the crown was so great, that they were willing, for the sake of it, to submit to any conditions. Accordingly, *Baliol* was no sooner crowned, than he did homage to *Edward* for his kingdom.

Q. Was *Edward* satisfied with the advantage he had gained?

A. No; as he was determined to make a conquest of *Scotland*, he seized every opportunity to provoke *Baliol*, with a view, if possible, to engage him in rebellion; and, if he could draw him into this snare, to forfeit his dominions as the punishment of his treason.

Q. Did the steps he took for this purpose, produce the desired effect?

A. Yes, and the more easily, as *Baliol* was ashamed of the concession he had made, and found that he had rendered himself odious to his subjects for destroying the ancient independence of their kingdom.

Q. What

Q. What success did *Baliol* meet with in shaking off the yoke he had imposed upon himself?

A. Very bad; for being deserted by *Robert Bruce*, and others of his nobility; being defeated by the *English* general, *Warrenne*, in a pitched battle, where he is said to have lost about 20,000 men; and the greatest part of his kingdom being subdued by *Edward*; *Baliol* was obliged to submit at discretion, and to resign his crown to the *English* monarch, with liberty to dispose of it as he should think proper.

Q. How did *Edward* act upon this occasion?

A. He committed *Baliol* to the *Tower of London*, where he remained a prisoner till the year 1299, when he consented to go into a voluntary exile, and died abroad in a private station. At the same time *Edward* caused the crown and sceptre of *Scotland*, together with the famous stone at *Stone* (which the *Scots* regarded as the palladium of their monarchy) to be carried to *London*; and having reduced that kingdom to the form of an *English* province, and entrusted the government of it to earl *Warrenne*, he returned into *England* with his victorious army.

Q. Did *Scotland* long continue in this state of subjection?

A. No; the people being exasperated at the cruelties and extortions of *Ormesby*, the justiciary, and *Cressingham*, the treasurer, became soon every where ripe for a revolt; nor was it long before a proper leader presented himself to them.

Q. Who was this?

A. One *William Wallace*, a gentleman of small fortune, in the western part of *Scotland*, a person of gigantic stature, incredible strength, and invincible fortitude; who having collected a good body of forces, defeated the *English* in several skirmishes, expelled them from most of the strongholds of the kingdom, routed, in the neighbourhood of *Stirling*, earl *Warrenne*, though at the head of an army of 40,000 men; and having almost cleared the country of the enemy, he even ventured to make an inroad into *England*. His followers, charmed with the gallantry of his conduct, unanimously declared him regent of the kingdom.

Q. How long did he enjoy this authority?

A. But a very short time; for the nobility being jealous

of his growing fame, and disdainng to serve under a private gentleman, *Wallace* voluntarily resigned his command, which was bestowed upon *John Cummin*, and the steward of *Scotland*.

Q. How did these noblemen discharge their important trust?

A. Very unsuccessfully; for being defeated in a great battle, fought at *Falkirk*, where they are said to have lost about 12,000 men, *Edward* recovered all the fortresses which *Wallace* had seized, and reduced *Scotland* to such a low condition, as he thought would disable it from revolting for the future. In this battle *Wallace* was the only person that discovered the least military skill, or conduct; he kept together the body of troops which he commanded; and he retired with them, after the action, without being pursued by the *English*.

Q. Did the *Scots* continue long in tranquility?

A. No; being rather exasperated than subdued by their late misfortunes, they resolved to make one effort more for the recovery of their liberty. With this view they chose *John Cummin* for their regent; and that nobleman, having assembled an army, and being assisted by *sir Simon Frazer*, a northern chieftain, obtained no less than three victories in one day over the *English* general.

Q. What did *Edward*, when he heard of these proceedings?

A. He marched into *Scotland* with such a formidable army that the inhabitants were afraid to make the least resistance; and he thus proceeded, without interruption, from one end of the kingdom to the other, receiving every where the submission of the people.

Q. What became of the brave *Wallace*?

A. He was basely betrayed by his friend *Monteith*, into the hands of *Edward*, who caused him to be carried up in chains to *London*, to be tried as a rebel and traitor, though he had never sworn fealty to *England*; and to be hanged, drawn, and quartered on *Tower-hill*.

Q. Did the death of this chieftain put an end to the war?

A. No: *Robert Bruce*, son to the nobleman of the same name, who had stood candidate for the crown, determined

to undertake the delivery of his country. For this purpose he entered into a correspondence with *Cummin*, the regent, who, as he had some pretensions to the crown, and wanted to ingratiate himself with the *English* monarch, revealed the whole secret to *Edward*; and *Bruce*, who was then at *London*, was just upon the point of being arrested, when hearing of his danger from a friend at court, he instantly departed, and arriving in his own country, expostulated with *Cummin* upon his perfidious conduct; but receiving no satisfactory answer from that nobleman, he stabbed him with his own hand; and was himself, soon after, solemnly crowned at *Scone*, by the bishop of *St. Andrews*.

Q. Was he able to maintain himself in that high station?

A. Not for some time; for being defeated by the Earl of *Pembroke*, and dispossessed of all his fortresses; and seeing his relations persecuted, his wife and sister imprisoned, his brothers and nobility brought to the scaffold, and himself abandoned by all the world, he was obliged to fly to the *Western Isles*, and to take refuge in one of the *Hebrides*, where he lay concealed at the house of a friend, in expectation of better fortune.

Q. Did he meet with the wished-for opportunity?

A. Yes: for *Edward*, who had wintered at *Carlisle*, no sooner returned to *London*, than *Bruce* came forth from the place of his concealment, and assembling the scattered remains of his army, and reinforcing them with new levies, he attacked and defeated the Earl of *Pembroke*; and being now entire master of the field, he recovered possession of several towns, which the *English* had seized.

Q. What did *Edward* do upon receiving the news of this misfortune?

A. Being highly enraged against the *Scots*, whom he considered as altogether incorrigible, he resolved to punish their repeated rebellions by waiving their country from one extremity to the other. For this purpose he levied a numerous army, and began his march for the north; but he had not proceeded far on his journey, when he was seized with a dysentery, or bloody-flux, which put a period to his life.

Q. Had *Edward* no other war to maintain?

A. Yes, against *France*; though it was not attended with any remarkable events. He lost *Guienne* indeed by the artifice of the *French* court; but after expending immense sums in contracting alliances with foreign powers, he was able at last to recover that province.

Q. Was not he engaged in a dispute with the clergy?

A. Yes; for refusing to contribute to the exigencies of the state, he put them out of the protection of the laws; in consequence of which, every one was allowed to plunder their effects, and abuse their persons, without being liable to any kind of penalty. At last, however, they thought proper to comply with the demands of the king, and were restored to the privileges enjoyed by other subjects.

Q. Where did *Edward* die?

A. At *Burgh on the Sands*, a small town in *Cumberland*, enjoining with his last breath his son and successor to prosecute the enterprize against *Scotland*; and never to desist till he had made an entire conquest of that kingdom. He concluded, by way of encouragement, with these words: *Let my bones be carried before you; for sure I am, that the rebels will never dare to stand the sight of them.* He expired on the 7th of July 1307, in the sixty-ninth year of his age, and the thirty-fifth of his reign. His body being conveyed to *Westminster*, was there incrufted with wax, and deposited near that of king *Henry*, his father.

Q. What is the character of *Edward*?

A. Of a graceful person and dignified aspect (notwithstanding the great length and slenderness of his legs, which procured him the surname of *Long-shanks*) he was as well qualified to captivate the populace by his exterior appearance, as to gain the approbation of men of sense by his more solid virtues. Endued alike with personal bravery, and political courage, he had the spirit to undertake, and the resolution to accomplish some of the most difficult and dangerous enterprizes that ever were attempted by any *English* monarch. Nor was he less remarkable for his civil than his military abilities. The improvements which he made in the *English* law were so great, that he received the appellation of the *English Justinian*. He divided the  
court



court of exchequer into four distinct courts, which managed each its respective branch of business: he first instituted the office of justice of the peace; restrained at once the turbulence of the barons, and the violence of the people; repressed robberies and disorders of every kind; and, in a word, introduced a new face of things, by the wisdom and vigour of his government.

Q. How many children had *Edward*?

A. By his first wife, *Eleanor of Castile*, he had four sons; but, *Edward* his heir and successor, was the only one that survived him. He had likewise by the same consort, eleven daughters, six of whom died in their infancy. *Eleanor* was married to *Henry* duke of *Bar*; *Jean* to *Gilbert Clare*, earl of *Gloucester*, and afterwards to *Ralph de Monthermer*; *Margaret*, to *John* duke of *Brabant*; *Elizabeth*, to *John* earl of *Holland*, and afterwards to *Humphrey de Bobun*, earl of *Hereford*; *Mary* was a nun at *Ambresbury*. By his second wife, *Margaret of France*, he had two sons; *Thomas*, earl of *Norfolk*, and marshal of *England*; *Edmund*, earl of *Kent*; and a daughter, named *Eleanor*, who died in her childhood.

## C H A P. XXVIII.

EDWARD II. XXIX<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1307 to 1327.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
CLEMENT V.	1305	ERIC VIII.	1286
JOHN XXII.	1316	CHRISTOPHER II.	1318
<i>Emperor of the East.</i>			
ANCHONICUS II.	1283	<i>Kings of Sweden.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		BIRGER	1290
ALBERT I.	1298	MAGNUS SMEEK	1319
HENRY VII.	1308	<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
FREDERIC III.	1314	DENIS	1279
<i>Kings of France.</i>		ALONSO IV.	1324
PHILIP IV.	1285	<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
LEWIS X.	1314	ROBERT BRUCE	1306
PHILIP V.	1316		
CHARLES IV.	1322		

Q. WHO succeeded Edward I?

A. Edward II. his eldest son, who began his reign in 1307; being then about twenty-three years of age.

Q. Was he married at the time of his accession?

A. No: but he was no sooner crowned than he went over to *Boulogne*, to celebrate his nuptials with *Isabella of France*, daughter of *Philip the Fair*, to whom he had formerly been betrothed; and the ceremony was accordingly performed in the presence of four monarchs, viz. *Philip* king of *France*, *Lewis* king of *Navarre*, *Charles* king of *Sicily*, and the king of the *Romans*.

Q. How did Edward conduct himself in the beginning of his reign?

A. Being utterly incapable of holding the reins of empire himself, he resigned them into the hands of one *Piers Gaveston*, a *Gascon* knight, his chief favourite and confident.

The

The late king, perceiving the influence of this foreigner with his son, and dreading the consequence of such a dangerous attachment, had banished him the kingdom; but *Edward* was no sooner seated on the throne, than he recalled him into *England*, and loaded him with such marks of his favour and affection, as excited the jealousy of the barons, who required the king once more to banish him.

Q. Did he comply with their request?

A. He was obliged to do so; though even in his compliance he gave fresh proofs of his fondness for his favourite. Instead of expelling him the *English* dominions, he appointed him lord lieutenant of *Ireland*, attended him to *Brijol*, on his journey thither, and before his departure conferred upon him new lands and riches. He even ventured, in a little time after, to recall him into *England*.

Q. Were not the barons enraged at this step?

A. So much, that they compelled the king to banish him to *Flanders*, and at the same time to intrust the sovereign power to twelve persons, to be chosen by the prelates and barons.

Q. What use did those commissioners make of their authority?

A. They enacted several statutes for the government of the kingdom; and among others, one, by which it was ordained, that no foreigner should enjoy for the future, any place of trust in *England*.

Q. Did affairs remain long in this situation?

A. No: The king having delivered himself from the hands of the barons, annulled the statutes, and recalled *Gaveston*; at which the barons were so much incensed, that they rose in arms, besieged the favourite in *Scarborough*, took him prisoner, and conducting him thence to the castle of *Warwick*, caused his head to be struck off by the common executioner. This event happened on the first day of *July 1312*.

Q. Did *Edward* follow the advice of his father in prosecuting the enterprize against *Scotland*?

A. No: he advanced but a little into that kingdom; and not meeting with the enemy, he returned suddenly into *England*, and disbanded the forces.

Q. Was not the war, however, still continued?

*A.* Yes; and *Edward* now returned into *Scotland* with an army of an hundred thousand men, in order to raise the siege of *Sterling*, which still remained in the hands of the *English*, and was closely invested by the enemy; but *Bruce* meeting him at *Bannockburn*, with an army of thirty thousand men, gave him a total defeat on the 25th day of June, 1314.

Q. Did not *Edward* revenge this loss?

*A.* The name of *Robert Bruce*, it is said, was now become so terrible to the *English*, that no superiority of numbers could encourage them to keep the field against that hero; who being thus freed from all opposition, reduced *Sterling*, recovered *Berwick*, and having raised contributions in the northern counties of *England*, effectually secured his crown, and established the tranquillity of his kingdom.

Q. Had not the king another favourite after the death of *Gaveston*?

*A.* *Hugh le D'Espensor*, or *Spencer*, a young nobleman of a graceful person and genteel address, soon obtained over the weak mind of *Edward*, the same influence and authority which *Gaveston* had possessed.

Q. How did the barons bear with this new minion?

*A.* Provoked alike at his insolence and avarice, they formed against him a powerful confederacy, of which *Thomas* earl of *Lancaster*, the king's uncle, was the chief.

Q. What measures did the confederates pursue?

*A.* They ravaged the estates of *Spencer* and of his father, who had likewise great interest at court; and obliged the king to banish those ministers.

Q. Was their banishment perpetual?

*A.* *Edward* having levied an army for some other purpose, attacked the barons, defeated them intirely, took the earl of *Lancaster* prisoner, caused that nobleman to be beheaded, and recalled to *England* the two *Spencers*. This happened in the spring of 1322.

Q. Did *Edward* enjoy tranquillity during the rest of his reign?

*A.* No: his queen, *Isabella*, a profligate and abandoned woman, created him infinite trouble, and at last had a considerable share in bringing him to an untimely end.

Q. What

Q. What were her motives for this conduct?

A. Her aversion to the *Spencers*, her hatred to her husband, and her love for *Roger Mortimer*, a baron in the *Welsh* marches.

Q. How did she execute her project?

A. She went over to *France*, under another pretext, and carried with her her son *Edward*, who did homage to the *French* king for *Guienne* and *Pontbieu*.

Q. What encouragement did she meet with at the *French* court?

A. *Charles the Fair*, her brother, who then sat on the throne of that kingdom, being ashamed to support the queen and prince, against the authority of a husband and father, *Isabella* was obliged to apply elsewhere; and she therefore betrothed her son, *Edward*, to *Philippa*, daughter of the count of *Holland* and *Hainault*, from whom she obtained a strong body of forces, under the command of earl *John*, his brother.

Q. How did she employ these troops?

A. She carried them with her into *England*; and pretending that her sole intention was to remove the two *Spencers*, she was, immediately upon her arrival, joined by most of the barons.

Q. What did the king do in this extremity?

A. Deserted by his friends, and pursued by his enemies, he attempted to fly into *Ireland*; but being driven back by contrary winds, he concealed himself in *Neath-abbey* in *Wales*, where he was soon after discovered, and committed close prisoner to the castle of *Kenilworth*. The two *Spencers* were at the same time seized, the one in *Bristol*, the other in *Wales*; and both of them were instantly hanged.

Q. What steps did the queen take with regard to her husband?

A. She summoned a parliament, which being intirely under her influence, formally deposed him, and proclaimed his son *Edward* monarch in his stead. Deputies were then sent to the dethroned king to require him to resign the crown.

Q. Did he comply with their request?

A. He fainted away at the first intimation of it; and then

shedding a flood of tears, submitted quietly to whatever was demanded of him.

Q. What became of him afterwards?

A. He was committed to the care of *Henry* earl of *Lancaster*, who, touched with pity for his unhappy condition, not only used him with great lenity, but was even suspected to have entertained thoughts of restoring him to the throne. The queen, therefore, and *Mortimer*, her favourite, who now lived in the most scandalous familiarity, being determined to make away with him, ordered him to be removed from the castle of *Kenilworth*, to that of *Berkley*, where he was entrusted to the charge of *Sir Thomas Gournay*, and *Sir John Mautravers*, who treated him with every species of indignity; hoping, by that means, to break his spirit, and thus put a period to his life.

Q. Can you give any instance of their cruel treatment of him?

A. It is reported, that one day, when he was to be shaved, they ordered cold and dirty water to be brought from the ditch for that purpose; and when he desired it to be changed, and was still denied his request, he burst out into tears, which bedewed his cheeks; and he exclaimed, that in spite of their insolence, he should be shaved with clean and warm water.

Q. Did these means of laying *Edward* in his grave prove effectual?

A. No; and the ruffians, therefore, had recourse to another method still more barbarous and cruel. They entered his apartment; threw him on his bed; held him down forcibly with a table, which they flung over him; thrust into his fundament a red hot iron, which they inserted through a horn: and though the outward marks of violence upon his person were prevented, by this expedient, the horrid deed was discovered to all the guards and attendants, by the screams with which the agonizing king filled the castle, while his bowels were consuming within him. He expired on the 21st of *September* 1327, in the forty-third year of his age, and the twentieth of his reign.

Q. Did not his murderers meet with condign punishment?

A. Gour-

*A. Gournay* perished by the hands of the executioner ; but *Mautravers* having found means to perform some important service to *Edward III.* received a pardon. The fate of the queen and *Mertimer* will be seen in the next chapter.

2. Describe the person and qualities of *Edward*.

*A.* He is said to have resembled his father in the lineaments of his face, as well as in the elegance and regularity of his shape ; and he followed his example in a strict observance of the conjugal duties, to which he met with a very ungrateful return : but he was utterly destitute of all those great and noble qualities, which rendered the other the most illustrious hero of the age. Of a warm and benevolent heart, he was strongly inclined to friendship ; but of weak and narrow intellects, he had not discernment to choose a friend : of a lazy and indolent disposition, he took up with the first that fortune threw in his way ; and of strong and violent passions, when once he had fixed his choice, he could never be persuaded to withdraw his attachment : and to this cause are supposed to be owing all the calamities that befel him in his life, and the untimely death to which he was at last brought.

2. How many children had *Edward* ?

*A.* By his queen *Isabella of France*, he had two sons, and two daughters, viz. *Edward III.* his eldest son and successor ; *John*, created afterwards earl of *Cornwall*, who died young at *Perth* ; *Jane*, married to *David Bruce*, king of *Scotland* ; and *Eleanor*, espoused to *Reginald*, count of *Guedres*.

2. Was not *England*, during his reign, afflicted with a grievous famine ?

*A.* So grievous, that men are said to have devoured one another. This famine, according to some historians, lasted three years.

2. Did any remarkable events happen about this period, in the other kingdoms of *Europe* ?

*A.* The order of knights-templars was abolished in *France* ; and the example of that kingdom was soon after followed by all the other states of *Europe*. These knights had greatly degenerated from the virtues of their predecessors ; but the chief cause of their ruin seems to have been the immense wealth which they had every where acquired, and which excited the avidity of the Christian princes.

## C H A P. XXIX.

E D W A R D III. XXX<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1327 to 1377.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
JOHN XXII.	1316	CHRISTOPHER II.	1318
BENEDICT XII.	1334	VALDEMAR III.	1340
CLEMENT VI.	1342	OLAUS V.	1375
INNOCENT VI.	1352		
URBAN V.	1362	<i>Kings of Sweden.</i>	
GREGORY XI.	1370	MAGNUS SMEEK	1319
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		ALBERT of Mecklenb.	1363
ANDRONICUS II.	1283		
ANDRONICUS III.	1332	<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
JOHN V.	1341	ALONSO IV.	1324
JOHN VI.	1355	PEDRO I.	1357
<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		FERDINAND	1367
FREDERIC III.	1314		
LEWIS IV.	1330	<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
CHARLES IV.	1347	ROBERT BRUCE	1306
<i>Kings of France.</i>		DAVID II.	1330
CHARLES IV.	1322	EDWARD BALIOL.	1332
PHILIP VI.	1328	DAVID II. restored	1542
JOHN I.	1355	ROBERT II. (Stuart)	1370
CHARLES V.	1364		

2 **W**HO succeeded Edward II.

*A.* Edward III. his eldest son, who ascended the throne in 1327.

2 What were the first acts of his reign?

*A.* As he was yet a minor, being only in the fourteenth year of his age, a council of regency was appointed, consisting of five prelates and seven lay peers; but the chief authority was engrossed by the queen-dowager, and her favourite, *Mortimer*, who still lived in the most scandalous familiarity.

2 How did they conduct the affairs of the nation?

*A.* Very



*A.* Very ill; though no worse than might be expected from persons of such abandoned characters.

*Q.* Pray give me some instances of their conduct.

*A.* They bestowed all places of trust and profit upon their own creatures; concluded a disadvantageous peace with the *Scots*; brought the earl of *Kent*, the king's uncle, to the block; overawed the proceedings of parliament; plundered and oppressed the people; till, at length, the king, moved by the cries of his subjects, who called aloud for justice, and by a regard to the honour of his own family, which was so deeply affected by the behaviour of the queen and *Mortimer*, caused the latter to be seized, tried, and executed, and confined the former to his house at *Risings*, during the remainder of her life. *Mortimer* was hanged at *Elmes*, in the neighbourhood of *London*, where his body remained two days on the common gibbet.

*Q.* How did *Edward* behave after taking the reins of government into his own hands?

*A.* It must be observed, that, before the death of *Mortimer*, the *Scots* had made an irruption into the northern counties of *England*; upon which, *Edward* assembled an army of sixty-thousand men, and marched out in quest of the enemy; but though he overtook them, and even continued in sight of them for several days, he was not able to bring them to a battle; and the *Scots*, after ravaging the country, returned home with an immense booty. Soon after a peace was concluded with that people; and, in order to render it more lasting, *Jane*, king *Edward's* sister, was given in marriage to *David Bruce*, eldest son of the *Scottish* king.

*Q.* Did not the war with *Scotland* break out afresh?

*A.* Yes.

*Q.* Upon what occasion?

*A.* The king of *Scots* having refused, contrary to the articles of the late peace, to restore such of the *English* barons as had formerly possessed estates in *Scotland*, to the enjoyment of their lands, these noblemen resolved to do themselves justice by force of arms. With this view they sent for *Edward Baliol* (son of the late king *John*) who then resided in *France* as a private person, and placing him at their head, invaded *Scotland* with an army of twenty-five

five thousand men, defeated the regent, *Marre*, in two pitched battles; their fleet, at the same time, obtained a victory over that of the enemy; and thus the kingdom being in effect subdued, *Baliol* was solemnly crowned at *Score*; and young *David* and his consort were obliged to fly into France. This revolution happened in 1332.

Q. Was *Baliol* able to maintain himself on the throne?

A. No; for having dismissed the greatest part of his *English* followers, he was suddenly attacked by Sir *Archibald Douglas*, and chased into *England* in a most miserable condition.

Q. What reception did he meet with at the *English* court?

A. *Edward*, who had hitherto favoured him in secret, though he was ashamed to support him openly against a minor king, and a brother-in-law, now resolved to espouse his cause in earnest, provided that *Baliol* should do him homage for his crown; a condition to which the other readily agreed. Accordingly he marched into *Scotland* with a numerous army, defeated the natives in a great battle at *Halidown-bill*, and re-established *Baliol* on the throne; but he had no sooner departed, than that prince was driven once more into *England*. *Edward* returned into *Scotland* with a still more formidable army, and restored *Baliol*, who, immediately upon the departure of the *English*, was a third time expelled the kingdom; and as *Edward's* attention was now engaged by affairs of greater consequence, *Baliol* was never able to recover possession of his throne.

Q. What engaged the attention of *Edward* at this time?

A. The war that he was carrying on against *France*.

[ Q. What gave occasion to this war?

A. The claim which *Edward* had to the crown of that kingdom.

Q. What title had he to it?

A. He was the son of *Isabella*, daughter of *Philip the Fair* (who died without male issue) and sister of *Charles the Fair*, the last king of *France*, to whom *Philip de Valois*, the present sovereign, was only cousin; but *Philip* was sprung from a male branch, *Edward* only from a female.

Q. Was this title well founded?

A. It

*A.* It was contrary to the *Salic* law, by which all females, and all the descendants of females, are excluded from the throne of *France*.

Q. What was the origin of this law ?

*A.* Historians are not agreed as to this particular ; but the most probable opinion is as follows : The word *Sala*, or *Sals*, signified anciently the castle or house of a great lord ; and from thence was derived the name of *Salians*, by whom were meant the great lords of the kingdom, who belonged to the court, or the king's household. In proportion as the *French* kings established themselves in *Gaul*, and extended their conquests, they assigned lands to the *Salians*, that is, to the principal men of their *Sale* or court, on condition that whoever possessed these lands, should serve in person in the wars ; and for this reason they could never be possessed by women, whose sex rendered them incapable of bearing arms. A law was therefore enacted for this purpose, and expressed in the following terms ; " No part of the *Salic* lands, that is, lands given to a *Salian*, can be inherited by a woman ; but all such lands shall descend to the males only."

Q. Did this law regulate the succession to the crown, as well as that to private possessions ?

*A.* Not originally ; though it came in time, and long before the period of which we are now speaking, to be applied likewise to that important article.

Q. Would *Edward's* title have been well founded, had he not been excluded by the *Salic* law ?

*A.* No ; for the three last kings, *Lewis Hutin*, *Philip the Long*, and *Charles the Fair*, brothers to *Edward's* mother, had all left daughters, who were still alive, and who stood before *Edward* in the order of succession. But *Edward* asserted, that though his mother, *Isabella*, was excluded by the *Salic* law, he himself, who inherited through her, was not liable to any such objection, and might therefore claim by the right of propinquity.

Q. Would his title have been good upon that supposition ?

*A.* Not even then ; for *Charles*, king of *Navarre*, descended from the daughter of *Lewis Hutin*, would have had a preferable title : so that *Edward's* claim ; in whatever light

light it is viewed, was altogether groundless. Nevertheless, he assumed the title of king of *France*, which his successors still retain.

Q. Did he proceed immediately to assert it?

A. No; for as he was still a minor, and had made no preparation for undertaking a war, he thought it prudent, to conceal his intention. He was even obliged to go over to *France*, and do homage to *Philip* for *Guienne* and *Ponthieu*, in presence of the kings of *Navarre*, *Majorca*, and *Bobemia*; but he took the precaution, before he left *England*, to protest privately against this ceremony.

Q. When did he begin the war against *France*?

A. In 1339; though nothing remarkable happened in the first campaign. On the thirteenth of *June*, of the succeeding year, he obtained a great naval victory over the *French*, who lost, in the action, two hundred and thirty ships, thirty thousand men, and two of their admirals.

Q. Was the war carried on without interruption?

A. No; but in 1346, *Edward* invaded *France* a second time, with an army of thirty thousand men; and being on the 26th of *August*, overtaken by the *French* king in the neighbourhood of *Crecy*, with an army of one hundred and twenty thousand, he gave him a total defeat. The honour of this victory was chiefly due to *Edward*, prince of *Wales*, surnamed the *Black Prince*, from the colour of his armour, who was then only in the sixteenth year of his age, and now made his first campaign. The loss of the *French* in this battle was great; for besides 1200 knights, 1400 gentlemen, 4000 men at arms, and 30,000 men of inferior rank, there fell the duke of *Alencon*, king *Philip's* brother, the dukes of *Lorraine* and *Bourbon*, the earls of *Flanders*, *Blois*, *Harcourt*, *Vaudemont*, *Aumale*, and the kings of *Majorca* and *Bobemia*; which last was blind from age, and died fighting for *France*, agreeably to his wish. His crest was three ostrich feathers, and his motto these *German* words, *Ich dien, I serve*; which the prince of *Wales* adopted in memory of this signal victory, and the same has been retained by all his successors. 'Tis related by some historians, that the *English* first employed cannon in this great battle; and that though the use of this engine was known

in *France*, as well as in *England*, *Philip* had neglected to bring his artillery with him.

Q. How did *Edward* improve this victory ?

A. He was not so elated with it as to think of penetrating into the heart of *France*, but contented himself with undertaking the siege of *Calai*, which after having blockaded for a twelvemonth, he at last reduced by famine.

Q. Did not *Philip* endeavour to raise this siege ?

A. Yes; and that with an army of 200,000 men; but he found the *English* so strongly intrenched, that it was impossible to attack them, without the most imminent danger.

Q. Was not this siege attended with a remarkable circumstance ?

A. 'Tis said that *Edward* was so exasperated at the long and obstinate resistance of the garrison, that when they offered to capitulate, he insisted that six of the principal burghers should come to his camp with the keys of the place in their hands, and halters about their necks; and that he ordered these brave citizens (one of whom was called *Pierre de St. Eustace*) to be led to immediate execution; when he was happily prevented from committing such a barbarous action by the entreaties of his queen, *Philippa*, who not only procured them a pardon, but, after giving them a plentiful repast, and making them a present of money and cloaths, sent them back to the town in safety.

Q. Was not the war with *Scotland* renewed about this time ?

A. Yes; and equally to the honour and advantage of the *English*; for the *Scots* having recalled their king, *David Bruce*, from *France*, invaded *England* with an army of 50,000 men, and carried their ravages to the gates of *Durham*, where being attacked by queen *Philippa*, at the head of 12,000 men, they were defeated, with the loss of 15,000 of their troops; and their king himself was taken prisoner. He was detained in captivity for the space of eleven years, and then restored to his freedom in consequence of a treaty, which was concluded between the two nations.

Q. When

Q. When did *Edward* renew his attempt against *France*?

A. Though several petty enterprizes were undertaken and executed in the interim, no remarkable event happened till the year 1356, when *Edward* prince of *Wales* made an invasion into *France*, with an army of 12,000 men; and coming up with king *John*, son and successor of *Philip*, who had assembled an army of 60,000 men, at a place called *Maupertuis*, near *Poitiers*, he put the enemy to a total rout; took king *John* himself, and *Philip*, his fourth son, prisoners, and killed about 6000 of his men; among whom were the duke of *Bourbon*, the constable of *France*, and fifty of the greatest noblemen of the kingdom. The glory, which the prince of *Wales* gained by this victory, was only exceeded by the fame he acquired from his generous treatment of the captive monarch, to whom he behaved with such profound respect and deference, as extorted tears of joy and admiration from all the *French* prisoners. The example of prince *Edward* was followed by the king his father, who treated his royal captive with the greatest humanity; but being determined to make the most of this incident, he carried him over into *England*, and committed him prisoner to the palace of the *Savoy*.

Q. What use did *Edward* make of this victory?

A. He persuaded *John* to agree to a treaty, by which *Edward* was to be restored to all the provinces, which had been possessed by *Henry II.* and his two sons; and which were to be annexed to the crown of *England*, without any obligation of homage or fealty on the part of the *English* monarch.

Q. Did the *French* ministry assent to this treaty?

A. *Charles*, the dauphin, a prudent and sagacious prince, who, during his father's captivity, had assumed the reins of government, absolutely refused to agree to a measure, which would have dismembered the monarchy; upon which *Edward* invaded *France* with an army of 100,000 men; but the dauphin took such excellent precautions for the security of the kingdom, that *Edward*, having in vain attempted to reduce the city of *Rheims*, and ravaged the country to the very gates of *Paris*; and finding it impossible to draw the dauphin from that place, in which he had taken  
his



*The Black Prince waiting on the  
King of France his Prisoner.*

*Wale delin.*

*Malott sculp.*





his station, he was obliged to consent to a peace, which was concluded at the village of *Bretigni*.

Q. What were the conditions of this peace?

A. It was stipulated, that *John* should pay as his ransom three millions of crowns of gold; about 1,500,000 pounds of our present money: that *Edward* should for ever renounce all claim to the crown of *France*, and to all provinces formerly possessed by his ancestors; and should receive in exchange the provinces of *Guienne*, *Poitou*, *Xaintongue*, *l'Aginois*, *Perigord*, the *Limousin*, *Quercy*, *Rouverge*, *l'Angoumois*, *Calais*, *Guifnes*, *Montreuil*, and *Ponthieu*, without being obliged to perform any homage to the *French* monarch. It would be tedious to enumerate the other articles of the treaty, which was signed on the eighth day of *May*, 1360.

Q. Was this treaty faithfully executed?

A. King *John* was set at liberty in consequence of it, after having been a prisoner for upwards of four years; and that monarch performed all the articles, so far as depended on himself with the utmost punctuality. He even came over to *England* for that purpose, notwithstanding the remonstrances of his courtiers; and he soon after sickened and died in the *Savoy*, the place of his former confinement. He expired on the eighth of *April*, 1364.

Q. Did *Charles V.* his son and successor, observe the articles of the peace with the same fidelity?

A. No: he attacked the *English* provinces in *France* with such success, that he soon reduced most of them under his subjection; and all this he performed by means of his generals, without stirring himself once out of his palace; so that in 1370, *Edward* was obliged to agree to a truce, after having lost almost all his ancient possessions in *France*, except *Bayonne* and *Bordeaux*; and all his conquests, except *Calais*.

Q. Was *Edward* engaged in any other wars?

A. He espoused the cause of his son-in-law *John* count of *Montfort*, against that of *Charles* of *Blois*, nephew to the *French* king, who, both of them, laid claim to the dukedom of *Brittany*; and though he was not so fortunate as to put an end to the war in person, when he crossed into *Brittany* in 1342, he had yet the satisfaction to see it concluded

cluded agreeably to his wishes; for *Charles* lost at once both his dukedom and his life in a battle which was fought at *Auray*, in 1364, in consequence of which *Montfort* succeeded to the duchy.

Q. Did *Edward* perform no other remarkable actions?

A. On the 29th of *August* 1350, he attacked a fleet of *Spanish* ships, which greatly infested the *English* coasts; defeated them entirely; took twenty-four of their vessels; and either sunk or dispersed the rest.

Q. Did not he institute the order of the garter?

A. Yes, but of this we have given a particular account in chap. XI.

Q. Did not *Edward* and the *Black Prince* undertake an expedition into *Spain*?

A. Yes; in 1367, in order to restore *Peter the Cruel* to the throne of *Castile*; from which he had been expelled by his natural brother, *Henry de Translamare*; and he finished this enterprize with his usual glory and good fortune.

Q. How long did he survive this expedition?

A. About nine years; though during the greatest part of that time he was in a very bad state of health. He died, after a lingering illness, on the eighth day of *June* 1376, in the forty-sixth year of his age; and left behind him a character distinguished by every great and amiable virtue. His valour and military talents formed the smallest part of his merit: his generosity, humanity, affability, and moderation, gained him the affections of all the world, and rendered him at once the delight of the court, and the darling of the people.

Q. Was he ever married?

A. Yes; to his cousin *Joan*, commonly called the *Fair maid of Kent*, daughter and heir of his uncle, the earl of *Kent*, who was beheaded in the beginning of this reign. She had been formerly married to *Sir Thomas Holland*, by whom she had children. She likewise bore two sons to *Edward*, viz. *Edward*, who died at seven years of age, and *Richard*, who succeeded to the crown of *England*.

Q. Where did king *Edward III.* die?

A. At his palace of *Shien*, now called *Richmond*, on the 21st day of *June* 1377, in the sixty-fifth year of his age, and the fifty-first of his reign. And this great monarch,

who

who had been so much courted during his life-time, had the cruel mortification, before he expired, to see himself abandoned by all the world. *Alice Pierce*, his favourite mistress, when she saw his end approaching, seized the most precious things she could lay her hands on; and tearing the ring from his finger, went off. His courtiers, and even his chaplains, treated him with the same indifference and neglect.

Q. What is the character of *Edward*?

A. He was certainly one of the greatest and most accomplished princes that ever filled the *English* throne, whether we consider him as a warrior or legislator, as a monarch or a man. In his stature he was about six feet high, of an elegant shape, and robust constitution: his limbs were finely turned; his eyes were quick and piercing; his visage was sharp and aquiline; [and his] whole air such as at once engaged affection, and commanded esteem. Nor were the qualities of his mind inferior to those of his body. He was brave, active, and enterprising; shrewd, sensible, and sagacious; severe, but impartial in the execution of justice; liberal, not profuse, in his expences: and what contributed, in a peculiar manner, to endear his memory to the *English*, it was in his reign, that they first began to acquire over *France*, their rival and national enemy, that superiority in warlike achievements, which, almost without interruption, they have ever since maintained.

Q. How many children had *Edward*?

A. By his queen *Isabella*, he had, besides the *Black Prince*, six sons and five daughters, viz. *William* of *Hatfield*, who died in his infancy; *Lionel* duke of *Clarence*; *John* of *Gaunt*, duke of *Lancaster*, from whom sprung that branch, which afterwards mounted the throne; *Edmund*, duke of *York*; *William* of *Windsor*, who died young; and *Thomas*, duke of *Gloucester*. His daughters were, *Isabella*, married to *Ingelram de Coucy*, earl of *Bedford*; *Joan*, betrothed to the prince of *Castile*, but died in her journey to *Spain*; *Blanche*, who died in her childhood; *Mary*, espoused to *John de Montfort*, duke of *Brittany*; and *Margaret*, wife to *John Hastings*, earl of *Pembroke*.

Q. Were

Q. Were not some attempts made in this reign, towards a reformation of religion ?

A. Yes; the celebrated John *Wickliffe* began about this time, to declaim in his sermons against the doctrine of the real presence, pilgrimages, purgatory, monastic vows, and other superstitions of the church of *Rome*; and he had soon the good fortune to make a great many profelytes, particularly the duke of *Lancaster*, king *Edward's* son. But notwithstanding the protection of this powerful patron, he was cited to appear before the bishop of *London*; and his tenets were solemnly condemned in an assembly held at *Oxford*. He escaped, however, the malice of his enemies; and died peaceably in 1385 at his rectory of *Lutterworth*, in the county of *Leicester*. He seems to have been a man of parts and learning; and has the honour of being the first person in *Europe* who publicly called in question those doctrines, which had universally passed for certain and undisputed during so many ages. His followers were called *Wickliffites*, and sometimes *Lollards*.

Q. What was the most remarkable law passed in this reign ?

A. That which limited the cases of high treason, before vague and uncertain, to three principal heads, *viz.* the conspiring against the life of the king, the levying war against his person, and the adhering to his enemies; and this law still remains in force, without any alteration.

Q. Did *Edward* leave any considerable monuments behind him ?

A. He built the magnificent castle of *Windfor*; and his method of conducting that work may serve as a specimen of the condition of the people in that age. Instead of alluring workmen by contracts and wages, he assessed every country in *England* to find him so many masons, tilers, and carpenters, as if he had been levying an army.

Q. Was not *England* visited with a dreadful plague during this reign ?

A. Yes, as well as all the other kingdoms of *Europe*; and this malady is supposed to have swept away above one fourth of the inhabitants in every country which it attacked. Fifty thousand souls are said to have perished by it in *London* alone.

Q. Was

Q. Was not the spirit of chivalry and gallantry very prevalent at this period?

A. More, perhaps, than in any age which either preceded or followed it. The following is a remarkable instance to this purpose. A dispute having arisen between the *English* and the *Bretons*, which of them had the fairest mistresses, they agreed to decide the quarrel in a solemn duel of thirty knights of the one nation against thirty knights of the other. After a bloody combat the *Bretons* prevailed; and gained for their prize full liberty to boast of their mistresses beauty.

## C H A P. XXXI.

RICHARD II. XXXI<sup>st</sup> King of England.

From 1377 to 1399.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Sovereigns of Denmark.</i>	
GREGORY XI.	1370	OLAUS V.	1375
URBAN VI.	1378	MARGARET.	1387
BONIFACE IX.	1389	<i>King of Sweden.</i>	
<i>Emperors of the East.</i>		ALBERT of Meclenb.	1363
JOHN VI.	1355	<i>Sovereign of Denmark and Sweden.</i>	
EMANUEL II.	1391	MARGARET	1391*
<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
CHARLES IV.	1347	FERDINAND	1367
WINCESLAUS	1378	JOHN I.	1385
<i>King of France.</i>		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
CHARLES V.	1364	ROBERT II.	1370
CHARLES VI.	1380	ROBERT III.	1390

Q. WHO succeeded Edward III.

A. Richard II. grandson to that monarch, and son to Edward the Black Prince of Wales. He ascended the throne in 1377, being then only in the eleventh year of

\* In the course of this year, the crowns of Sweden, Denmark, and Norway, were united in the person of the famous Margaret of Denmark, commonly called, on account of her courage and capacity, the *Semiramis of the North*.

his age. 'Tis at his coronation, which was performed on the 16th of *July* of the same year, that historians first mention the champion coming into *Westminster-hall*, and giving his challenge; but this custom is supposed to be of greater antiquity.

Q. How was the government conducted during his minority?

A. By a council of nine persons, consisting partly of prelates, and partly of lay-peers; but the chief authority was engrossed by the king's three uncles, the dukes of *Lancaster*, *York*, and *Gloucester*.

Q. Was not a dangerous insurrection raised in the beginning of this reign?

A. Yes, in 1381, on account of a poll-tax, or an imposition of three groats upon every person above fifteen years of age. The first disorder arose from a blacksmith in a village of *Essex*. The tax-gatherers came to this man's shop, while he was at work, and demanded payment for his daughter, whom he affirmed to be below the age assigned by the statute. One of these fellows offered to produce a very indecent proof to the contrary, and at the same time laid hold of the maid; which the father resenting, immediately knocked out the ruffians brains with his hammer. The bystanders applauded the action, and exclaimed, that it was full time to take vengeance on their tyrants, and to assert their native liberty. They instantly flew to arms; and increasing every day in their numbers, they soon amounted to one hundred thousand men, who assembled on *Black-beath*, under their principal leaders, *Wat Tyler*, and *Jack Straw*. As their intention was to reduce all men to a level, they murdered every gentleman whom they could lay hold of; expressed a particular animosity against the lawyers and attornies; and the king's mother happening to pass through the midst of them, in her return from a pilgrimage to *Canterbury*, some of the most insolent among them, in order to shew their purpose of destroying all rank and distinction, forced kisses from her, though they committed no farther violence upon her person.

Q. What was the issue of this insurrection?

A. Part of the rebels having received a pardon, and obtained a charter for the abolition of slavery, laid down their

their arms, and returned peaceably to their habitations. But *Wat Tyler*, at the head of another body of them, entered into a conference with the king in *Smithfield*, where that demagogue made such extravagant proposals, and even lifted his sword with such a menacing air, that *Walworth*, the lord mayor of *London*, provoked at his insolence, struck him a furious blow on the head, and laid him dead at his feet. *Jack Straw*, his companion, was soon after seized and executed; and the rebels, being thus deprived of their leaders, were obliged, every where, to submit to the government.

Q Did the rest of *Richard's* reign pass in tranquility?

A No; it was almost continually disturbed by the factions and cabals of the barons, particularly of the duke of *Gloucester*, his uncle.

Q What gave occasion to these cabals?

A The king's attachment to favourites, who diverted his attention from serious business, engaged him in low pleasures and amusements, and encouraged him in pillaging and oppressing his subjects.

Q Who were the chief of these favourites?

A *Robert de Vere*, earl of *Oxford*, whom *Richard* created marquis of *Dublin*, and duke of *Ireland*; and *Michael de la Pole*, son to a merchant of *London*, who was made earl of *Sussex*, and chancellor of *England*.

Q What method did the barons take to express their resentment against these favourites?

A They first obliged the king to summon a parliament, where *Sussex* was tried, and deprived of his office. They were soon after tempted to rise in arms, and drive the duke of *Ireland* out of the kingdom. They likewise compelled the king to resign the sovereign power into the hands of a certain number of commissioners, most of them of their own party: and when *Richard* obtained, from Sir *Robert Tresilian*, and the other judges, a solemn decision, declaring this commission illegal, and extending the royal prerogative beyond its usual bounds, the barons called the judges to a severe account, condemned Sir *Robert Tresilian* to death, and banished his associates to *Ireland*. This last event happened in 1388.

Q Did affairs remain long in this situation?

H

A No;

A. No; in less than a twelvemonth, *Richard* annulled the commission he had granted, resumed into his own hands the sovereign authority, and in 1397 (for nothing remarkable passed in the interval) he caused the duke of *Gloucester*, who was plotting against the government, to be suddenly arrested, and conveyed to *Calais*, where he was basely smothered. Not satisfied with this sacrifice, he proceeded to take vengeance on all the rest of his enemies: *Richard Fitz-Alan*, earl of *Arundel*, was brought to the scaffold; his brother, the archbishop of *Canterbury*, was deprived of his see; *Thomas Beauchamp*, earl of *Warwick*, was doomed to perpetual exile in the *Ile of Man*; and the dukes of *Hereford* and *Norfolk* were banished the kingdom; the former for ten years, the latter for life.

Q. Did the punishment of these noblemen put an end to the public disturbances?

A. No; for *Henry*, duke of *Hereford*, who, upon the death of his father, had now succeeded to the title of *Lancaster*, being highly provoked at *Richard's* injustice in driving him into banishment, and seizing his estate, contrary to the most express engagements, resolved to do himself right by force of arms; and with this view, embarking at *Nantz* in *Brittany* on the 4th of *July*, 1399, he set sail for *England*, and after a quick passage, landed safely at *Ravenstun* in *Yorkshire*.

Q. Did he, at his first arrival, discover his intention of seizing upon the crown?

A. On the contrary, he took a solemn oath, that he had no other purpose in this invasion, than to recover the duchy of *Lancaster*, unjustly detained from him; and this circumstance, joined to his great popularity, procured him such a number of friends, that his army, soon increased to 60,000 men.

Q. Did he meet with no opposition?

A. No; *Richard* was at that time absent in *Ireland*, suppressing a rebellion which had broke out in that kingdom; and *Edmund*, duke of *York*, the king's uncle, who was regent of *England*, finding it impossible to make head against *Lancaster*, dismissed his forces, and retired to his own palace.

Q. What steps did *Richard* take upon the news of this invasion?

A. He hastened over to *England* with an army of 20,000 men; but being deserted by his troops, he took refuge in  
the



the *Ile of Anglesea*, where he was soon after secured, and conveyed first to *Flint-Castle*, and thence to *London*, where a parliament was assembled, who brought him to a trial, and solemnly deposed him, on the 28th of *September*, 1399.

Q. What were the crimes that were laid to his charge?

A. He was accused of having devolved the whole sovereign power upon a set of worthless favourites, who plundered and oppressed the people; of having violated, in a most arbitrary manner, the laws of the land; brought a great number of his nobility unjustly to the block; of having cruelly and treacherously put to death his uncle, the duke of *Gloucester*; in a word, of having been guilty of almost every crime that constitutes the character of a tyrant.

Q. What became of him after his deposition?

A. He was imprisoned in *Pomfret-Castle* in *Yorkshire*, where he soon after died. The manner of his death is variously related. Some pretend, that Sir *Piers Exton*, and others of his guards, fell upon him unawares, and murdered him with their halberts. But the most probable opinion is, that he was starved to death, by order of the duke of *Lancaster*; and after all subsistence was denied him, he prolonged his unhappy life, it is said, for a fortnight, before he reached the end of his miseries. This account is more consistent with the story, which says, that his body was exposed in public, and that no marks of violence were observed upon it. He died in the thirty-fourth year of his age, and the twenty-third of his reign.

Q. What is the character of *Richard*?

A. He was certainly a weak, vain, and contemptible prince, and altogether unqualified for managing the reins of empire. He was violent in his temper, profuse in his expences, fond of idle show and magnificence, devoted to favourites, and addicted to pleasure: passions, all of them, the most inconsistent with a prudent œconomy, and consequently dangerous in a limited and mixed government.

Q. Had he any children?

A. No; though he was twice married, first to *Anne of Luxemburgh*, sister to the emperor *Winceflaus*; and afterwards to *Ijabella of France*, daughter of *Charles VI.* but his marriage with this last lady was never consummated.

Q. Were the *English* engaged in any wars during his reign?

A. Yes; both with *France* and *Scotland*; but neither of them were attended with any remarkable event. A sharp skirmish, indeed, was fought at *Otterborne*, between *Douglas* and *Piercy*, surnamed *Hotspur*; in which the former was slain, and the latter taken prisoner.

## C H A P. XXXI.

## HOUSE of LANCASTER.

HENRY IV. surnamed of Bolingbroke,  
XXXII<sup>d</sup> King of England.

From 1399 to 1413.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of France.</i>	
BONIFACE IX.	1389	CHARLES VI.	1380
INNOCENT VII.	1404	<i>Sovereigns of Denmark and Sweden.</i>	
GREGORY XII.	1406		
ALEXANDER V.	1409	MARGARET	1391
JOHN XXIII.	1410	ERIC	1411
<i>Emperor of the East.</i>		<i>King of Portugal.</i>	
EMANUEL II.	1391	JOHN I.	1385
<i>Emperors of the West.</i>		<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
WINCESLAUS	1378		
ROBERT LE PET	1400	ROBERT III.	1390
SIGISMUND	1410		

Q. WHO succeeded *Richard II*?

A. *Henry*, duke of *Lancaster*, surnamed of *Bolingbroke*, from the place of his birth. He began his reign on the 28th of *September*, 1399.

Q. Whose son was he?

A. Of *John* of *Gaunt*, the late duke of *Lancaster*, third son of *Edward III*.

Q. Was

Q. Was he true heir to the crown?

A. No; *Mortimer*, earl of *Marche*, descended from *Lionel*, duke of *Clarence*, second son of *Edward III.* had a preferable title; but as he was then only a boy of seven years of age, his claim was overlooked upon this occasion.

Q. Did *Henry* enjoy his claim in tranquility?

A. No; he was almost continually disturbed by rebellions and insurrections, which, however, he found means, in the end, to suppress; but, in the course of these hostilities, he was obliged to put to death such a number of noblemen, as lost him the popularity which he had formerly possessed.

Q. Pray mention the most remarkable of these insurrections.

A. The first was raised in 1400, but was immediately quelled; and the earls of *Kent*, *Salisbury*, and *Huntington*, the lords *Spencer*, *Lumley*, and others, were brought to the block. The second was excited, the year following, by *Owen Glendour* or *Glendourdy*, descended from the ancient princes of *Wales*, who endeavoured to restore the independence of his country. *Henry* marched against him with a numerous army; but was forced to abandon the enterprize on account of the badness of the weather, which was so stormy, that the *English* imagined *Glendour* had made a compact with the devil. A third insurrection was raised, in 1403, by the earl of *Northumberland*. *Henry* attacked the rebels at *Shrewsbury*, and defeated them in a great battle; in which *Harry Percy*, surnamed *Hotspur*, was slain, and the earl of *Worcester*, his uncle, was taken and executed. *Northumberland* himself was pardoned for the present; but was soon after killed in another engagement.

Q. Had *Henry* any foreign wars to maintain?

A. Yes; both against *France* and *Scotland*; but neither of them was distinguished by any considerable actions. In 1407, *Henry* obtained an advantage over the *Scots*, which served, for a long time, to keep that people in tranquility. *Robert III.* king of *Scotland*, having lost his eldest son, *David*, by the treachery of his brother, the duke of *Albany*, who starved him to death, embarked his only surviving son, *James*, on board a ship, with a view of sending him to the court of *France*; but the prince being thrown, in the course of his voyage, upon the coast of *England*, was there seized,

and detained in captivity, notwithstanding the truce which subsisted between the two nations. *Henry*, however, made ample amends for this breach of hospitality, by giving the prince an excellent education, which qualified him afterwards, when he mounted the throne, to reform, in some measure, the barbarous manners of his subjects.

Q. Were not some laws enacted in this reign against the *Lollards*, or the followers of *Wickliffe*?

A. Yes; and *William Sawtre*, rector of *St. Ositkes*, in *London*, was condemned and burned for this kind of heresy. He was the first person that suffered in *England* on account of religion.

Q. Of what disease did *Henry* die?

A. Of a leprosy, according to some authors; though others say it was an apoplexy. He expired in the *Jerusalem Chamber* in *Westminster-Abbey*, according to a ridiculous prophecy of the times. His death happened on the 20th of *March*, 1413, in the forty-sixth year of his age, and the fourteenth of his reign.

Q. What is the character of *Henry IV*?

A. He was a prince of a middle stature, and handsome make; and was perfectly skilled in all the exercises of arms and chivalry. His countenance, like his disposition, was serious and sedate: he was equally proof against the smiles and frowns of fortune, neither elated with prosperity, nor dejected with adversity. His personal courage and military prowess were unquestioned; and had he possessed the crown by a just title, and, of consequence, been free from the numerous insurrections to which he was exposed, he might possibly have passed his life with as much honour to himself, and as much advantage to the nation, as any other monarch that ever filled the *English* throne. But the means by which he attained that high dignity were altogether unjustifiable; and the deposition and murder of his lawful sovereign and near relation will ever remain an indelible stain in the memory of this prince.

Q. Had he any children?

A. By his first wife, *Mary de Bohun*, daughter and heir of the earl of *Hereford*, he had four sons, *Henry*, his successor on the throne; *Thomas*, duke of *Clarence*; *John*, duke of *Bedford*; and *Humphrey*, duke of *Gloucester*: and two daughters,

ters, *Blanche* and *Philippa*; the former married to *Lewis Barbatus*, Elector Palatine of the *Rhine*; the latter to *Eric*, king of *Denmark* and *Norway*. His second wife, *Jane*, whom he married after he was king, and who was daughter to the king of *Navarre*, and widow of *John V.* duke of *Britanny*, brought him no issue.

Q. What eminent men flourished under this reign?

A. *William* of *Wickham*, bishop of *Winchester*, *Sir Robert Knolles*, and *Sir Richard Whittington*, lord mayor of *London*, distinguished themselves greatly by their works of charity and their public foundations. *Geoffrey Chaucer* and *John Gower* rendered themselves famous for their poetry; and are justly considered as the first reformers of the *English* language.

## C H A P. XXXII.

H E N R Y V. surnamed of Monmouth,

XXXIII<sup>d</sup> King of England.

From 1413 to 1422.

	<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of Denmark and Sweden.</i>
JOHN XXIII	1410		
MARTIN V	1417	ERIC	1411
	<i>Emperor of the East.</i>		<i>King of Portugal.</i>
EMANUEL II.	1391	JOHN I.	1385
	<i>Emperor of the West.</i>		<i>King of Scotland.</i>
SIGISMUND	1410	ROBERT III.	1390
	<i>King of France.</i>		
CHARLES VI.	1380		

Q. WHO succeeded Henry IV?

A. *Henry V.* his eldest son, born at *Monmouth* in 1388, and declared prince of *Wales*, or heir apparent of the crown of *England* in 1399. He begun his reign in 1413.

Q. How did he pass the earlier part of his life?

A. In a very dissolute manner; for being prevented, by the jealousy of his father, from engaging either in civil affairs,

fairs, or in military enterprizes, his active spirit broke out into a number of extravagances, which were altogether inconsistent with his high station. It is even said, that, among other pranks, he attacked the passengers on the streets and high-ways, and robbed them of their property. One of his chief companions in these frolicks was Sir *John Falstaffe*, a gallant captain of that age; upon which *Shakespeare* has founded the famous character of Sir *John Falstaff*; though in this, as well as in many other instances, he has departed greatly from the truth of history.

Q. Did not *Henry*, amidst all his irregularities, give a signal proof of his submission to the laws?

A. Yes; for having insulted *Gascoigne*, the chief justice, while he was presiding on the bench, that magistrate ordered him to be carried to prison for his rude behaviour; and *Henry*, to the joy and surprize of all the spectators, submitted quietly to the sentence pronounced against him.

Q. How did he behave after his ascending the throne?

A. He became at once, from a profligate prince, a most excellent sovereign; called together his former companions, acquainted them with his intended reformation, exhorted them to imitate his example, but strictly forbade them, till they had given proofs of their sincerity in this particular, to appear in his presence; and he then dismissed them with liberal presents.

Q. Did he adhere to this wise resolution?

A. With the greatest steadiness during the whole course of his reign.

Q. How did he conduct himself with regard to ecclesiastical affairs?

A. He judged it necessary to check the enthusiasm of the *Lollards* or *Wickliffites*, whose principles were at that time deemed dangerous to the civil government. Accordingly, Sir *John Oldcastle*, Lord *Cobham*, a nobleman of great merit and popularity, and one of the chief of these sectaries, was seized by the king's order, and imprisoned in the *Tower*. He escaped from thence, and endeavoured to raise an insurrection; but being afterwards retaken, he was hanged as a traitor, and his body burned for heresy. This man, who had, in various parts of his life, given signal proofs of courage and intrepidity, supported the last scene with his usual





*R. Henry 5.<sup>th</sup> names the Battle of  
Agincourt*

*A. Wallis del.*

*A. Wallis sc.*



usual fortitude, and died with great constancy. He was the first, among the *English* nobility, who suffered upon a religious account.

Q. Had *Henry* any wars to maintain?

A. He was engaged in a war against *France*, and one that was attended with the most surprizing successs.

Q. What gave occasion to this war?

A. *Henry* demanded of *Charles VI.* king of *France*, the restitution of all those provinces which his ancestors had possessed in that kingdom; and upon *Charles's* refusing to comply with his request, he renewed the claim which *Edward III.* had laid to the crown of *France*.

Q. How did he support this claim?

A. He landed at *Harfleur* on the 14th of *August*, 1415, with an army of 30,000 men; and having, after a short siege, reduced that place, he peopled it with *English*. During this siege, above half his forces were either cut off by the *French*, or snatched away by various diseases.

Q. What enterprize did he undertake next?

A. As the season was now far advanced, he resolved to return to *England*, and with this view began his march for *Calais*; but he had no sooner crossed the *Somme*, than he observed a *French* army, amounting to upwards of 60,000 men, drawn up before him in the plains of *Agincourt*, and determined to oppose his passage.

Q. What did he do in this extremity?

A. He offered to restore the town of *Harfleur*, provided he might be allowed to continue his march to *Calais*; but this proposal being rejected, the two armies came to an engagement on the 25th of *October*, when, after a vigorous struggle, the *English* obtained a complete victory. Above ten thousand *French* are said to have fallen in this battle, whereas the loss of the *English* did not exceed five hundred men, among whom were the duke of *York* and the earl of *Suffolk*. In the heat of the action, *Henry* was furiously attacked by the duke of *Alençon*, who, with one stroke of his ax, cleft the crown, which he wore upon his helmet; but the king returned the blow in such a manner as laid his enemy breathless at his feet. During this engagement, the *English* were afflicted with such a violent dysentery, that they are said to have fought without breeches, in order to save themselves the trouble of untrussing.

Q. What use did *Henry* make of this victory ?

A. Instead of improving his advantage against the enemy, he continued his march towards *Calais*, and from thence went over to *England*.

Q. When did he renew his attempts against *France* ?

A. In 1417, he invaded that kingdom afresh with an army of 25,000 men; and meeting with no considerable opposition, he soon reduced *Falaise*, *Cherbourg*, *Evreux*, *Caen*, and *Pont de l'Arche*; he took *Rouen* after an obstinate siege; and before the close of 1419, he made himself master of the whole province of *Normandy*, two hundred and fifteen years after that country had been wrested from king *John* by *Philip Augustus*, and re-united to the crown of *France*.

Q. Did not several circumstances contribute to facilitate the progress of the *English* arms ?

A. The violent dissensions which prevailed in the *French* ministry, particularly between the dukes of *Burgundy* and *Orleans*, and queen *Isabella* and her son *Charles*, the dauphin, tended greatly to this purpose.

Q. What was the consequence of all *Henry's* successes ?

A. He obliged the enemy to agree to a treaty, which was very advantageous to him, and which was concluded at *Troye* in *Champagne*, on the 20th of *May*, 1420.

Q. What were the terms of this treaty ?

A. It was stipulated, that *Henry* should espouse the princess *Catharine*, daughter to *Charles VI*: that this last monarch should, during his life-time, enjoy the title and dignity of king of *France*: that *Henry* should be declared and acknowledged heir of the monarchy, and be entrusted with the present administration of the government: that that kingdom should pass to his heirs whatsoever; and that both kings should unite their arms to subdue the adherents of *Charles*, who was called the pretended dauphin.

Q. Was this treaty duly executed ?

A. *Henry* espoused the princess *Catharine*, was recognized regent by the states of the kingdom, and was put in possession of the city of *Paris*, which he secured with a good garrison. And though the dauphin strongly opposed his arms, and even, by the assistance of some *Scottish* auxiliaries under the earl of *Buchan*, defeated his troops at *Baugé*, where the duke of *Clarence*, his brother, was slain, 'tis more than probable,

able, that *Henry* would have maintained the destination which his father-in-law had made in his favour, had he not been carried off by a bloody flux, at *Bois de Vincennes*, on the 31st day of *August*, 1422, in the thirty-fourth year of his age, and the tenth of his reign.

Q. How long did *Henry's* father-in-law survive him?

A. Only fifty days; and the death of that prince produced an entire revolution in the affairs of *France*.

Q. Describe the person and qualities of *Henry*.

A. His stature was somewhat above the middle size; his countenance beautiful; his limbs genteel and slender, but full of vigour. He excelled in all warlike and manly exercises. He was hardy, patient, laborious, and more capable of enduring cold, hunger, and fatigue, than almost any soldier in his army. Religious without superstition, just without rigour, and complaisant with a becoming dignity; he was alike qualified to engage the affections, and command the esteem of all around him. Not more tenacious of the prerogatives of his crown than tender of the privileges of his people, he enjoyed, during his whole reign, the most uninterrupted popularity. His abilities appeared equally in the cabinet and in the field; and the boldness of his enterprises was no less remarkable than his personal valour in conducting them.

Q. Had *Henry* any children?

A. By his queen *Catharine* of *France* he left only one son, named *Henry*, whose misfortunes, in the course of his life, surpassed all the glories and successes of his father. *Henry's* widow, soon after his death, married a *Welsh* gentleman, called *Sir Owen Tudor*, and said to be descended from the ancient princes of *Wales*: she bore him two sons, *Edmund* and *Jasper*, of whom, the eldest was created earl of *Richmond*; the second earl of *Pembrokeshire*. The family of *Tudor*, first raised to distinction by this alliance, mounted afterwards the throne of *England*.

## C H A P. XXXIII.

HENRY VI. *surnamed of Windsor,*XXXIV<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1422 to 1461.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of France.</i>	
MARTIN V.	1417	CHARLES VII.	1422
EUGENIUS IV.	1431	LEWIS XI.	1440
NICHOLAS V.	1447	<i>Kings of Denmark and</i>	
CALIXTUS III.	1455	<i>Sweden.</i>	
PIUS II.	1458	ERIC	1411
		CHRISTOPHER III.	1439
		CHRISTIAN I.	1448
		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
		JOHN I.	1385
		EDWARD	1433
		ALONSO V.	1438
		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
		ROBERT III.	1390
		JAMES I.	1424
		JAMES II.	1437
		JAMES III.	1460

*Emperors of the East.*

EMANUEL II.	1391
JOHN VII.	1426
CONSTANTINE III. <i>and last</i>	
<i>Emperor,</i>	1448

*Emperors of the West.*

SIGISMUND	1410
ALBERT II.	1438
FREDERIC IV.	1440

Q. WHO succeeded Henry V?

A. Henry VI. his only son, surnamed of *Windsor*, from the place of his birth, being then but nine months old.

Q. Who was intrusted with the government of the kingdom, during the minority of the infant prince?

A. *John*, duke of *Bedford*, his uncle, was appointed protector or guardian of the realm; and, in the absence of that prince, *Humphrey*, duke of *Gloucester*, his other uncle, was invested with the same authority; while the person and education of the young king was committed to *Henry Beaufort*, bishop of *Winchester*, his great-uncle, the legitimated son of *John of Gaunt*, duke of *Lancaster*.

Q. What

Q. What was the state of this prince's dominions at the time of his accession?

A. *England* and *Ireland* enjoyed a profound tranquility; and the duke of *Bedford*, who commanded the *English* forces in *France*, seemed to be in a fair way of making an entire conquest of that kingdom. Young *Henry* had been recognized king of *France* as well as of *England*. *Charles VII.* indeed had succeeded his father on the throne of *France*; but he seemed altogether unable to maintain himself in that high station.

Q. Did the event answer these expectations?

A. The *English* defeated the *French*, first at *Crevant*, then at *Verneuil*, and afterwards in the battle of *Herrings*, and dispossessed them of so many fortresses, that *Charles* was almost driven to the other side of the *Loire*; and had they been able to reduce *Orleans*, they would probably have obliged him to abandon the kingdom?

Q. When did they lay siege to that city?

A. On the 12th of *October*, 1428, and carried on their attacks with such vigour and success, that the place seemed just upon the point of being surrendered, when it was effectually saved by a most unexpected incident.

Q. What was that?

A. One *Joan d'Arc*, a country girl of twenty-seven years of age, born in the village of *Domremi* in *Lorraine*, and servant in a small inn in that place, came to *Chinon*, where king *Charles* resided, and told him, that she was sent expressly by heaven, in order to raise the siege of *Orleans*, and afterwards to conduct him to *Rheims*, and cause him to be crowned in that city.

Q. What credit did *Charles* give to her declaration?

A. 'Tis hard to say, (such was the ignorance of the age) whether he was convinced of the truth of her mission, or only thought her a hot-headed enthusiast, who might be of some service to his cause; certain it is, he affected to believe her, especially as her pretensions were declared to be well-founded by an assembly of divines, and by the parliament of the kingdom. Accordingly, he gave the *Maid of Orleans* (for by that name she is known in history) a strong body of forces, at the head of which she penetrated through the *English* camp, entered *Orleans* in triumph, and having driven

driven the enemy from all their redoubts, in which engagements they lost about 6000 men, she compelled them, *May 8th, 1429*, to raise the siege with great precipitation. The defeat of the *English* was principally ascribed to the unaccountable panic with which they were seized, from the groundless apprehension that they were to encounter a witch.

Q. What enterprize did the *Maid of Orleans* next undertake?

A. She pursued the *English* with the utmost expedition; dispossessed them of *Jergeau, Troye, Chalons, Laon, Soissons,* and *Provins*; defeated them at *Patay*, and several other places; took *Suffolk, Talbot,* and *Scales*, their generals, prisoners; and having conducted *Charles* to *Rheims*, she caused him, agreeable to her promise, to be crowned in that city. In a word, the face of affairs between the two nations was now entirely reversed; and the *French* were become as formidable to the *English*, as the *English* had formerly been to the *French*.

Q. What became of this heroine afterwards?

A. She was taken prisoner in a sally made upon the *English* at the siege of *Compeigne* the 25th of *May, 1430*, and being carried to *Rouen*, she was there tried by an assembly of *French* prelates, who condemned her to be burnt as a witch; and this sentence was accordingly executed in the market-place of *Rouen*, the 14th of *June, 1431*. Her death, however, produced no alteration in the state of affairs in *France*, as her enemies had at first imagined.

Q. What steps did the duke of *Bedford* take in order to check the progress of the *French* arms?

A. He did every thing that could be expected from the most accomplished general, and the most consummate politician. He held all the *English* garrisons in a posture of defence; he restrained the natives from breaking out into insurrections; he carried over young *Henry* to *Paris*, where he was solemnly crowned king of *France* in the church of *Notre-Dame*, the 17th of *December, 1430*; he reinforced his army with fresh levies from *England* and *Ireland*; and he renewed the alliance with the duke of *Burgundy*, whose friendship was of so much importance. But that prince having soon after abandoned the *English* interest, and concluded a treaty with *Charles* at *Arras*, and the inhabitants of *Paris* returning

to their allegiance under their natural sovereign: the *English*, from that moment, lost ground every day; and, to compleat their misfortunes, the duke of *Bedford*, the regent, a nobleman of great merit and popularity, died at *Rouen* the 14th of *September*, 1435.

Q. Who succeeded him in the regency?

A. *Richard*, duke of *York*, who was soon after followed by the earl of *Warwick*, and this last by *Edmund Beaufort*, earl of *Somerſet*, during whose government the *English* lost all their possessions in *France*.

Q. When were they lost?

A. *Normandy* was subdued in 1450, and *Guienne* in 1451, after this last province had been subject to *England* for upwards of three hundred years.

Q. Did not the *English* endeavour to recover *Guienne*?

A. Lord *Talbot*, the first earl of *Shrewsbury*, was sent into it with a strong body of forces; he made himself master of *Bordeaux*, and some other places; but having been defeated and killed near *Castillon* in 1453, the *English* were again expelled the province, and indeed were deprived of all their other possessions in *France*, except *Calais*, *Guyens*, and their dependencies.

Q. Did the rest of *Henry's* reign pass in tranquility?

A. No; it was continually disturbed by factions and insurrections, arising partly from the ambition of the queen, partly from the discontents of the people, but chiefly from the pretensions of *Richard*, duke of *York*.

Q. Who was *Henry's* queen?

A. *Margaret* of *Anjou*, daughter of *Regnier*, titular king of *Sicily*, *Naples*, and *Jerusalem*. She was a princess of exquisite beauty, of a bold and daring genius, of an extensive capacity and solid understanding; and, besides, was endowed with such a masculine bravery and intrepidity, as would have reflected honour on the greatest captains of the age.

Q. How did she behave after her arrival in *England*?

A. Having first obtained an entire ascendant over the weak mind of her husband, she took upon herself the administration of affairs, and entered into close connections with the bishop of *Winchester*, and the dukes of *Somerſet*, *Suffolk*, and *Buckingham*, who were all of them mortal enemies to the good *Humphrey*, duke of *Gloucester*.

Q. How

Q. How did they express their resentment against this virtuous prince ?

A. They first had his wife tried for witchcraft, of which, it is said, she was found guilty, and she was accordingly condemned to do public penance, and to suffer perpetual banishment : they then caused himself to be seized and assassinated, on the groundless pretence of his having formed a design against the life of his sovereign. Several other persons likewise were accused as his accomplices, and were condemned to be hanged, drawn, and quartered. They were hanged, and cut down ; but just as the executioner was proceeding to quarter them, their pardon was produced, and they were recovered to life. A striking instance of the barbarity of the age !

Q. What step did the queen and her associates next take ?

A. *William de la Pole*, duke of *Suffolk*, was advanced to the dignity of prime minister ; but this nobleman having soon after fallen a sacrifice to popular fury, his place was supplied by *Edmund Beaufort*, duke of *Somerset*, a man, if possible, still more odious to the *English* nation, because, during his regency, they had lost all their possessions in *France*.

Q. What was the consequence of these violent measures ?

A. The people were inflamed with such a spirit of discontent, that they rose up in arms under one *John Cade*, a native of *Ireland*, who assumed the name of *John Mortimer*, a circumstance that revived the pretensions of the *York* family.

Q. What were the pretensions of *Richard*, duke of *York* ?

A. He was son to *Richard*, earl of *Cambridge*, beheaded for rebellion in 1415, and grandson to *Edmund de Langley*, duke of *York*, the fifth son of *Edward III.* He was likewise, by the mother's side, sole heir of the house of *Mortimer*, or *Marche*, which house descended from *Lionel*, duke of *Clarence*, second son of *Edward III.* and elder brother to *John of Gaunt*, duke of *Lancaster*, from whom the present king was sprung. Thus, in right of his father, he was first prince of the blood ; in right of his mother, he was true lineal heir to the crown.

Q. What steps did he take to make good his pretensions ?

A. He collected a body of forces, and, without coming to an action, compelled the king to declare him protector ; but being soon after deprived of this authority, he re-assembled



bled his troops, attacked and defeated the royal army at *St. Alban's* on the 22d of *May*, 1455, took king *Henry* prisoner, and caused himself to be restored to the protectorship, not thinking it safe to proceed any farther.

Q. How long did he continue in this high station?

A. The queen, resenting the indignity which had been offered to her husband, assembled, in a little time, a good body of troops, marched forth against the duke and his adherents; and after losing two battles, the first at *Blore-heatb*, the 23d of *September*, 1459, the second at *Northampton*, the 10th of *July*, 1460; she attacked and defeated the *Yorkists* at *Wakefield*, the 24th of *December* of the same year, killed the protector and his second son, the young earl of *Rutland*, who was then but seventeen years of age, and ordered their heads, together with that of the earl of *Salisbury*, to be fixed on the walls of *York*.

Q. Did this victory put an end to the war?

A. No; *Edward*, earl of *March*, eldest son to the late duke of *York*, and who had succeeded his father in that title, and *Richard Nevil*, the brave earl of *Warwick*, assembled the remains of the scattered army, with which they routed the royal forces at *Mortimer's-Cross*; but this advantage was soon counter-balanced by a defeat they sustained in a second battle which was fought at *St. Alban's*, where the *Yorkists* are said to have lost above 2000 men, and the king fell again into the hands of his own party. Nevertheless, *Edward*, having compelled the queen to retire into the northern counties, proceeded directly to *London*, where, on the 5th day of *March*, 1461, he was proclaimed king of *England*.

Q. How old was *Henry* at the time of his being dethroned?

A. Thirty-nine years and about three months. By his queen *Margaret* he had only one son, named *Edward*, who was in the ninth year of his age when his father was deposed.

Q. What is the character of *Henry*?

A. He was a prince of the most simple and inoffensive manners, but possessed of such weak and narrow intellects as utterly disqualified him for the high station in which he was placed.

Q. What were the most remarkable events that happened in the other parts of *Europe* during this reign?

A. In 1453, *Mahomet II.* invested *Constantinople* with an army

army of 400,000 men, and after a siege of fifty-four days, took it by assault. This put an end to the *Grecian* or eastern empire.

## HOUSE of YORK.

## CHAP. XXXIV.

EDWARD IV. XXXV<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1461 to 1483.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of Denmark and Sweden.</i>	
PIUS II.	1458		
PAUL II.	1464	CHRISTIAN I.	1448
SIXTUS IV.	1471	JOHN	1481
<i>Emperor.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
FREDERICK IV.	1440	ALONSO V.	1438
<i>King of France.</i>		<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
LEWIS IX.	1461	JOHN II.	1481
<i>Sovereigns of Spain.</i>		JAMES III.	1460
FERDINAND and ISABELLA	* 1479		

Q. DID *Edward* enjoy his crown in tranquility?

A. No; queen *Margaret* having levied an army of 60,000 men in the northern counties, began to advance towards the south, but being met at *Touton* by *Edward* and the earl of *Warwick*, at the head of 40,000 men, the two armies came to an engagement, on the 29th day of *May*, 1461, when, after a fierce and bloody battle, in which there are said to have fallen above 36,000 men, *Edward* obtained a complete victory, *Margaret* and her husband being both of them obliged to fly into *Scotland*.

Q. What reception did they meet with in that kingdom?

A. A very favourable one; though this she purchased by delivering up *Berwick* to *James III.* king of *Scots*, who was then a minor.

\* At this period, the crowns of *Arragon*, *Leon*, and *Castile*, were united on the heads of *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, who assumed the title of king and queen of *Spain*.

Q. Did

Q. Did she procure any assistance from that prince?

A. She received a good body of troops, which having reinforced with a party of *French*, she entered *Northumberland* in 1464.

Q. What was the issue of this enterprize?

A. She was attacked at *Hexham*, on the 15th of *May*, by *John Nevil*, baron of *Montacute*, who, though at the head of a much inferior army, entirely defeated her forces.

Q. What became of queen *Margaret* afterwards.

A. Her fate was very singular: she fled with her son into a forest, where she endeavoured to conceal herself, but was beset, during the darkness of the night, by robbers, who stripped her of her rings and jewels, and treated her with the utmost indignity. The division of this rich booty raised a quarrel among them; and while their attention was thus engaged, she took an opportunity of making her escape with her son into the thickest of the forest, where she wandered for some time, over-spent with hunger and fatigue, and sunk with terror and affliction. While in this wretched condition, she saw a robber approach with his naked sword; and finding no means of escape, she suddenly embraced the resolution of trusting entirely for her protection to his faith and generosity. She therefore advanced towards him, and presenting to him the young prince, called out to him, *Here, my friend, I commit to your care the safety of your king's son.* The man, who, notwithstanding his vicious course of life, had still some sentiments of humanity, was struck with pity for her unhappy condition, and vowed, not only to abstain from all injury against her person, but to devote himself entirely to her safety. He accordingly concealed her for some time in the forest, and at last conducted her to the sea-coast; whence she made her escape into *Flanders*, and thence to the court of the duke of *Anjou*, her father.

Q. What became of king *Henry*, her husband?

A. He too endeavoured to conceal himself in *England*; but being discovered and seized, he was thrown into the *Tower*.

Q. Did this victory establish *Edward* in the quiet possession of the throne?

A. It would probably have done so, had it not been for an imprudent step which he soon after took.

Q. What was that?

A. His

*A.* His marriage with *Elizabeth Widewille*, widow of Sir *John Gray*, of *Groby*, and daughter to *Joqueline de Luxembourg*, dutchess dowager of *Bedford*, and Sir *Richard Widewille*, afterwards created earl *Rivers* and countess of *England*.

Q. What gave occasion to this marriage?

*A.* *Edward* having gone to pay a visit to the dutchess dowager of *Bedford*, was so struck with the beauty of her daughter *Elizabeth*, that, finding it impossible to conquer his passion, or to gratify it in an unlawful manner, he immediately raised her to his bed and throne.

Q. What rendered this marriage so imprudent?

*A.* The disgust which it gave to the nobility in general, and particularly to the earl of *Warwick*, to whom *Edward* owed, in a great measure, his advancement to the throne.

Q. How did it disgust the nobility in general?

*A.* They were provoked to see all power and credit engrossed by the queen and her relations, and themselves and their friends entirely excluded.

Q. How did it disgust the earl of *Warwick* in particular?

*A.* That nobleman had, a little before, been sent by *Edward* to *Paris*, in order to demand for him in marriage *Bona of Savoy*, sister-in-law to *Lewis XI.* of *France*; but just as the nuptials were upon the point of being concluded, *Edward*, who had now espoused *Elizabeth Widewille*, sent orders to the earl to break off the treaty; a circumstance, which provoked *Warwick* to such a degree, that he resolved to take vengeance for the affront put upon him. With this view, he entered into an association with the marquis of *Montacute*, and the archbishop of *York*, his brother, and with the duke of *Clarence*, his son-in-law, and brother to king *Edward*.

Q. What steps did the confederates take in order to execute their project?

*A.* 'Tis difficult to say what were the first measures they embraced. There is no part, indeed, of the *English* history so obscure as that of the war between the two *Roses* (for so the war between the houses of *York* and *Lancaster* was called, the former having assumed the *White Rose*, and the latter the *Red*, as badges of distinction.) Historians, in particular, have fallen into the grossest mistakes at this very period.

Q. What



Elizabeth Woodville at the  
Feet of Edward the 4<sup>th</sup>

J. Wallis delin.

J. Blott sculp.



1840. The artist's name is  
not known.

Q. What are these mistakes ?

A. They say, that in 1469, *Edward* was taken prisoner by *Clarence* and *Warwick*, and was committed to the custody of the archbishop of *York*; but being allowed to take the diversion of hunting by this prelate, he made his escape, and afterwards chased the rebels out of the kingdom. But that all this story is false appears evidently from *Rymer*, one of the best authorities of that age.

Q. What is the most probable account ?

A. 'Tis certain, that in 1470, *Warwick* and *Clarence*, raised troops in their own name, and issued a declaration against the government; but not being joined by the other confederates, they were obliged to dissolve their army, and to fly into *France*.

Q. Did this disappointment effectually ruin their scheme ?

A. No; they returned towards the latter end of the same year, and having assembled an army 60,000 strong, they compelled king *Edward* to fly into *Holland*, and restored *Henry* to the throne on the 14th day of *October*. They then summoned a parliament, in which *Edward* was declared an usurper; he and his adherents were attainted, and all their possessions confiscated.

Q. Did affairs remain long in this situation ?

A. King *Edward* returned to *England* on the 25th day of *March*, 1471, and landing at *Ravenspur* in *Yorkshire* with a body of 2000 men, he was soon able to levy an army, with which he encountered *Warwick* at *Barnet* on the 14th of *April* of the same year, when, after a fierce and bloody dispute, the earl lost both the battle and his life, as did also the marquis of *Montacute*, his brother; upon which *Henry* was again taken prisoner and thrown into the *Tower*, and *Edward* once more ascended the throne.

Q. Did the *Lancastrians* make no farther attempt to retrieve their affairs ?

A. Queen *Margaret* was still at the head of a powerful army, commanded by her son, prince *Edward*, a promising youth of eighteen years of age, the duke of *Somerset*, the earls of *Devonshire* and *Pembroke*, the lords *Wenlock* and *St. John*, and other persons of distinction.

Q. What success did they meet with ?

*A.* On the 4th day of *May*, they were attacked by *Edward* near *Tewkesbury*, and entirely defeated. *Edward*, prince of *Wales*, with the queen his mother, were made prisoners; the earl of *Devonshire* and lord *Wenlock* were killed in the battle; the duke of *Somerset* was taken and beheaded; and the earl of *Pembroke*, with his nephew, the young earl of *Richmond*, was obliged to fly into *Brittany*.

Q. What became of the royal family after this disaster?

*A.* The prince of *Wales* was barbarously murdered by king *Edward's* brother, the duke of *Gloucester*, and others: queen *Margaret* was thrown into the *Tower*, and detained in that prison till the year 1475, when she recovered her liberty, at the intercession of *Lewis*, king of *France*, who engaged to pay 50,000 crowns for her ransom. As to king *Henry* himself, he died in the *Tower*, immediately after the battle of *Tewkesbury*. His death was sudden, and, as is generally supposed, violent: the common opinion was, that the duke of *Gloucester* killed him with his own hands.

Q. Was king *Edward* satisfied with these sacrifices?

*A.* No; as he was of a cruel disposition, he put to death a great number of gentlemen (some say, no less than 1400) for adhering to the interest of the *Lancastrian* party, and, to complete the measure of his savage barbarity, he caused his own brother, the duke of *Clarence*, to be thrown into the *Tower*, and drowned in a butt of malmsey.

Q. For what reason?

*A.* Because he had spoke, in the heat of passion, with too much freedom against the measures of the government, and had even reflected on *Edward's* legitimacy. Add to this, that he had incurred the hatred of his sister-in-law, queen *Elizabeth*, and of his brother, the duke of *Gloucester*, who, as he aspired to the crown after the death of king *Edward*, now took this method of preparing his way for the attainment of that high dignity.

Q. Did *Edward* perform any other memorable actions?

*A.* He obliged *James III.* king of *Scots*, to deliver up *Berwick*, which *Henry VI.* had put into his hands; and he afterwards invaded *France* with a powerful army.

Q. What success did he meet with in this enterprize?

*A.* It was very unequal to the expence of the expedition; for the count de *St. Pol*, constable of *France*, who had promised



mised to assist him, having broke his word, and *Charles*, duke of *Burgundy*, who had likewise engaged to join him, having failed in his promise, *Edward* was easily persuaded to agree to a peace; the first overtures of which were made by *Lewis XI.* and which was concluded in their interview at *Pequigni*, the 29th of *August*, 1475. The principal articles of it were, that *Lewis* should immediately pay to *Edward*, the sum of 75,000 crowns; that he should continue, for the future, during the term of their joint lives, to pay him an annuity of 50,000 crowns; and that the dauphin, when of age, should marry *Edward's* eldest daughter.

Q. Did *Lewis* perform these articles?

A. No; upon which *Edward* began to prepare for a second invasion of *France*; but just as he was upon the point of setting out on the expedition, he was seized with a violent fever, which put a period to his life on the 9th of *April*, 1483, being the forty-second year of his age, and the twenty-third of his reign.

Q. What is the character of *Edward IV.*?

A. He was a prince of the most elegant person and insinuating address; his courage was greater than his prudence, and his good fortune greater than both: in times of prosperity, he devoted himself entirely to his pleasures; in adverse circumstances, no man was capable of exerting greater spirit, vigour, and activity: in nine battles, where he fought in person, he was victorious in all: but, as he was of a cruel and vindictive temper, the laurels, which he gained in the field, were stained and disgraced by the streams of noble blood, which he shed upon the scaffold.

Q. How many children had *Edward*?

A. By his queen *Elizabeth*, he had three sons and seven daughters, viz. *Edward*, who succeeded him on the throne; *Richard*, duke of *York*; *George*, who died in his infancy; *Elizabeth*, afterwards married to *Henry VII.* king of *England*; *Mary*, betrothed to the king of *Denmark*, who died before marriage; *Cecily*, first married to *John*, viscount *Wells*, and afterwards to *Sir John Kyme*; *Margaret*, who died an infant; *Anne*, married to *Thomas Howard*, duke of *Norfolk*; *Bridget*, who took the veil; and *Catharine*, married to *William Courtney*, earl of *Devonshire*. His natural children were, *Arthur Plantagenet*, viscount *Lisle*, born of *Elizabeth Lucy*; and *Elizabeth*

*Elizabeth Plantagenet*, married to *Thomas lord Lumley*; another *Elizabeth*, by *Catharine Clawenger*; and *Ijabel Mylbery*, married to a brother of lord *Audely*.

Q. Had not *Edward* several mistresses?

A. Yes; but he was particularly enamoured of three, of whom *Jane Shore* was the chief. The first (he said) was the merriest woman in the world, the second the most witty, and the third the most holy, because she never stirred out of church, except when he sent for her.

## C H A P. XXXV.

EDWARD V. XXXVI<sup>th</sup> King of England.

1483.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of Denmark and Sweden.</i>	
SIXTUS IV.	1471		
<i>Emperor.</i>		JOHN	1481
FREDERIC IV.	1440	<i>King of Portugal.</i>	
<i>King of France.</i>		JOHN II.	1481
CHARLES VIII.	1483	<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Sovereigns of Spain.</i>		JAMES III.	1460
FERDINAND and ISABELLA.	1479		

Q. WHO succeeded *Edward IV*?

A. *Edward V.* his eldest son, who began his reign in 1483, being then only twelve years of age.

Q. How long did he reign?

A. But two months and sixteen days; both himself and his brother being barbarously murdered by their uncle, the protector, *Richard*, duke of *Gloucester*, who afterwards usurped the throne.

Q. What steps did *Gloucester* take in order to effect his wicked purpose?

A. He first engaged in his interest *Henry Stafford*, duke of *Buckingham*, a man of ample possessions, of great alliances, and of shining parts, but of a profligate and abandoned character. He then put to death lord *Hastings*, the cham-





*The 2 Dowager of R Edward 4<sup>th</sup> parting with  
the D of York.*

berlain, because he refused to concur in his measures. And he acted the same part towards the earl of *Rivers*, the king's uncle, Sir *Richard Gray*, his maternal brother, and Sir *John Vaughan*.

Q. What did the queen do upon receiving the news of these violent proceedings?

A. She took sanctuary in *Westminster-Abbey*, with her son, the duke of *York*, and all his other children; but being strongly solicited to deliver up the duke, and even threatened with violence in case of refusal, she at last surrendered him, though with extreme reluctance, into the hands of the ministers.

Q. How did *Gloucester* dispose of the two princes?

A. He carried them to the *Tower*, where the kings of *England* used commonly to reside before their coronation; but he had no sooner lodged them in that fortress, than he determined at once to accomplish his scheme.

Q. In what manner?

A. He spread a report, to the disgrace of his mother, who was still alive, and was a princess of the most irreproachable virtue, that the late king, and the duke of *Clarence*, his brother, were the fruit of her unlawful amours; that he himself was the only legitimate son of the duke of *York*, and ought therefore to succeed him: and he further added, that the princes, his nephews, were either spurious, or of very doubtful birth.

Q. Did he use any particular means to inforce this topic?

A. He employed Dr. *Sbarw*, the mayor's brother, to preach on the subject in *St. Paul's church*, hoping, that when he himself entered the assembly, the people would salute him king; but, to his great surprize, they observed a profound silence. He then ordered the duke of *Buckingham* to harangue the citizens, (who were assembled by the mayor) in expectation, that, moved by his grace's eloquence, they would proclaim him king; but this attempt proved as unsuccessful as the former. At last, some of the meanest apprentices, incited by the protector's and *Buckingham's* servants, raised a feeble cry of *God Save King Richard*; and this was immediately laid hold of as a general and national consent.

Q. What did the protector's friends next do?

*A.* They repaired to *Baynard's* castle, where that prince resided, and made him a tender of the crown. At first he affected to reject the offer; but being strongly importuned by *Buckingham* and the mayor, he was at last persuaded to comply.

*Q.* What became of the two young princes?

*A.* They were barbarously murdered a few days after the coronation.

*Q.* Relate the particulars of this horrid action.

*A.* *Richard* sent orders to *Sir Robert Brakenbury*, constable of the *Tower*, to put the princes to death; but that gentleman refusing to have any hand in the infamous office, *Richard* commanded him to resign the government of the *Tower* to *Sir James Tyrrel*, for one night only. This ruffian, choosing three associates, *Slater*, *Dighton*, and *Forrest*, came in the night-time to the door of the chamber where the princes were lodged, and sending in the assassins, he bid them execute their commissions, while he himself stayed without. They found the young princes in bed, and fallen into a sound sleep: after suffocating them with the bolster and pillows, they shewed their naked bodies to *Tyrrel*, who caused them to be buried at the stair-foot, deep in the ground, under a heap of stones. These circumstances were all confessed by the actors in the reign of *Henry VII.* and they were never punished for their crime. The bones of the princes were discovered in 1674, and were removed, by order of *Charles II.* to *Westminster-Abbey*, where they were interred among the remains of the *English* monarchs. A monument was afterwards erected to their memory.

## C H A P. XXXVI.

RICHARD III. *surnamed* Crook-back,XXXVII<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1483 to 1485.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of Denmark and</i>	
SIXTUS IV.	1471	Sweden.	
INNOCENT VIII.	1484	JOHN	1481
<i>Emperor.</i>			
FREDERIC IV.	1440	<i>King of Portugal.</i>	
<i>King of France.</i>		JOHN II.	1481
CHARLES VIII.	1483	<i>King of Scotland.</i>	
<i>Sovereigns of Spain.</i>		JAMES III.	1460
FERDINAND and ISABELLA	1479		

Q. WHAT were the first acts of *Richard* the Third's reign?

A. The bestowing favours upon those who had helped him to usurp the crown, particularly on the duke of *Buckingham*, who obtained possession of the whole *Hereford* estate.

Q. Did harmony long subsist between the king and this powerful subject?

A. No; *Buckingham*, being offended at some slight he had received from *Richard*, concerted a scheme for deposing that tyrant, and raising to the throne *Henry*, earl of *Richmond*, who was then in *Bretagne*.

Q. From whom was the earl of *Richmond* sprung?

A. He was the son of *Margaret*, countess of *Richmond*, great grand-daughter of *John* of *Gaunt*, duke of *Lancaster*, by a spurious line, but legitimated by act of parliament; and as all the legitimate branches of the *Lancastrian* race were now extinct, *Richmond* was thus the sole representative of that royal family.

Q. What was the nature of *Buckingham's* scheme?

*A.* The chief circumstance of it was, that *Richmond* should espouse the princess *Elizabeth*, eldest daughter of *Edward IV.* by which means the titles of *York* and *Lancaster* would be happily united.

Q. Did this scheme prove successful?

*A.* It did in the end, though it at first met with a very untoward accident.

Q. What was that?

*A.* King *Richard* having discovered the plot, summoned the duke of *Buckingham* to repair to court, when that nobleman, instead of obeying the orders, assembled his forces; but being deserted by his army, he took refuge in the house of an old servant of his, named *Bannister*, who betrayed him; after which he was carried to *Shrewsbury*, and there beheaded.

Q. What did the earl of *Richmond* do upon receiving the news of this disaster?

*A.* Not in the least discouraged by this intelligence, he resolved immediately to come over to *England*. With this view, he procured a body of 2000 men from *Charles VIII.* of *France*, to whose court he had gone; and setting sail from *Harfleur* on the 30th of *July*, 1485, he landed, after a safe passage, at *Milford-Haven* in *Wales*.

Q. What reception did he there meet with?

*A.* He was instantly joined by a good body of *Welsh* forces under the command of *Sir Thomas ap Rice*. The lord *Stanley* too, and his brother *Sir William*, raised an army of 7000 men, with which they proposed to assist him.

Q. How did the king act when he heard of this invasion?

*A.* He immediately marched out to encounter the enemy, and coming up with them at *Bosworth* near *Leicester*, on the 22d of *August*, 1485, a battle ensued, in which king *Richard's* army was routed, and himself lost his life.

Q. What became of his body?

*A.* Being found among the dead, stark-naked, and covered with wounds, filth, and blood, it was thrown carelessly across a horse, was carried to *Leicester*, amidst the shouts of the insulting spectators, and was privately interred in the *Gray-Friar's* church of that place; though



*Henry*, in respect to his family, ordered a monument to be erected over his grave.

Q. What is the character of *Richard*?

A. It is but too evident from the history of his reign. He was one of the most cruel, treacherous, and blood-thirsty tyrants that ever disgraced the *English* throne. Nor were the members of his body less deformed than the qualities of his mind. His stature was small, his aspect cloudy, severe, and forbidding; one of his arms was withered, and one shoulder higher than the other, whence he acquired the surname of *Crook-back*. It must be owned, however, that he had great personal courage; possessed an uncommon degree of sagacity and penetration; and caused justice to be exactly administered, except where his own interest was concerned.

Q. Was *Richard* ever married?

A. Yes; to *Anne*, second daughter of *Richard Nevil*, the great earl of *Warwick*; she died in 1484, of poison, as is supposed, given her by her husband. *Richard* had by her one son, named *Edward*, whom he created prince of *Wales*, and who died a little before his mother. He had likewise two illegitimate children, *John of Gloucester*, and *Catharine*, married to *William*, earl of *Huntington*.

Q. Did not *Richard* inflict some severe punishment on *Jane Shore*?

A. He accused her of having practised against his life by sorcery and witchcraft; but finding it impossible to convict her of this crime, he ordered her to be tried in the spiritual court, for her adulteries and lewdness; and she accordingly did penance at *St. Paul's* church, in a white sheet, and with a burning taper in her hand, before the whole people.

C H A P. XXXVII.

UNION of the HOUSES of YORK  
and LANCASTER.

*Or Kings of the Family of TUDOR.*

HENRY VII. XXXVIII<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1485 to 1509.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Sovereigns of Spain.</i>	
INNOCENT VIII.	1484	FERDINAND and ISABELLA	1479
ALEXANDER VI.	1492	<i>King of Denmark and</i>	
PIUS III.	1503	<i>Sweden.</i>	
JULIUS II.	1503	JOHN	1481
<i>Emperors.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
FREDERIC IV.	1440	JOHN II.	1481
MAXIMILIAN I.	1493	EMANUEL	1495
<i>Kings of France.</i>		<i>Kings of Scotland.</i>	
CHARLES VIII.	1483	JAMES III.	1460
LEWIS XII.	1498	JAMES IV.	1489

Q. WHAT was the consequence of the battle of *Bosworth*?

A. The earl of *Richmond*, immediately after the action, was saluted king by his whole army; and this title he thenceforth assumed under the name of *Henry VII.* He began his reign in 1485.

Q. What pretensions had he to the crown?

A. He was (as I have observed in the preceding chapter) the sole representative of the house of *Lancaster*; and by his marriage with the princess *Elizabeth*, eldest daughter of *Edward IV.* which he celebrated soon after his coronation, he united in his posterity the titles of the two rival families.

Q. Did not *Henry* introduce a novelty at his coronation?

A. He

*A.* He instituted a body-guard of fifty archers, called yeomen, to be in continual attendance upon his person; and this band has been kept up by all his successors, who have encreased the number to one hundred, besides seventy supernumeraries; and when any one of the hundred dies, his place is filled up from among the seventy.

*Q.* Did *Henry* enjoy a peaceable reign?

*A.* No; it was continually disturbed by factions and insurrections, which were chiefly fomented by the friends of the *York* party, who employed, as their instruments, two adventurers, called *Lambert Simmel*, and *Perkin Warbeck*.

*Q.* Who was *Lambert Simmel*?

*A.* He was a young student in the university of *Oxford*, and son to a baker. As he was a youth of bright parts, and genteel address, and resembled extremely the young earl of *Warwick*, (son to the late duke of *Clarence*) who was imprisoned in the *Tower*, it was determined to make him personate that nobleman. For this purpose, one *Richard Simon*, a priest of *Oxford*, a man of some subtlety, and still more ambition, undertook to instruct him. When he was thought to be properly qualified for the part he was to act, he was carried over, by his tutor, to *Ireland*, where he was instantly recognized as earl of *Warwick*; and the people, who adored the memory of *Clarence*, who had been their lord-lieutenant, not satisfied with this mark of attachment to his supposed son, proceeded immediately to crown him king of *England*, at *Christ-Church* in *Dublin*.

*Q.* Did not this declaration of the *Irish* in his favour procure him some other friends?

*A.* He was acknowledged by *Margaret* of *York*, dutches dowager of *Burgundy*, and sister to *Edward IV.* a professed enemy to the house of *Lancaster*, who sent him a body of 2000 *Germans*; and he was soon after joined by *John de la Pole*, earl of *Lincoln*, (son to the earl of *Suffolk*, and to *Elizabeth*, eldest sister of *Edward IV.*) as also by the lord *Lovel*, and several other noblemen.

*Q.* How did he improve these advantages?

*A.* Finding himself at the head of a considerable army, he passed over to *England* in 1487, but being encountered by the king's forces, at a village called *Stoke* in *Nottinghamshire*, his troops were entirely routed, and himself and

his tutor taken prisoners. The tutor was committed to close custody, and was never heard of more. As to *Simmel* himself, he was too contemptible to excite either the apprehension or resentment of *Henry*. He was therefore pardoned, and made a scullion in the king's kitchen, whence he was afterwards advanced to the rank of a falconer.

Q Who was *Perkin Warbeck*?

A. He was the son of one *Osbek* or *Warbeck*, a converted Jew of *Tournay*, and of *Catharine de la Fare*, who, having come over to *England* about some business in the reign of *Edward IV.* had there this child born to them, to whom they gave the name of *Peter*, corrupted, after the *Flemish* manner, into *Peter-kin* or *Perkin*. The youth spoke the *English* language with great fluency, had an elegant shape, a beautiful countenance, a graceful air, and a courtly address; in a word, was possessed of so many accomplishments, that it was resolved, by the friends of the *York* party, to pass him upon the world for *Richard*, duke of *York*, brother to *Edward V.* both of whom (we have observed) were murdered in the *Tower*, by order of their uncle, *Richard III.* It was now pretended, however, that the assassins, after putting to death the elder brother, were struck with such remorse for the crime they had committed, that they spared the life of the younger, and allowed him to escape.

Q Who laid the plan of this imposture?

A. The dutchess dowager of *Burgundy*, who, rather irritated than discouraged by the bad success of *Simmel's* adventure, resolved to make one effort more for disturbing the government of *Henry VII.* whom she mortally hated.

Q What steps did she take for this purpose?

A. She instructed *Perkin* in the part he was to act; and when she thought he was properly qualified, she sent him into *Portugal*, the better to conceal her design from the world.

Q How long did he continue in that kingdom?

A. About a twelvemonth; at the end of which a war breaking out between *Henry VII.* and *Charles VIII.* of *France*, the latter invited *Perkin* to his court, where he was received as duke of *York*; but a peace being soon after concluded, *Perkin* was obliged to abandon that country.

Q Whither

Q. Whither did he retire next?

A. He went to the dutchefs of *Burgundy* in *Flanders*, and craving her protection and assistance, offered to lay before her all the proofs of his royal birth.

Q. How did the dutchefs behave upon this occasion?

A. She affected to be entirely ignorant of his pretensions; even put on the appearance of distrust; seemed to examine every circumstance with the most scrupulous nicety; asked him a great many questions; pretended astonishment at his answers; and, at last, after long and severe scrutiny, burst out into joy and admiration at his wonderful delivery, embraced him as her nephew, the true image of *Edward*, the sole heir of the *Plantagenets*, and the legitimate successor of the *English* throne.

Q. Did she give him any assistance?

A. She enabled him to make a descent, first in *Kent*, and afterwards in *Ireland*; but *Perkin* not succeeding in either of these enterprizes, retired, with a few followers, into *Scotland*.

Q. What reception did he meet with in that kingdom?

A. A very favourable one. *James IV.* who then governed *Scotland*, seems even to have believed the story of his birth, and gave him in marriage *Catharine Gordon*, daughter to the earl of *Huntley*, and a near relation of his own. He likewise assisted him in making two invasions into *England*; but both these attempts proving unsuccessful, *James* ordered *Perkin* to depart his kingdom; and concluded a peace in 1497.

Q. Whither did the impostor next go?

A. Into *Ireland*; where hearing the year following, that the inhabitants of *Cornwall* had taken up arms, he repaired into that county, assembled a body of 3000 men, and laid siege to *Exeter*; but being informed, that the king was advancing with an army, he suddenly abandoned the enterprize, and took sanctuary in the monastery of *Beuley*, in the *New Forest*.

Q. What became of him after this?

A. He was persuaded, upon promise of pardon, to leave the sanctuary, and was committed to close custody. He afterwards made his escape, and took refuge in the monastery of *Shyne*: he was again taken prisoner, and thrown

into the *Tower*; but having entered into a conspiracy with the earl of *Warwick*, (who was confined in the same place) to effect his escape, by murdering the lieutenant, *Perkin* was hanged at *Tyburn*, and the earl beheaded. *Henry* pretended, that he had sacrificed this young nobleman merely to satisfy the jealousy of *Ferdinand* of *Arragon*, who refused to bestow the infanta *Catharine*, his daughter, on the prince of *Wales*, while *Warwick* remained alive. But this apology, instead of lessening, served only to increase the odium of the action.

Q. What other remarkable events happened in this reign?

A. The people of the North, provoked at a tax which was imposed rather to gratify the king's avarice than to answer the demands of the government, rose up in arms, and setting Sir *John Egremont* at their head, marched towards *London*; but they were vanquished by the earl of *Surry*, and forced to submit. Sir *John Egremont* fled into *Brittany*; some of the other ringleaders were taken and executed. The inhabitants of *Cornwall* likewise raised an insurrection on the same account, elected lord *Audley* for their general, and advanced quite to *Blackbeath*, where they were defeated. The people were dismissed without any punishment. *Audley* and two others were executed.

Q. Had *Henry* any foreign wars to maintain?

A. He pretended to engage in a war against *France*, in order to prevent *Charles VIII.* from espousing the heiress of *Brittany*, and thereby acquiring possession of that rich dutchy. He actually went over to *France*, with an army of 27,000 men; but as his sole intention was to procure money from his parliament, he accepted of the first offers that were made him by *Charles*, and concluded a peace in 1492.

Q. Of what disease did *Henry* die?

A. Of a consumption, the 22d of *April*, 1509, in the twenty-fourth year of his reign, and the fifty-second of his age. He was interred in *Westminster Abbey*, in a chapel which he himself had built for that purpose, and which is justly looked upon as the finest structure of the kind in *England*.

Q. Describe the person and qualities of *Henry*.

A. He

*A.* He was tall, strait, and well-shaped, though slender ; of a grave aspect, and saturnine complexion ; austere in address, and reserved in conversation, except when he had a favourite point to gain, and then no man was ever more eloquent or persuasive. He loved peace, without fearing war ; though filled with the continual suspicions of his servants and ministers, he discovered no timidity either in the conduct of his affairs, or in the day of battle ; and though often severe in his punishments, he was commonly less actuated by revenge than by the maxims of policy. He possessed, in a peculiar manner, the art of turning all his domestic troubles, and all his foreign disputes, to his own advantage : hence he acquired the appellation of the *English Solomon*, and was universally allowed to be the wisest crowned head at that time in *Europe*. It must be confessed, however, that, with all his good qualities, he was insatiably covetous ; and this passion he gratified always at the expence of his people's happiness, sometimes to the endangering of his own peace and tranquility.

*Q.* Who were the chief instruments of his extortions ?

*A.* *Empson* and *Dudley*, two attorneys, who were brought to condign punishment in the ensuing reign.

*Q.* How many children had he ?

*A.* By his queen *Elizabeth*, of the house of *York*, eldest daughter of *Edward IV.* he had four sons, and as many daughters, viz. *Arthur*, who died before him, in the seventeenth year of his age ; *Henry*, who succeeded him on the throne ; and *Edmund* and *Edward*, who both died in their infancy. Of his daughters, *Elizabeth* and *Catharine*, died in their childhood ; *Margaret* espoused *James IV.* king of *Scotland* ; and *Mary*, who had been betrothed to *Charles*, archduke of *Austria*, was married to *Lewis XII.* king of *France* ; and after his death, to *Charles Brandon*, duke of *Suffolk*.

*Q.* What were the most remarkable laws enacted in this reign ?

*A.* Many salutary statutes were made ; but the most important was, that, by which the nobility and gentry were allowed to break the ancient entails, and alienate their estates ; by which means the great fortunes of the barons

were diminished, and the property of the commons considerably encreased.

Q. Did not a strange disease break out in *England* about this time?

A. The sweating-sickness prevailed, a malady unknown to any other age or nation, and which commonly carried off the patient in less than twenty-four hours, and made dreadful havock in *London*, and other parts of the kingdom. But after having raged for a few weeks, it gradually disappeared.

Q. Did *Henry* leave any considerable monuments behind him?

A. Besides the chapel in *Westminster-Abbey*, which I have already mentioned, he rebuilt, in 1498, the royal palace of *Shene*, which had been consumed by fire, and gave it the name of *Richmond*, which it still retains. He likewise founded a chapel in *Windsor*, and several monasteries of *Dominicans* and *Franiscans*. He turned into an hospital the palace of the *Savoy*, built under *Henry III.* by *Peter*, earl of *Savoy*: and he expended 14000*l.* in building a large vessel, called the *Great Harry*, which was, properly speaking, the first ship in the *English* navy.

Q. What other remarkable events happened in this reign?

A. In 1492, *Christopher Columbus*, who was a *Florentine*, engaged in the service of the court of *Spain*, discovered the western world, or *America*. A few years after, *Vasquez de Gama*, a *Portuguese*, passed the *Cape of Good Hope*, and opened a new passage to the *East-Indies*. And in 1498, *Sebastian Cabot*, a *Venetian*, dwelling at *Bristol*, set sail for the west, and discovered *Newfoundland* and *North-America*, from whence he brought home some native *Indians*.



## C H A P. XXXVIII.

H E N R Y VIII. XXXIX<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1509 to 1547.

	<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of Denmark and Sweden.</i>	
JULIUS II.	1503			
LÉO X.	1513	JOHN		1481
ADRIAN VI.	1522	CHRISTIAN II.		1513
CLEMENT VII.	1523		<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
PAUL III.	1534	FREDERICK I.		1524
	<i>Emperors.</i>	CHRISTIAN III.		1533
MAXIMILIAN I.	1493		<i>King of Sweden.</i>	
CHARLES V.	1519	GUSTAVUS VASA *		1522
	<i>Kings of France.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
LEWIS XII.	1498	EMANUEL		1495
FRANCIS I.	1515	JOHN III.		1523
	<i>Kings of Spain.</i>		<i>Kings and Queens of Scotland.</i>	
FERDINAND	1479	JAMES IV.		1498
CHARLES I.	1516	JAMES V.		1514
		MARY		1542

2. WHO succeeded Henry VII?

A. Henry VIII. his only surviving son, who began his reign on the 22d of April, 1509, being then in the eighteenth year of his age.

2. What were the first acts of his government?

A. He immediately assembled his council, in order to deliberate whether he should consummate his marriage with *Catharine of Arragon* (daughter of *Ferdinand*, king of *Spain*) who had formerly been married to his elder brother, *Arthur*; and upon the death of that prince, which happened about six months after his nuptials, had been betrothed to *Henry*. Pope *Julius II.* having granted the necessary dispensations.

\* At this period, *Gustavus Vasa* delivered *Sweden* from the *Danish* yoke, to which it had been so long subject; and, in reward of his services, was raised to the throne of that kingdom.

A. What

Q. What was the occasion of this strange marriage?

A. It was owing to the avarice of *Henry VII.* who, rather than part with *Catharine's* dowry, amounting to 200,000 ducats, obliged his second son to espouse that princess.

Q. What was the opinion of the council?

A. The majority declared for the completion of the marriage; though this measure was strongly opposed by *Warham*, archbishop of *Canterbury*, who affirmed, that the marriage was not allowable by any laws, human or divine. His opinion, however, was over-ruled; the marriage was solemnized in the month of *June*, 1509; and the opposition of the archbishop served only as a handle for obtaining a divorce, as will be seen in the sequel.

Q. Was *Henry* engaged in any wars?

A. In 1512, he entered into a confederacy with pope *Julius II.* the *Spaniards*, and *Venetians*, against *Lewis XII.* of *France*; but the king of *Spain* deceived him, and employed the *English* forces in the conquest of *Navarre*. *Henry*, however, made another league with pope *Leo X.* the emperor *Maximilian*, and *Ferdinand*, king of *Spain*; but he was imposed upon a second time, and obliged to carry on the war singly in *Picardy*, against the *French*.

Q. Did he perform any memorable action there?

A. Not to mention the great honour he received by entertaining in his pay the emperor *Maximilian*, who insisted in his service, wore the cross of *St. George*, and accepted a hundred crowns a day, as one of his subjects and captains, he took *Terouane*, *Tournay*, and some other places; and defeated the enemy in that engagement called *the battle of the Spurs*, fought in the neighbourhood of *Guinegate*, the 18th of *August*, 1413.

Q. Why was it so called?

A. Because the *French* made more use of their spurs than of their swords or military weapons.

Q. How was this war finished?

A. It was concluded by a peace, the 7th of *August* of the ensuing year. The principal articles of it were, that *Henry* should receive a million of crowns to indemnify him for his expences; and that his sister, *Mary*, though only sixteen, should espouse the *French* monarch, who was in  
the

the fifty-third year of his age. The marriage accordingly was solemnized, and consummated about two month after.

Q. Did *Henry* live in peace with *France* during the remaining part of his reign?

A. He declared war against that kingdom in 1522; but it was not attended with any remarkable event. In 1544, having entered into a confederacy with the emperor *Charles V.* in order to attack *France*, he landed at *Calais* with an army of 30,000 men, and laying siege to *Boulogne*, took it the 14th of *September*, by the cowardice of *Verwins*, the commander, who was afterwards beheaded for his pusillanimity. A peace, however, was concluded in 1546.

Q. Had *Henry* any other wars to maintain?

A. The *Scottish* king, *James IV.* having invaded *England* with an army 60,000 strong, was met near *Flodden* by the earl of *Surry*, at the head of 26,000 men, with which, on the 9th of *September*, 1513, he attacked the enemy, threw them into confusion, killed their king, and obtained over them a complete victory.

Q. Was not the war with *Scotland* renewed?

A. *James V.* had promised to come to *York*, and there confer with his uncle, king *Henry*; but not having kept his word, *Henry* was so incensed at this mark of neglect, that he ordered his forces to march into *Scotland*; when the *Scotch* army flying, the *English* took a great number of prisoners. The king of *Scotland* was so deeply affected with this loss, that he died of grief the 14th of *December*, 1542.

Q. Was not *Henry* engaged in a dispute with the see of *Rome*?

A. Yes; and one that was attended with the most important consequences.

Q. When did this dispute begin?

A. Not till the eighteenth year of his reign; for, in the beginning of it, *Henry* was so zealous for the papacy, that he wrote a book against *Luther*, concerning the seven sacraments; a performance, which gained him the title of *Defender of the Faith*, which was bestowed upon him by pope *Leo X.* in 1521; and this title has been retained by all his successors.

Q. What gave occasion to the abovementioned dispute?

A. The pope's refusal to gratify king *Henry*, with regard to the divorce from his queen *Catharine*; a circumstance, which provoked that monarch to such a degree, that he threw off all dependence on the *Romish* church.

Q. What prompted *Henry* to seek for a divorce?

A. Some alledge, that he was troubled with scruples of conscience for having married his brother's widow, with whom, however, he had cohabited eighteen years, and had had by her three children: others pretend, that he was instigated to this measure by the advice of cardinal *Wolsey*, who wanted to revenge himself on the emperor *Charles V.* queen *Catharine's* nephew, who had twice disappointed him in his designs upon the papal chair: a third set think, that *Henry*, who was naturally sickle, was very much tired of being so long married to one woman; and, besides, that he was desirous of having male issue, all the children whom queen *Catharine* bore him having died in their infancy, except one daughter. Perhaps all these motives concurred in determining *Henry* to this measure; and he was farther actuated by a passion, which he soon after conceived for *Anne Boleyn*, a young lady of the most amiable endowments. She was daughter to Sir *Thomas Boleyn*, and grand-daughter of the duke of *Norfolk*, and the earl of *Ormond*.

Q. What steps did *Henry* take in order to accomplish his purpose?

A. He applied for a divorce to pope *Clement VII.* who, it was generally imagined, would grant his demand, the rather as that pontiff had been very ill used by the emperor *Charles V.* who had seized his person, and thrown him into prison, after having caused *Rome* to be sacked by his forces.

Q. Did the pope comply with his request?

A. He gave him at first some hopes of success, and even advised him privately to marry another wife, promising, that when that step should be taken, he would ratify the measure; but his scruples to dissolve a marriage of eighteen years continuance, concluded by virtue of a dispensation from a former pope, and blessed with three children, together with the fear of exasperating still farther so-

formidable an enemy as the emperor *Charles*; these considerations induced his holiness to alter his resolution. Nevertheless, he granted a commission to cardinal *Campeggio*, an *Italian*, and to cardinal *Wolsey*, *Henry's* prime minister and favourite, to hold a court in *England*, and to judge of the affair.

Q. What decision did these prelates give?

A. After keeping the matter, for some time, in suspense, *Campeggio*, who acted as the principal judge, prorogued the court, and the pope soon after evoked the cause to *Rome*.

Q. Was not king *Henry* incensed at this step?

A. So much, that he threatened to break off all connection with the *Romish* church. In the mean time, by the advice of Dr. *Thomas Cranmer*, a fellow of *Jesus College* in *Cambridge*, he consulted all the universities of *Europe* with regard to the validity of his marriage; and these learned bodies agreed in declaring, that it could not be justified by any laws, human or divine. Encouraged by this decision in his favour, *Henry* privately, on the 14th of *November*, 1532, espoused *Anne Boleyn*, whom he had already created marchioness of *Pembroke*, and who was crowned the 1st of *June*, 1533. The king's marriage with *Catharine of Aragon* was annulled by a sentence pronounced the 23d of *May* of the same year, by *Cranmer*, now raised to the archbishopric of *Canterbury*; *Henry* resolving to be no longer amused by the dilatory proceedings of the court of *Rome*.

Q. What followed next?

A. Several statutes were made, by which it was enacted, that, for the future, no person should appeal to the court of *Rome* in any cause whatsoever; but that all causes ecclesiastical should be determined by the prelates within the realm: that neither first-fruits, annates, nor *St. Peter's* pence, should be any longer paid into the *Apostolic* chamber; nor palls, nor bulls for bishopricks, nor dispensations of any kind, procured from the see of *Rome*: and that whoever dared to infringe these statutes, should incur the penalties of the act of *præmunire*.

Q. What did pope *Clement* do when he heard of these proceedings?

*A.* He threatened *Henry* with the sentence of excommunication, unless that prince would acknowledge his fault, by taking back his wife, queen *Catharine*, and replacing every thing on its former footing. Nevertheless the *French* king, *Francis* I. interposed his good offices, and in the interview which he had with the pope at *Marfeilles*, he prevailed on his holiness to suspend the excommunication till such time as he should have used his influence with the *English* monarch, in order to make him submit to the papal see.

Q. Did his endeavours prove successful?

*A.* *John de Bellay*, bishop of *Paris*, whom he sent over to *London* for that purpose, executed his commission with so much prudence, that *Henry* promised not to separate himself from the church of *Rome*, provided the pope would delay the excommunication. *Bellay*, having carried this point, immediately set out for *Rome*, in order to persuade the pope to agree to this condition.

Q. Did he consent to it?

*A.* Yes; but insisted that king *Henry* should sign a written agreement to the same purport; and he fixed a day for the return of the courier, who was dispatched to *England* for this instrument; but the messenger not returning at the time appointed, and news being brought to *Rome*, that a farce had been acted before *Henry* in derision of the pope and cardinals, *Clement* entered the consistory in a rage, and by a precipitate sentence, confirmed the marriage of *Henry* with *Catharine*, and declared that prince to be excommunicated, in case he refused to adhere to it. This sentence was pronounced the 23d of *March*, 1534.

Q. What was the consequence of this violent measure?

*A.* It proved fatal to the interests of the *Romish* church; for though, upon the arrival of the courier, which happened two days after the passing of the sentence, the pope repented heartily of his hasty proceedings, he found it would be impossible to appease king *Henry*, who now threw off all dependence on the see of *Rome*, and resolved to abolish the papal authority in *England*. With this view he assembled a parliament, which declared the king supreme head on earth of the church of *England*; gave him a right to the first-fruits and tenths of benefices, which had formerly

merly been paid to the court of *Rome*; granted him the power of nominating to bishoprics; subjected monasteries to his visitation and government; moderated the law for punishing heretics; and likewise passed another act, depriving all persons charged with treason of the privilege of sanctuary.

Q. What was *Henry's* next measure?

A. He prosecuted such as refused to acknowledge his *supremacy*; particularly, the learned and virtuous *Sir Thomas More*, late lord chancellor, and *John Fisher*, bishop of *Rocheſter*, who had been the king's tutor, and just advanced to the dignity of a cardinal; both of whom were, for this instance of contumacy, condemned and beheaded.

Q. How did the court of *Rome* receive the news of these proceedings?

A. *Paul III.* who had now succeeded *Clement VII.* on the papal throne, was so enraged at the execution of *Fisher*, that he cited *Henry* to appear at *Rome*, within ninety days, in order to answer for his crimes; and no regard being paid to this summons, he issued the sentence of excommunication against that monarch, and caused it to be fixed up in all the usual places. This event happened in 1535; and thus the church of *England* was finally delivered from its slavish subjection to the see of *Rome*.

Q. How did the people of *England* relish these innovations?

A. The laity in general, and even the secular clergy, were very well pleased with them; but the monks, who foresaw their own ruin as the necessary consequence of these alterations, raised such a furious outcry against the king, that they instigated the populace to make three insurrections, which, however, were soon suppressed, and some of the ringleaders severely punished.

Q. What were *Henry's* religious principles?

A. In every thing, except that of acknowledging the sovereignty of the *Roman* pontiff, he was a most bigotted catholic; and he even caused several protestants to be burnt for embracing the new doctrines.

Q. How many wives had *Henry*?

A. No less than six.

Q. Who was his first wife?

A. *Ca.*

*A. Catharine of Arragon*, whom we have already mentioned, and who brought the king three children, of whom the princess *Mary* alone survived. After the divorce, she retired to *Kimbolton*, in the county of *Huntington*, where she lived till the year 1536, when she died in the fiftieth year of her age.

Q. Who was *Henry's* second wife?

*A. Anne Boleyn*, whom we have likewise mentioned, and who bore to the king the princess *Elizabeth*.

Q. What became of this lady?

*A.* She fell a sacrifice to the jealousy of *Henry*; being beheaded on *Tower-Hill* the 19th of *May*, 1536. She was accused of incest with her brother, the viscount *Rockford*, as also of a criminal commerce with four of her own servants: but no proof could ever be produced of the justice of this charge; and all impartial persons have agreed in believing her innocent.

Q. Who was *Henry's* third wife?

*A. Jane Seymour*, daughter of *Sir John Seymour*, and maid of honour to the late queen. *Henry* married her the very day after the execution of *Anne Boleyn*; and this circumstance inclined most people to think, that it was merely to gratify this new passion that he had sacrificed that unfortunate lady. *Jane Seymour* was delivered, the 12th of *October*, 1537, of a son, named *Edward*, who succeeded his father on the throne, and of whom his mother died in child-bed.

Q. Who was *Henry's* fourth wife?

*A. Anne of Cleves*, sister to the duke of *Cleves*. This lady had been represented to *Henry* as one of the most beautiful women of the age; but the first sight he got of her he was so disgusted with her person, that he swore she was a great *Flanders-mare*, and that he could never bear her any affection. The marriage, however, was consummated, but was dissolved about five months after. *Anne* continued, nevertheless, to live in *England* till the day of her death.

Q. Who was *Henry's* fifth wife?

*A. Catharine Howard*, niece to the duke of *Norfolk*, and cousin-german to *Anne Boleyn*. As she was a lady of great beauty, she obtained an entire ascendant over the mind of the king: but her empire was of short duration. She was  
accused



accused and convicted of adultery. *Derham*, *Mannock*, and *Culpepper*, confessed, that they had often lain with her; and they were all three condemned and executed. The queen owned, that she had led a dissolute life before marriage; but denied, on her salvation, that she had ever defiled his majesty's bed. She was condemned, however, by bill of attainder, and was beheaded upon *Tower-Hill*, the 12th of *February*, 1542. The viscountess of *Rochford*, who had conducted her secret amours, was executed at the same time; and as this woman was known to be the chief instrument who brought *Anne Boleyn* to her end, people were the more confirmed in the favourable sentiments which they had entertained of that unfortunate queen.

Q. Who was *Henry's* sixth wife?

A. *Catharine Parr*, relict of the lord *Latimer*. As she was a woman of spirit as well as beauty, she maintained to the last her influence over the king, though her attachment to the doctrine of *Luther* had once exposed her to the most imminent danger.

Q. In what manner?

A. She had been so imprudent as to express her dissent from the king in some theological questions; and as this was a liberty which he would not allow to any person, not even to his own consort, he ordered the chancellor to draw up articles of impeachment against her; but *Catharine*, being privately informed of the matter, exerted herself with so much prudence and address, that *Henry* was induced to revoke the order; and the death of that prince, which followed soon after, freed her from all future apprehensions of the like nature.

Q. When did *Henry* die?

A. On the 28th day of *January*, 1547, in the fifty-sixth year of his age, and the thirty-eighth of his reign.

Q. What were the qualities of *Henry*?

A. His conduct was so different in the different periods of his life, that it is difficult to give a just description of his character, which may be best learned from his history. In his youth, he was sincere, open, gallant, and liberal; in his more advanced years, he became rapacious, arbitrary, froward, fretful, and so cruel, that he seemed to delight in the blood of his subjects. His arrogance and presumption

presumption rendered him a dupe to the flattery of his own courtiers, and to the artifice and intrigues of foreign princes. As he was but a second son, and had originally no hopes of ascending the throne, he applied to his studies in his earlier years, with great industry and success; and had made considerable proficiency both in philosophy and divinity. He was likewise perfectly well skilled in music, as appears from some compositions of his, which are still extant. He was handsome in his person, but grew too corpulent in the latter part of his life.

Q. How many children did he leave behind him?

A. Two daughters, *Mary* and *Elizabeth*; and one son, named *Edward*. The first he had by *Catharine of Arragon*, the second by *Anne Boleyn*, and the third by *Jane Seymour*.

Q. How did he settle the succession?

A. He bequeathed the crown to his son, prince *Edward*, and his issue; failing which, to his daughters, *Mary* and *Elizabeth*; in default of whom and their issue, to the heirs of his nieces, *Frances* and *Eleanor*, daughters of the duke of *Suffolk*, and of his sister, *Mary*, late queen of *France*; after them, to the next lawful heir: so that the children of his eldest sister, *Margaret*, queen of *Scotland*, were supposed to be excluded.

Q. Who were the chief instruments of delivering the church of *England* from its dependence on the see of *Rome*?

A. *Thomas Wolfsey*, *Thomas Cromwell*, and *Thomas Cranmer*.

Q. Who was *Thomas Wolfsey*?

A. He was the son of a butcher at *Ipswich*, in the county of *Suffolk*, and was born in 1471. Having had the advantage of a learned education, and being endowed with excellent parts, he soon began to distinguish himself in the world. He had been, in the preceding reign, rector of *Lymington* in *Hampshire*. *Fox*, bishop of *Winchester*, introduced him to court, as a rival to the earl of *Surry*, who had eclipsed that prelate in the royal favour. In a little time, *Wolfsey* supplanted both the earl of *Surry* and the bishop. He was first appointed almoner to the king, and then dean of *Lincoln*.

Q. Did not he attain to higher dignities?

*A.* Henry VIII. who had a great opinion of his abilities, created him a member of his privy council, and made him prime minister. Some time after he advanced him to the see of *Lincoln*, then to that of *York*; and by the interest of *Francis I.* he was promoted to the rank of a cardinal. Henry afterwards declared him lord high chancellor, and obtained a commission from the pope, nominating him legate *a latere*. Besides the see of *York* (for he resigned that of *Lincoln*) he possessed the bishoprics of *Durham* and *Winchester*, and enjoyed, at very low leases, the revenues of *Bath*, *Worcester*, and *Hereford*, as well as those of *Tournay* in *Flanders*. In a word, his income is said to have been equal to that of the king, and he spent it in a no less royal manner.

Q. Did not these preferments satisfy his ambition?

*A.* No; he aimed at the papal throne, to which *Charles V.* had promised to raise him; but that emperor having disappointed him in two elections, *Wolfey* was so enraged, that, in revenge to *Charles*, he promoted the scheme of *Henry's* divorce, an affair which afterwards proved his ruin.

Q. In what manner?

*A.* As he was not able to obtain the pope's consent to the divorce, a favour which he had flattered *Henry* he could easily procure, that prince conceived such an aversion towards him, that being farther instigated by the continual complaints of the people against *Wolfey*, and the repeated solicitations of *Anne Bolcyn*, who was his enemy, he seized all his furniture, papers, and money, and even caused him to be impeached of high treason; a misfortune, which affected him to such a degree, that he died of grief at *Leicester-Abbey*, the 28th of *November*, 1530.

Q. Who was *Thomas Cromwell*?

*A.* He was the son of a blacksmith at *Putney*. From the rank of a domestic of cardinal *Wolfey*, he rose to be secretary of state, then visitor of the monasteries, afterwards viceroy in matters ecclesiastical, and, last of all, earl of *Essex*. But having offended *Henry* by his too open attachment to the protestant doctrines, and by his activity in promoting the king's marriage with *Anne of Cleves*, he was condemned by bill of attainder, and beheaded the 28th of *July*, 1540.

Q. Who was *Thomas Cranmer*?

*A.* He

*A.* He was born at *Aflaceton* in *Nottinghamshire*, and educated at *Jesus College*, in the university of *Cambridge*. Having travelled into *Germany*, he had there read the books of *Luther*, and embraced the opinions of that reformer. It was he (as we have observed) who suggested the method of consulting the universities of *Europe* with regard to the validity of the king's marriage. Being afterwards raised to the see of *Canterbury*, he annulled the king's marriage with *Catharine of Arragon*: he had even the courage to excommunicate the pope; and he presided over all ecclesiastical affairs during the remaining part of *Henry's* reign, and that of his successor.

Q. What happened to him under the reign of queen *Mary*?

*A.* Having espoused the cause of lady *Jane Grey*, in opposition to that of queen *Mary*, this latter, upon her ascending the throne, caused him to be seized, and condemned to the flames for heresy. *Cranmer* unhappily recanted, hoping by that means to save his life; but he soon after recovered from his weakness, and received the crown of martyrdom.

Q. Did no other remarkable events happen under king *Henry VIII.*

*A.* He suppressed all the monasteries in *England*; the lesser ones in 1536, the greater ones two years after; the whole amounting to six hundred and forty-five, besides ninety colleges, two thousand three hundred and seventy-four chantries and free chapels, and one hundred and ten hospitals. The annual revenues of these establishments were valued at 161,100 l. but it is difficult to say what they would amount to at present. The whole lands and possessions of *England* were then rated at three millions a year; so that the revenues of the monasteries did not much exceed the twentieth part of the national income. The king likewise found in the monasteries, goods, chattels, and plate, to the value of 100,000 l. Out of the spoils of these religious houses, *Henry* erected six new bishoprics, *Westminster*, *Oxford*, *Peterborough*, *Bristol*, *Chester*, and *Gloucester*; of which the last five subsist at this day.

Q. What were the chief complaints against the monasteries?

*A.* The

*A.* The people alledged, and with great justice, that they were receptacles of idleness, superstition, imposture, lewdness, and debauchery.

*Q.* Can you give any instances of their imposture?

*A.* At *Hales* in the county of *Gloucester*, the *Monks* had pretended to shew, during several ages, the blood of *Christ*, brought from *Jerusalem*. This blood was not visible to any one in mortal sin, even when set before him; and, till he had performed good works sufficient for his absolution, it would not deign to discover itself to him. At the dissolution of the monastery, the whole contrivance was discovered. Two monks, who were let into the secret, had taken the blood of a duck, which they renewed every week: they put it into a phial, one side of which was thin and transparent chrystal, the other thick and obscure. When any rich pilgrim arrived, they were sure to shew him the dark side of the phial, till masses and offerings had expiated his offences; and then finding his money, or patience, or faith, near exhausted, they made him happy by turning the phial.

*Q.* Can you give any other instance?

*A.* At *Boxley* in *Kent*, there was a miraculous crucifix, which bore the appellation of the Rood of grace. The lips and eyes, and head of the image, moved on the approach of its votaries. *Hilsey*, bishop of *Rochester*, broke the crucifix at *St. Paul's* cross, and shewed the whole people the springs and wheels, by which it had been secretly moved.

## C H A P. XXXIX.

E D W A R D VI. XL<sup>th</sup> King of England.

From 1547 to 1553.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of Denmark.</i>	
PAUL III,	1534	FREDERIC II.	1547
JULIUS III.	1550	<i>King of Sweden.</i>	
<i>Emperor and King of Spain.</i>		GUSTAVUS VASA.	1522
CHARLES V.	1519	<i>King of Portugal.</i>	
<i>King of France.</i>		JOHN III.	1522
HENRY II.	1547	<i>Queen of Scotland.</i>	
		MARY	1542

Q. WHO succeeded Henry VIII?

A. Edward VI. his only son, who was then in the tenth year of his age.

Q. How were the affairs of the nation conducted during his minority?

A. They were committed, in pursuance of king Henry's will, to the management of sixteen executors or regents, and twelve counsellors; who, in order to support the dignity of the government, elected a protector, and conferred that office on *Edward Seymour*, earl of *Hertford*, uncle to the king, and one of the regents, and who was soon after created duke of *Somerſet*.

Q. How did *Somerſet* behave in this high station?

A. As he had embraced the opinions of *Luther*, he inſilled thoſe principles into the mind of the young king, with whoſe education he was entrusted; and was no ſooner poſſeſſed of the protectorial authority, than he applied himſelf, with great diligence, to complete the work of the reformation, which had been left unfiniſhed in the foregoing reign.

Q. What ſteps did he take for that purpoſe?

A. He aboliſhed private maſſes, and reſtored the cup to the laity; removed all images out of churches; commanded the old maſſ to be laid aſide, and a new one to be compiled; permitted prieſts to marry; and, in a word, eſtabliſhed the whole

whole form of church government upon pretty nearly the same footing as we find it at this day.

Q. Did not these innovations occasion some disturbances?

A. The common people, inflamed by the monks, who were driven out of their monasteries, and who, being obliged to work, had reduced the price of labour, by the great increase of hands, and being still farther provoked by many other circumstances, they rose up in arms in several counties of *England*: but after having been defeated in various encounters, they were glad to submit, and to accept of a general pardon. It was in consequence of these insurrections, that *Lords Lieutenants* of counties were first appointed.

Q. Was not one of these insurrections more dangerous than the rest?

A. The inhabitants of *Norfolk* assembled, to the number of 20,000 men; and setting one *Ket*, a tanner, at their head, they proposed to destroy the gentry, and to bring all men to a level. *Ket* erected his tribunal under an old oak, thence called the oak of reformation; and summoning the gentry to appear before him, he gave such decrees as might be expected from his character and situation. He repulsed the marquis of *Northampton*, who ventured to attack him; but being afterwards defeated by *John Dudley*, earl of *Warwick*, he was hanged at *Norwich-Castle*; and nine of his followers suffered on the boughs of the oak of reformation.

Q. Was *England* engaged in any foreign wars during this reign?

A. The *Scots*, having refused to grant their queen, *Mary Stuart*, in marriage to young king *Edward*, to whom she had been promised, the protector entered *Scotland* with an army of 18,000 men, and coming up with the enemy, who were double his number, at *Musselburgh*, on the 10th of *September*, 1547, he attacked them with great bravery, killed above 10,000 of them, took 1500 prisoners, and obtained over them a complete victory. At the same time, the earl of *Lennox* and lord *Wharton*, invaded *Scotland* by the western marches, and after taking and plundering *Annan*, they spread devastation over all the neighbouring counties.

Q. Had *England* no other foreign wars to maintain?

A. Henry II. king of *France*, taking advantage of the distractions, which had now broke out in the *English* councils, resolv'd to recover those places which had been conquer'd from him by *Henry VIII.* With this view, he fell suddenly upon the *Boulois*, took the castles of *Sellacque*, *Blackness*, and *Ambleteuse*; but though he laid siege to the town of *Boulogne*, he was not able to reduce it.

Q. What was the occasion of those disorders that were now broke out in the *English* councils?

A. They were owing to the factious temper of lord *Thomas Seymour*, the protector's brother, who having married queen *Catharine Parr*, the late king's widow, had been created baron *Dudley*, and lord high-admiral, and who, not content with these great preferments, aspir'd to the sole direction of affairs, and endeavour'd to supplant his brother in the royal favour. The jealousy between the two brothers was artfully fomented by *Dudley*, earl of *Warwick*, a man of insatiable avarice and unbounded ambition, who, at last, inflam'd the quarrel to such a pitch, that the admiral was accus'd of a conspiracy against the government; and though this charge was never sufficiently proved, he was yet condemn'd to lose his head by bill of attainder, a sentence which was accordingly executed on the 20th of *March*, 1549.

Q. Did the death of this nobleman restore harmony in the council?

A. No; the earl of *Warwick*, lately created duke of *Northumberland*, being determin'd to ruin the protector, whom he mortally hated, and whom he consider'd as an invincible obstacle to the accomplishment of his ambitious projects, caus'd him first to be deprived of his office, and then subjected him to so many insults, that *Somerſet* was tempted to enter into a plot against the life of his adversary. *Northumberland* having gain'd this point, caus'd *Somerſet* to be thrown into the *Tower*, to be brought to his trial, to be condemn'd as a felon, for conspiring the death of a privy counsellor; and the sentence was actually executed on *Tower-Hill*, the 22d of *January*, 1552. The king discover'd an extreme reluctance to sign the warrant for his uncle's execution; but he was at last overcome by the importunities of *Northumberland*.



Q. How did this nobleman employ the authority he had gained?

A. He concluded a peace with *Henry II.* of *France*, in 1550, by virtue of which *Boulogne* was to be restored to that monarch, upon his paying to *Edward* 400,000 crowns of gold. *Scotland* was likewise comprehended in the peace; and as the *Scots* had lately sent their queen to *France*, where she was soon after espoused to the dauphin, king *Edward* desisted from all pretensions to a marriage with that princess; and he even restored to the *Scots* the towns which he had taken from them.

Q. What further use did *Northumberland* make of his authority?

A. He represented to king *Edward*, who was extremely attached to the new doctrines, that the protestant religion would be in the most imminent danger, should his sister, *Mary*, who was a bigotted Catholic, succeed to the throne: that he could not possibly exclude that princess, without excluding, at the same time, his other sister, *Elizabeth*: that the queen of *Scots* stood excluded by the will of the late king; that after these three princesses were set aside, the crown belonged of right to the lady *Frances*, marchioness of *Dorset*, and afterwards dutchess of *Suffolk*, daughter to *Mary*, *Henry* the Eighth's sister, and queen dowager of *France*, by her second husband, *Charles Brandon*, duke of *Suffolk*: that the next heir to the marchioness of *Dorset*, who was her eldest daughter, the lady *Jane Grey*, a lady every way worthy of a throne, and by her affection for the protestant religion, the most likely to support the reformation, which *Edward* had so happily completed.

Q. What effect had this reasoning upon the mind of young *Edward*?

A. So great, that he actually disinherited his two sisters, *Mary* and *Elizabeth*, and appointed, by letters patent, the lady *Jane Grey*, his heir and successor.

Q. Of what advantage was this settlement to the duke of *Northumberland*?

A. That nobleman had taken care to marry his fourth son, lord *Guilford Dudley*, to the lady *Jane Grey*, by which means, had the scheme succeeded, his own family would have been placed upon the throne.

Q. How long did king *Edward* survive these transactions?

A. But a very few days. He died of a consumption, the 6th of *July*, 1553, in the sixteenth year of his age, and the seventh of his reign.

Q. What is the character of *Edward*?

A. He was endowed with every qualification that could recommend him to the love and esteem of his subjects; beauty of person, probity of mind, sweetness of temper, an attachment to equity and justice; and he was blessed with such a quickness of apprehension, that, young, as he was at the time of his death, he had made considerable progress in most branches of learning. He was pretty well skilled in the *Latin* and *French* languages, and had even acquired some knowledge of the *Greek*, *Spanish*, and *Italian*.

Q. Did he leave any monuments behind him?

A. He confirmed the grant, made by his father, to the city of *London*, of *Christ's* and *St. Bartholomew's* hospitals; and he founded those of *Bridewell* and *St. Thomas*, together with several schools. The duke of *Somerset* built the palace now called *Somerset-house* in the *Strand*, which, upon the death of that nobleman, was forfeited to the crown, and still belongs to the royal family.

## C H A P. XL.

M A R Y, XLI<sup>st</sup> *Sovereign of England.*

From 1553. to 1558.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of Denmark.</i>	
JULIUS III.	1550	FREDERICK II.	1547
MARCELLUS II.	1555	<i>King of Sweden.</i>	
PAUL IV.	1555	GUSTAVUS VASA	1552
<i>Emperor and King of Spain.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
CHARLES V.	1519	JOHN III.	1552
<i>King of France.</i>		SEBASTIAN	1557
HENRY II.	1547	<i>Queen of Scotland.</i>	
<i>King of Spain.</i>		MARY	1542
PHILIP II.	1556*		

Q. WHAT steps did the duke of *Northumberland* take after the death of king *Edward*?

A. As he knew it would be impossible to execute that monarch's will, without getting the princesses *Mary* and *Elizabeth* into his power, he sent them orders, in the king's name, (whose death he thought proper to conceal) to come to court; and they accordingly set out on their journey for that purpose, when the princess *Mary*, who had arrived within a few miles of *London*, receiving intelligence of her brother's death, and *Northumberland's* designs, from the earl of *Arundel*, immediately withdrew to *Framlingham-Castle*, in the county of *Suffolk*.

Q. What did *Northumberland* do upon this disappointment?

A. Finding it in vain to dissemble any longer, he instantly published king *Edward's* will, and caused the lady *Jane Grey*, in spite of all her remonstrances, to be proclaimed queen of *England*, the 19th of *July*, 1553.

Q. What course did the princess *Mary* take in the mean time?

\* In the beginning of this year, *Charles V.* resigned the crown of *Spain* to his son, *Don Philip*.

*A.* Being joined by the inhabitants of *Suffolk*, and of several other counties, she sent a message to the council, in which she promised them a pardon for their past offences, required them to return to their duty, by acknowledging her title, and signified her resolution of advancing towards *London*, in order to support it by force of arms.

*Q.* What effect did this message produce ?

*A.* The duke of *Northumberland* marched out against her at the head of a small army: the counsellors being freed from the terror of this nobleman, who had hitherto kept them in awe, declared for the princess *Mary*, and, together with the lord mayor and aldermen of *London*, solemnly proclaimed her queen. Even the duke of *Suffolk*, lady *Jane's* father, who commanded in the *Tower*, surrendered that fortress; and lady *Jane* herself, after wearing the vain pageantry of a crown during ten days, returned to a private life, with much more satisfaction than she felt when the royalty was tendered to her.

*Q.* What became of *Northumberland* ?

*A.* Deserted by his troops, and despairing of success, he made a merit of necessity; and finding it impossible to escape from the kingdom, he was the first, when queen *Mary* was proclaimed at *Cambridge*, to throw up his cap, as a mark of his loyalty and submission.

*Q.* Did this dissimulation save him ?

*A.* No; he was arrested, brought to his trial, condemned to lose his head, and was accordingly executed on *Tower-Hill*, the 22d of *August*. Sentence was likewise pronounced against the lady *Jane Grey*, and lord *Guildford Dudley*, but without any present intention of putting it in execution; and they were therefore remanded back to the *Tower*.

*Q.* What became of the duke of *Suffolk*, lady *Jane's* father ?

*A.* He was set at liberty; but having soon after joined in a conspiracy with Sir *Thomas Wyatt*, who entered *London*, at the head of 6000 men, when he was surrounded and taken; *Suffolk* was once more seized, and thrown into the *Tower*.

*Q.* What was the consequence of this rebellion ?

*A.* It proved fatal to the lady *Jane* and her husband, both of whom were executed the 12th of *February*, 1554. The lady *Jane* behaved with great constancy and fortitude; and  
after

after seeing the headless body of her husband pass by, she submitted herself to the executioner with a steady and serene countenance. Her father was executed the 21st of the same month; Sir *Thomas Wyatt* the 11th of *April*; and about fifty other persons suffered in *London* alone.

Q. How did queen *Mary* conduct herself with regard to religion?

A. As she was a bigotted *Roman Catholic*, she restored all the deprived *Papish* prelates to their respective sees; threw a great many protestant bishops into prison, and granted a general liberty of conscience till the meeting of parliament, by an act of which the exercise of any other communion, besides the *Roman Catholic*, was forbid; the statutes of *Edward VI.* in favour of the reformation, were repealed; and the national religion was replaced on the same footing on which it stood at the death of *Henry VIII.*

Q. Did the queen give any other proof of her zeal for *Popery*?

A. Having strengthened herself by her marriage with *Philip II.* king of *Spain*, which was celebrated at *Winchester*, the 25th of *July*, 1554, she assembled a new parliament, in which cardinal *Pole*, descended from the royal family of *England*, (a man of great moderation, but extremely attached to the *Catholic* religion, and who now acted as the pope's legate) made a speech, exhorting the two houses to reconcile themselves and the kingdom to the *Apostolic* see. This advice was taken in very good part; the two houses made an act, suppressing the protestant, and re-establishing the catholic religion; and the cardinal, having gained this point, gave the parliament and kingdom absolution, freed them from all censures, and received them again into the bosom of the church.

Q. Did the parliament take any other steps in favour of *Popery*?

A. They revived the old sanguinary laws against heretics; and these laws were executed by the queen and her ministers, with such unrelenting severity, that, in the space of three years, during which the persecutions lasted, no less than two hundred and seventy-seven persons suffered by fire; besides those who were punished by imprisonments, fines, and confiscations. Among those who suffered by fire,

were five bishops, viz. *Cranmer*, archbishop of *Canterbury*; *Ridley*, bishop of *London*; *Latimer*, of *Worcester*; *Hooper*, of *Gloucester*; and *Ferrar*, of *St. David's*; twenty-one clergymen, eight lay-gentlemen, eighty-four tradesmen, one hundred husbandmen, servants, and labourers, five women, and four children.

Q. How did these martyrs support their punishment?

A. With such invincible fortitude as excited the astonishment even of their persecutors; and, instead of diminishing, tended only to encrease the number of protestants.

Q. Can you give any instances of their fortitude, and of the cruelty of their persecutors?

A. Most of them, when tied to the stake, had a pardon offered them, which they nobly rejected. *Rogers*, who was the first that suffered, was so little terrified with his approaching fate, that the jailors waked him from a sound sleep, when the hour of his execution came. One *Thomas Hawkes* had agreed with his friends, that if he found the torture tolerable, he would make a signal to that purpose, in the midst of the flames. Accordingly, when the fire attacked him, he stretched out his arms, the signal agreed on; and in that posture he expired. *Cranmer* had been prevailed on by the fond hope of life, to sign a paper, containing his recantation; but he afterwards recovered from his weakness, and being determined, that his hand, which had betrayed his heart, should first pay the forfeit of its offences, he held it in the flames till it was entirely consumed; and he soon after expired. A woman, in *Guernsey*, being near the time of her labour, when brought to the stake, was thrown into such agitation by the torture, that her belly burst, and she was delivered in the midst of the flames. One of the guards immediately snatched the infant from the fire, and attempted to save it; but a magistrate, who stood by, ordered it to be thrown back, being resolved, he said, that nothing should survive, which sprung from such an obstinate and heretical parent.

Q. Who were the chief instruments of these cruel persecutions?

A. *Gardiner*, bishop of *Winchester*, and *Bonner*, bishop of *London*, whose names have ever since been held in the utmost horror and detestation.

Q. Was queen *Mary* engaged in any wars? A. Yes;

*A.* Yes; in order to oblige her consort, king *Philip*, she came to a rupture with *France* (contrary to the articles of her marriage contract) and, in 1557, sent to his assistance, in *Flanders*, an army of 10,000 men, which contributed greatly to the victory obtained by the *Spaniards* at *St. Quintin*. She likewise supplied him, in the course of the succeeding year, with a fleet of an hundred and forty sail, which had a considerable share in defeating the *French* at the battle of *Gravelines*.

*Q.* Did the *English* gain any thing by this war?

*A.* On the contrary, they lost *Calais*, *Guienes*, *Ham*, and every other place they then held in *France*, which were conquered by the duke of *Guise*, the *French* general, in the spring of 1558.

*Q.* Did not these losses occasion great discontents in *England*?

*A.* So great, that the people exclaimed loudly against the queen's administration; and her grief, it is said, on that account, together with the indifference which her husband, *Philip*, shewed her, contributed no less than the dropsy, with which she was afflicted, to bring her to her end, which happened the 17th of *November*, 1558, in the forty-third year of her age, and, after a short and inglorious reign of five years, four months, and eleven days.

*Q.* What is the character of *Mary*?

*A.* She seems to have possessed few qualities, either estimable or amiable; and her person was as little engaging as her behaviour and address. Bigotry and cruelty were the principal, if not the sole ingredients of her character; and to this cause ought to be ascribed all the shocking barbarities that disgraced her reign.

*Q.* Had queen *Mary* any children?

*A.* No; she imagined once, indeed, that she had conceived; but after she thought she was gone several months with child, she was delivered of a substance, known by the name of a mola.

## C H A P. XLI.

ELIZABETH, XLII<sup>d</sup> *Sovereign of England.*

From 1558 to 1603.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of Spain.</i>	
PAUL IV.	1555	PHILIP II.	1556
PIUS IV.	1559	<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
PIUS V.	1565	FREDERIC II.	1558
GREGORY XIII.	1572	CHRISTIAN IV.	1588
SIXTUS V.	1585	<i>Kings of Sweden.</i>	
URBAN VII.	1590	GUSTAVUS VASA	1522
GREGORY XIV.	1591	ERIC XIV.	1560
INNOCENT IX.	1591	JOHN	1568
CLEMENT VIII.	1592	SIGISMUND	1590
<i>Emperors.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
FERDINAND I.	1558	SEBASTIAN	1557
MAXIMILIAN II.	1564	HENRY	1578
RODOLPHUS II.	1576	<i>Kings of Spain and Portugal.</i>	
<i>Kings of France</i>		PHILIP II.	1580*
HENRY II.	1547	PHILIP III.	1597
FRANCIS II.	1559	<i>Sovereigns of Scotland.</i>	
CHARLES IX.	1560	MARY	1542
HENRY III.	1574	JAMES VI.	1567
HENRY IV.	1589		

2. **W**H O succeeded queen *Mary*?

*A.* Her sister, *Elizabeth*, daughter of *Henry VIII.* and *Anne Boleyn*, who ascended the throne in 1558, being then twenty-five years of age.

2. How did this princess behave in her high station?

*A.* With admirable sagacity and prudence; so that her reign, as it was one of the longest, is also one of the most glorious that is to be found in the *English* annals.

2. How did she conduct herself with regard to religion?

\* About this time, the crowns of *Spain* and *Portugal* were united on the head of *Philip II.* who, upon the death of *Henry* of *Portugal*, made a conquest of that kingdom.

*A.* She



A. She repealed the laws enacted by her sister in favour of *Popery*; re-established the protestant religion; declared herself *supreme governess of the church, both in spirituals and temporals*; and, in a word, restored every thing to the same footing on which they stood at the death of *Edward VI.*

Q. Did she do nothing else in favour of the new doctrines?

A. She supported the protestants in *France, Scotland,* and the *Low-Countries,* and was universally considered, all over *Europe,* as the chief bulwark of the reformation.

Q. What assistance did she give to the protestants in *France*?

A. That kingdom had long been torn with domestic factions, arising from the animosity between the catholics and protestants. *Elizabeth* supported the latter both with money and troops, and enabled *Henry IV.* who was a protestant, though he afterwards changed his religion, to mount the throne, in 1590.

Q. What assistance did she give to the protestants in the *Low-Countries*?

A. These provinces, which were subject to *Spain,* had suffered such cruel persecutions on account of religion, that no less than 50,000 persons are said to have been put to death for heresy. The people, enraged at these barbarities, revolted from the *Spaniards,* and imploring the protection of *Elizabeth,* offered her the sovereignty of their country, provided she would undertake their defence.

Q. Did she accept their offer?

A. No; but she generously took them under her protection, and supported them so effectually, that they were at last able to shake off the *Spanish* yoke, to assert their native liberty, and to erect the famous commonwealth of the united provinces.

Q. What assistance did she give to the protestants in *Scotland*?

A. She enabled them, partly by money, and partly by her forces, to make head against the catholics, and at last to obtain over them a complete victory; though this conduct engaged her in a quarrel, which was attended with the most fatal consequences to *Mary,* queen of *Scots,* and even fixed a stain on the memory of *Elizabeth.*

Q. Who

Q. Who was *Mary*, queen of *Scots*?

A. She was daughter to *James V.* king of *Scotland*, and to *Mary of Lorraine*, eldest daughter to *Claude*, duke of *Guise*, and widow of *Lewis*, duke of *Longueville*. This young princess had married *Francis II.* king of *France*; and, at the instigation of her uncles, the princes of *Guise*, she assumed, on the death of *Mary*, of *England*, the title of queen of that kingdom, pretending, that *Elizabeth* was illegitimate, and had no right to the throne.

Q. What were queen *Mary's* pretensions to the crown of *England*?

A. She was granddaughter to *James IV.* and to *Margaret*, eldest daughter to *Henry VII.* and it was in virtue of this right, that her son, *James Stuart*, upon the death of *Elizabeth*, ascended the throne of *England*.

Q. Did she take any steps to support her pretensions?

A. No; she knew that *England* was in such a posture of defence, and that *Elizabeth* was so beloved by the people in general, that it would be altogether in vain to make any attempts against her. Mean while, being left a widow by the death of her husband, she returned, in 1561, into *Scotland*, her hereditary kingdom. This country was at that time divided into two factions, the one composed of protestants, the other of *Roman catholics*, with the latter of whom, the queen, who had been bred a *Papist*, joined; and finding it impossible to support herself against the former, who were headed by her natural brother, *James Stuart*, earl of *Murray*, she espoused *Henry Stuart*, lord *Darnley*, her own cousin-german, and son to the earl of *Lennox*, esteemed, at that time, the handsomest man in *Britain*; and she even honoured him with the title of king.

Q. Did she live in harmony with her husband?

A. Yes, for some time; but as *Henry*, who was of a profligate character, soon began to treat her with the utmost neglect, the queen became, in her turn, as indifferent about him. *Henry*, on the other hand, grew jealous of the queen, on account of her intimacy with one *David Rizzio*. This man, who was an *Italian* by birth, and an excellent musician, had insinuated himself so effectually into the queen's good graces, that she first appointed him her private secretary, and afterwards advanced him to be her prime minister.

fler. She even indulged him, if *Buchanan* may be credited, in the most scandalous familiarities; and though this imputation seems to have been altogether groundless, *Rizzio's* enemies encouraged the report, in order to inflame the suspicions of king *Henry*.

Q. What was the consequence of this prince's jealousy?

A. Being determined, at all events, to make away with the minion, he formed a conspiracy for the execution of his project, with *George Douglas* and others. Having thus laid his scheme, he entered the queen's apartment, while she was at supper: the assassins seized *Rizzio*, who sat at table; and, notwithstanding the entreaties of her majesty, who endeavoured to save him, they instantly put him to death. The queen was confined, during some months, in her palace; but having, by her caresses, gained the confidence of her husband, she privately made her escape with him; and having thus recovered her liberty, she suddenly deserted him, and treated him ever after with the most supreme contempt.

Q. Had queen *Mary* no other favourite after the death of *Rizzio*?

A. Yes; the earl of *Bothwell*, a man of the most abandoned principles, soon acquired over her the same unlimited influence which *Rizzio* had possessed.

Q. Was she ever reconciled to her husband?

A. No; though she seemed to be so, the better to serve her purposes; she paid him a visit; attended him during an illness, with which he was seized; conversed with him cordially; lay several nights in a room below his; but, on the 10th of *February*, 1567, king *Henry* was killed by the artifices (as was suspected) of *Bothwell*; and not without the queen's consent and connivance; a supposition which was further confirmed by her marrying *Bothwell* about three months after.

Q. Did not these barbarous and shameful proceedings excite the indignation of the *Scottish* nobility?

A. So highly, that the earls of *Argyle*, *Morton*, *Mar*, *Ashol*, *Glencarne*, and others, who bore an irreconcilable hatred to *Bothwell*, raised an army, in order to annul his marriage. The queen marched out against them, at the head of an army; but her troops deserting her, she was obliged to submit to the confederate lords, who carried her

to *Edinburgh*; and, next day, committed her close prisoner to the castle of *Lochlewin*, from whence she escaped the 2d of *May*, 1568. *Bothwell* likewise made his escape, and withdrew, first to *Dunbar*, and then to the *Orkneys*, where he turned pirate; but being driven from that station, he retired to *Denmark*, where he was thrown into prison, lost his senses, and died miserably about ten years afterwards; an end worthy of his flagitious life.

Q. Whither went queen *Mary* after her escape?

A. She repaired to *Hamilton*, where she was presently joined by several of the nobility, who brought to her assistance about 6000 men: but the earl of *Murray*, her natural brother, who had lately retired to *France*, returning about this time to *Scotland*, assumed the supreme authority, in the name of the young prince *James*, queen *Mary's* son, by *Henry Stuart*; and marching out against the queen's army, he entirely defeated it, and obliged that princess to fly into *England*.

Q. What reception did she meet with in that kingdom?

A. A very unfavourable one; queen *Elizabeth* committing her to prison, where she continued above eighteen years.

Q. What was *Elizabeth's* motive for treating her in that manner?

A. It was partly to revenge the affront, which queen *Mary* had put upon her, in assuming the title of queen of *England*, and representing *Elizabeth* as an usurper, and a bastard; but chiefly to render her for ever incapable of taking any steps to support that title, or deprive queen *Elizabeth* of the crown of *England*, to which, the *Roman catholics* alledged, queen *Mary* had a better right than *Elizabeth* herself.

Q. Did nobody espouse the cause of this unfortunate princess?

A. Most of the princes of *Europe*, particularly the kings of *France* and *Spain*, interposed in her favour, and employed both menaces and entreaties in order to procure her liberty; but all their endeavours for this purpose proved ineffectual.

Q. What reason did queen *Elizabeth* assign for detaining queen *Mary* in prison?

A. She accused her of having been an accomplice in the horrid crime of her husband's murder; an accusation, against which,

which, it must be owned, queen *Mary* made but a very poor defence.

Q. What became of this unhappy princess afterwards?

A. Being naturally of a high and lofty spirit, she was so provoked at the harsh treatment she had met with, that she entered into a conspiracy, formed by one *Babington*, against queen *Elizabeth's* life. *Elizabeth* had her tried for this crime, and condemned to lose her head; and this severe sentence was accordingly executed, the 8th of *February*, 1587, in *Fotheringay-Castle*, notwithstanding all the remonstrances made by her son *James VI.* of *Scotland*, and *Henry III.* of *France*; though *Bellevue*, it is said, the *French* ambassador, had private instructions to solicit the execution of the sentence; a report, which was the more readily credited, as *Henry* bore an implacable hatred to the duke of *Guise*, queen *Mary's* kinsman.

Q. How did queen *Elizabeth* behave when she received the news of queen *Mary's* death?

A. She affected to be filled with the deepest sorrow and affliction; protested, that though she had signed the warrant for her death, she had no design of carrying it into execution: she chased her ministers and counsellors from her presence, and even gave orders for their being prosecuted in the star-chamber.

Q. Did not queen *Mary's* imprisonment in *England* occasion some disturbances in the kingdom?

A. Two insurrections were raised on her account, but neither of them of any great consequence. One of them was excited by the earl of *Northumberland*, who, for this attempt, was brought to the scaffold. The same was the fate of the duke of *Norfolk*, who had formed a scheme for rescuing and marrying queen *Mary*.

Q. Had queen *Elizabeth* any wars to maintain?

A. None, but what she undertook for the support of her allies; nor do any of these deserve to be mentioned, except that which she waged against *Spain*.

Q. What were the most remarkable events of this war?

A. *Philip II.* of *Spain*, provoked at the assistance which *Elizabeth* had given to his revolted subjects in the *Low-Countries*, resolved to retaliate that injury, by invading *England*, in 1588, with a powerful armament, which he stiled the

*Invin-*

*Invincible Armada.* It consisted of one hundred and thirty-two large ships, exclusive of twenty caravels for the service of the army, and ten salves with six oars a-piece; having on board 8766 sailors, 2088 galley-slaves, 21,855 soldiers, and 3165 pieces of cannon; and furnished with ammunition and provision for six months. The fleet was commanded by the duke *de Medina Sidonia*; and the duke of *Parma* was to join it with an army of 34,000 men from the *Low Countries*; but the ports of *Flanders* were so effectually blocked up by forty men of war, *Dutch* and *English*, that that officer found it impossible to execute his purpose.

Q. What preparations did *Elizabeth* make for repelling this invasion?

A. She assembled all her ships of war, and reinforcing them with others, furnished her by the merchants, intrusted the command of them to lord *Howard* of *Effingham*, the lord high-admiral; and under him to *Drake*, *Hawkins*, and *Forbisher*, the most renowned seamen in *Europe*. She likewise raised three great armies, and stationed them in different parts of the kingdom; and she even appeared on horseback in the camp at *Tilbury*, where the main army was posted; and by her looks and exhortations inspired such courage into the soldiers, that they seemed to wish for nothing more than the arrival of the enemy.

Q. What was the issue of this great enterprize?

A. The *Spanish Armada* was overtaken by a storm before it reached the coast of *England*: it was then attacked by the *English* admirals, who, besides doing great damage to the rest of the fleet, took or sunk about fourteen of their vessels, among which was a great ship of *Biscay*, and the great galleon of *Andaluzia*, each of them containing a large sum of money. The *Spanish* admiral, disheartened by this loss, and finding it impossible to succeed in his attempt, resolved to make the best of his way homewards; but as he could not safely pass through the channel (the wind being contrary) he determined to sail northwards, and doubling the extremity of *Scotland*, return to his own country by the ocean. During his voyage, he was encountered by another storm, which dispersed and destroyed the greatest part of his fleet; so that of 132 ships, which he carried out with him, he was able to bring back no more than 53. *Philip*, who

who was an excellent hypocrite, no sooner heard of the failure of his enterprize, than he fell on his knees, and returned thanks to God, that the misfortune was not greater. *Elizabeth*, with much better reason, made a procession to *St. Paul's*, and returned thanks to God for the signal deliverance he had vouchsafed her. At the same time, she settled a pension on the admiral, and liberally rewarded all those who had distinguished themselves on this occasion.

Q. Did not some disturbances happen in *Ireland* during this reign?

A. A rebellion was raised in that kingdom by *Hugh O'Neale*, earl of *Tyrone*, one of the *Irish* chieftains, who had formed a design to drive the *English* out of *Ireland*. The earl of *Essex* was sent against him in 1599, at the head of 20,000 foot, and 2000 horse, which were afterwards reinforced by 2000 more; but this nobleman, not having answered the expectations of the court, was succeeded in his command by *Charles Blount*, lord *Montjoy*, who defeated *Tyrone* in several engagements, and obliged him to have recourse to the queen's mercy.

Q. Was queen *Elizabeth* ever married?

A. Her policy and her love of liberty were so great, that she could never think of submitting to the yoke of matrimony.

Q. How does her policy appear in this particular?

A. All the young princes of *Europe* paid court to her; and though she had taken secretly a determined resolution against entering into the married state, yet, as she never gave any of her suitors an absolute denial, she still kept them in expectation, and by that means secured their friendship. The same motive seems likewise to have engaged all the young *English* noblemen to be constantly about her person, and to serve her with a zeal, which was as much derived from a spirit of gallantry, as from a sense of duty.

Q. Who were *Elizabeth's* chief favourites?

A. Her first favourite was *Robert Dudley*, son to *Dudley*, duke of *Northumberland*, who was beheaded in the beginning of queen *Mary's* reign, and grandson to that *Dudley* who had been one of the instruments of king *Henry* the Seventh's extortions, and who was afterwards executed for his illegal practices. This man she created earl of *Leicester*, and loaded

loaded him with many other honours and preferments; and though he appears to have been destitute of every valuable quality, he continued, till his death, to enjoy the queen's friendship and affection. Her second favourite was *Robert Devereux*, earl of *Essex* (whom we have already mentioned) a young nobleman of the most generous sentiments, and the most distinguished abilities, but rash, headstrong, and violent in his temper. Being once engaged in a dispute with the queen, he so provoked her by his disrespectful behaviour, that she gave him a box on the ear; upon which *Essex* clapped his hand to his sword, and swore he would not bear such treatment, were it from *Henry* the Eighth himself. Nevertheless, he was, soon after, restored to her majesty's favour, and was sent over to *Ireland* against the earl of *Tyrone*; on his return from which expedition he was again disgraced, and subjected to so many indignities, that his impatient spirit breaking through all the restraints of duty and allegiance, he endeavoured to raise an insurrection; but failing in his attempt, he was seized, tried, condemned, and executed, the 25th of *February*, 1601. The queen shewed at first an extreme reluctance to sign the warrant for his death; but believing his obstinacy to be so great, that he scorned to apply to her for a pardon, she was at last prevailed on to consent to his execution.

Q. How long did she survive this transaction?

A. About two years; when finding that *Essex* had actually solicited a pardon, but that the person employed by him for that purpose had designedly neglected to execute the commission, she was seized with such a profound melancholy, that she rejected all consolation; she even refused food and sustenance; and after languishing thus for ten days, she expired gently, without struggle or convulsion, the 24th of *March*, 1603, in the seventieth year of her age, and the forty-fifth of her reign. This account has been rejected by some historians, as romantic; but the proofs adduced in support of it by *Dr. Birch*, in his negotiations and memoirs, seem to be fully satisfactory.

Q. Describe the person and qualities of *Elizabeth*.

A. She was tall, stait, strong-limbed, and masculine, with a high round forehead, fair complexion, fine white teeth, and yellow hair. She danced with great agility;  
her



her voice was clear and strong, her ear good, and she played excellently upon several musical instruments. Nor were the qualities of her mind inferior to those of her body; she possessed a sound judgment, a tenacious memory, understood the dead and living languages, had made considerable proficiency in the sciences, and was well read in history. The maxims of her government were wise and prudent; and she was extremely happy in the choice of her ministers.

Q. Was this reign distinguished by no other remarkable transactions than those you have already mentioned?

A. In 1600, the queen granted the first patent to the *East-India* company, whose stock was at that time 72,000*l*. In 1569, she concluded a treaty of commerce with *John Basilowitz*, great duke of *Muscovy*, together with a personal alliance, by which they engaged to give each other an asylum, in case either of them should be driven out of their dominions. In 1577, *Sir Francis Drake* set sail from *Plymouth*, and entering the south sea by the streights of *Magellan*, returned, in 1580, by the *Cape of Good Hope*, to *Europe*. He was the first *Englishman* who sailed round the world; and the first commander in chief of any nation: for *Magellan*, whose ship performed the same voyage, died in his passage. In 1584, *Sir Walter Raleigh* discovered *Virginia*, which name he gave it in honour of the virgin-queen: he is supposed to be the first person who introduced the use of tobacco into *England*.

Q. Can you relate any thing else worthy of notice?

A. Some private adventurers, headed by *Sir Francis Drake* and *Sir John Norris*, and assisted by the queen, undertook, in 1589, to raise *Don Antonio*, prior of *Crato*, a natural son of the royal family of *Portugal*, to the throne of that kingdom, which had lately become vacant; but, after meeting with some success, they finally failed in the enterprise. In the course of this reign, *Sir John Gresham* built, at his own charge, the magnificent structure of the *Exchange*, for the reception of merchants: the queen visited it, and gave it the name of the *Royal Exchange*.

Q. Did any memorable events happen in the other kingdoms of *Europe* during this period?

A. A scene of cruelty was acted in *France*, which has fixed an indelible stain on the character of that nation, and

in the Catholic religion. The Papists of *Paris*, not only by the connivance, but even by the exprefs order, nay under the immediate direction of their sovereign, that treacherous tyrant, *Charles IX.* rose upon the Protestants, and attacking them unawares, in the night of the 22d of *August*, 1572, put about 10,000 of them to the sword. The like massacre of the Protestants was committed in *Rouen*, *Lyons*, and many other cities of the kingdom. On the first of *August*, 1589, *Henry III.* of *France* was stabbed by the hands of a religious madman, one *Jaques Clement*, a Dominician monk, who was instantly hewed in pieces by the courtiers.

C H A P. XLII.

*The Union of the Crowns of England and Scotland.*

JAMES I. XLIII<sup>d</sup> King of England,  
And First of Great Britain :

From 1603 to 1625.

	<i>Popes.</i>		LEWIS XIII.	1610
CLEMENT VIII.	1592		<i>Kings of Spain and Portugal.</i>	
LEO IX.	1605		PHILIP III.	1597
PAUL III.	1605		PHILIP IV.	1620
GREGORY XV.	1621		<i>King of Denmark.</i>	
URBAN VIII.	1623		CHRISTIAN IV.	1588
	<i>Emperors.</i>		<i>Kings of Sweden.</i>	
RODOLPHUS II.	1576		SIGISMUND	1590
MATHIAS I.	1612		CHARLES IX.	1604
FERDINAND II.			GUSTAVUS ADOLPHUS	1611
	<i>Kings of France.</i>			
HENRY IV.	1589			

Q WHO succeeded queen *Elizabeth*?

A. *James VI.* king of *Scotland*, and first of *England*; son to the unfortunate *Mary*, queen of *Scots*, and *Henry Stuart*, lord *Darnley*.

Q What title had he to the crown?

A. He

A. He was the great-grandson of *Margaret*, daughter of *Henry VII.* and, on the failure of all the male issue of that prince, his hereditary right remained unquestionable. Queen *Elizabeth* too, with her dying breath, had declared him her successor; and the *English* in general were 'so well pleased with the prospect of his accession, that many of them had begun, even before the death of that princess, to make their court to him.

Q. When did he ascend the throne of *England*?

A. In 1603, being crowned at *Westminster*, the 25th of *July*, on *St. James's* day of the same year.

Q. How old was he at the time of his accession?

A. Thirty-seven years of age, being born at *Edinburgh-Castle*, the 19th of *June*, 1566. He was baptized a *Roman catholic*, but afterwards educated in the protestant religion, the famous historian *Buchanan* being his tutor. His mother being deposed in 1567, *James* was crowned immediately after, and committed to the guardianship of the earl of *Murray*, who acted as regent of the kingdom. That nobleman, being assassinated in 1670, was succeeded in the regency by the earls of *Lennox*, *Mar*, and others, till 1578, when *James* assumed the reins of government.

Q. How did this prince behave upon his ascending the throne of *England*?

A. He promised to execute, with the utmost strictness, the several laws which were enacted by queen *Elizabeth* against the *Roman catholics*; and commanded all popish priests and Jesuits immediately to leave the kingdom. He was, however, a little too lavish in bestowing titles of honour; for, in six weeks time after his arrival in *England*, he is said to have conferred knighthood on no less than 237 persons; so that the wits affixed a pasquinade to *St. Paul's* cathedral, in which they promised to teach an art very necessary to assist frail memories, in retaining the names of the new nobility.

Q. What title did king *James* assume, in order to put an end to the disputes between the *English* and *Scots*?

A. That of *Great Britain*.

Q. What was the first remarkable event of this reign?

A. A conspiracy was formed by some malecontents to subvert the government, and raise to the throne the lady  
*Arabella*

*Arabella Stuart*, cousin-german to the king; and some of the conspirators were executed for this crime. The brave and learned Sir *Walter Raleigh*, one of the chief ornaments of his age and nation, was accused, but upon very slender evidence, of being concerned in this plot; and this gallant gentleman, after having been confined twelve years in the *Tower* (where he wrote his excellent history of the world) was beheaded the 29th of *October*, 1618. *Arabella Stuart* died in that fortress.

Q. Was not another conspiracy hatched in this reign?

A. Yes: some *Roman Catholics*, *Catesby*, *Piercy*, *Digby*, and others, provoked at the severity exercised against those of their profession, by *James*, from whom they had expected better treatment, entered into a scheme for blowing up the parliament house with gun-powder the 5th of *November*, 1605, when the king should be haranguing the two houses; but the plot was happily discovered by means of a letter. Several were executed; and among the rest, *Guy Fawkes*, who was to set fire to the train. *Catesby* and *Piercy*, standing on their defence, were killed with one shot.

Q. How were the affairs of *Scotland* conducted during this reign?

A. With great order and tranquillity. The king's authority was so thoroughly established in that country, that he was able to introduce into it some of the ceremonies of the church of *England*, though contrary to the sentiments of the greater part of the nation.

Q. Was king *James* engaged in any wars?

A. As he was naturally of a pacific disposition, he studiously avoided every thing that might involve him in quarrels with any of his neighbours; and it may be safely affirmed, that, notwithstanding the blame thrown upon him on that account by several historians, the same conduct, which was agreeable to him, was in the highest degree advantageous to his people. He gave, however, some assistance to the *Dutch*, and to *Frederic*, elector palatine, and king of *Bohemia*, his son-in-law, when the emperor *Ferdinand* and the king of *Spain* were dispossessing him of his dominions. He even came to a rupture with *Spain* a little before his death; but it was not attended with any important consequences.

Q. What was king *James's* usual occupation?

A. The



*The seizing of Guy Fawkes.*



A. The study of divinity, in which, it must be owned, he made considerable progress, and to which he was so attached, that he seems to have preferred it to the cares of government. He called at *Hampton-Court* a conference of divines, in order to put an end to the disputes between the episcopalians and the dissenters in his kingdoms; and he likewise wrote several pieces for the same purpose.

Q. Who were the king's chief favourites?

A. *Robert Car*, earl of *Somerset*, and *George Villiers*, duke of *Buckingham*. The former, having been convicted of being concerned in the murder of *Sir Thomas Overbury*, was condemned to lose his head, but obtained a pardon. The fate of the latter will be seen in the next chapter.

Q. Of what disease did king *James* die?

A. Of a tertian ague, in his palace at *Theobalds*, on the 27th of *March*, 1625, aged fifty-nine years, of which he had reigned twenty-two over *England*, and fifty-eight over *Scotland*.

Q. Describe the person and qualities of king *James*.

A. In his stature he was of the middle size, inclining to corpulency; his forehead was high, his beard scanty, his address aukward, and his appearance slovenly. He was possessed of considerable virtues; but no one of them pure, or free from the contagion of the neighbouring vices. His generosity bordered on profusion, his learning on pedantry, his pacific disposition on pusillanimity, his wisdom on cunning, his friendship on light fancy and boyish fondness.

Q. Had he any issue?

A. By his wife, *Anne*, daughter of *Frederic II.* king of *Denmark*, and of *Sophia* of *Mecklenburgh*, he had seven children, viz. *Henry Frederic*, prince of *Wales*, who died in 1612, and whom the *English* writers of that age represent as one of the most accomplished princes in *Europe*; *Robert*, who died in his childhood; *Charles*, by whom he was succeeded on the throne: *Elizabeth*, married, in 1613, to *Frederic V.* elector palatine, and afterwards king of *Bohemia*, from whom descended the illustrious family now on the throne; the princess *Sophia*, mother of *George I.* being their issue; *Margaret*, *Mary*, and *Sophia*, who died infants.

Q. Who were the most eminent writers of this and the preceding reign?

*A. Spencer, Sidney, Donne, Shakespear, Johnson, Raleigh, Bacon, Fairfax, Harrington, and Cambden.* King James himself was an author: he wrote the *Basilicon Doron*; the true law of free monarchies; a treatise on witches and apparitions; and a commentary on the Revelations, in which he proved the pope to be Antichrist.

Q. Was the reign of king James distinguished by any other remarkable events?

*A.* It was properly during this reign, that the first *English* colonies were planted in *America*; for queen *Elizabeth* had done little more than give a name to the continent of *Virginia*. It was likewise during the same period, that Sir *Hugh Middleton* made the new river.

Q. Did any thing memorable happen in the other kingdoms of *Europe* during this reign?

*A.* In 1610, *Henry IV.* of *France* was stabbed by an enthusiastic madman, named *Ravaillac*.



## C H A P. XLIII.

C H A R L E S I. XLIV<sup>th</sup> King of England.*And Second of Great-Britain :*

From 1625 to 1649.

*Popes.*

URBAN VIII.	1623
INNOCENT X.	1644

*Emperors.*

FERDINAND II.	1619
FERDINAND III.	1637

*Kings of France.*

LEWIS XIII.	1610
LEWIS XIV.	1643

*King of Spain and Portugal:*

PHILIP IV.	1620
------------	------

*King of Portugal.*

JOHN IV.	1640 *
----------	--------

*Kings of Denmark.*

CHRISTIAN IV.	1589
---------------	------

FREDERIC III.	1648
---------------	------

*Sovereigns of Sweden.*

GUSTAVUS ADOLPHUS,	1611
--------------------	------

CHRISTINA,	1633
------------	------

Q. WHO succeeded king James I?

A. His eldest surviving son, Charles I. who ascended the throne in 1625, being then twenty-five years of age.

Q. What were the first acts of his reign?

A. As his father left him engaged in a war with Spain, he sent, a few months after its accession, a fleet to the coast of that kingdom, in order to intercept the galleons; but it returned, in a little time, without being able to effect its purpose.

Q. Had he any other foreign wars to maintain?

A. He was induced, or rather, indeed, compelled, by the earnest importunity of the duke of Buckingham, who was now become as great a favourite with Charles, as he had been with James, to declare war against France, in 1627.

\* At this period, the Portuguese recovered the independency of their country, and placed the crown upon the head of John, duke of Bragança, known by the name of John IV.

*Buckingham* conducted an armament to the relief of the protestants, who were shut up in *Rochelle*, and were closely besieged by a *French* army; but he failed in the enterprize. In the succeeding year, the earl of *Denbigh*, the duke's brother-in-law, made a like attempt, and with the same bad success. *Buckingham* was preparing for another expedition, when he was stabbed at *Portsmouth*, on the 23d of *August*, 1628, by one *Felton*, a lieutenant in the army; and though the fleet was carried over to *Rochelle* by the earl of *Lindesey*, who succeeded *Buckingham* in the command, he was prevented, by a barricado, from entering the harbour; and the town was obliged to surrender in his presence. A peace was soon after concluded both with *France* and *Spain*.

Q. What were the next measures of the king?

A. He was now engaged in a violent contest with the parliament, which proved fatal to himself, and to many of his subjects.

Q. What gave occasion to this contest?

A. The rising spirit of the age, which prompted the parliament to abridge the exorbitant prerogative of the crown; and the severe and inflexible temper of the king, which induced him, not only to support that prerogative, but even, as some think, considerably to extend it.

Q. What steps did the parliament take, in order to effect their purpose?

A. They obtained, or rather extorted from the king the petition of right; and though *Charles* was obliged to agree to that measure, he was so disgusted with the necessity imposed on him, that he resolved to govern, at least for some time, without a parliament.

Q. Did the two parties immediately come to a rupture?

A. No: nor would they probably have soon done so, had it not been for the disturbances in *Scotland*.

Q. Whence did these disturbances arise?

A. From the attempt, which king *Charles* made, to perfect the scheme, which his father had formed for establishing episcopacy in *Scotland*.

Q. What kind of church government prevailed in that kingdom?

A. The presbyterian; the general assembly having solemnly approved, in 1566, the discipline of the church of *Switzerland*,

land, as also an equality among the ministers of the church. Queen *Mary*, it is true, had publickly restored the archbishop of *St. Andrews*, and some other prelates: and king *James* had endeavoured to establish the *Scottish* church upon the same footing with that of *England*; but had not been able to accomplish his purpose.

Q. In what manner did king *Charles* propose to complete this project?

A. He sent down to *Edinburgh*, in 1637, the canons and liturgy, with a view of having them introduced in the church of *Scotland*: but the dean of *Edinburgh* had no sooner begun to read the new service, than the people rose in a tumultuous manner, stoned the bishops, insulted the privy-council; and being presently joined by some noblemen and gentlemen, who had secretly encouraged the riot, they at last subscribed that famous league, which they called the covenant. This covenant, besides a solemn renunciation of popery, contained a bond of union, by which the subscribers obliged themselves to resist all religious innovations. The general assembly met soon after at *Glasgow*, and formally abolished episcopacy.

Q. What measures did the king take for suppressing these disorders?

A. He marched towards *Scotland* with an army of 20,000 foot, and 3000 horse, attended by a fleet having 5000 land forces on board; but though equal, if not superior to the enemy in number of troops, he agreed to a peace, which was no less dishonourable to him than advantageous to them.

Q. Was this peace lasting?

A. No: the king having determined to prevent the abolition of episcopacy in *Scotland*, which he plainly foresaw must be the necessary consequence of the treaty he had made, assembled another army in 1640, in order to invade that kingdom; but the *Scots*, who had expected no less, were in arms before him, and entering *England* with superior forces, obliged him once more to consent to a peace, which was signed the 7th of *August*, 1641.

Q. How did these disturbances in *Scotland* promote the designs of the *English* malecontents?

*A.* A parliament being assembled in 1640, the members, encouraged by the near neighbourhood of the *Scotch* rebels, who still remained at *Newcastle*, compelled the king to declare them perpetual, or, at least, that they should not be dissolved without their own consent. Having carried this important point, and rendered their authority co-ordinate with the king's, they proceeded to redress every grievance, whether real or pretended, of which the nation at that time complained. They abolished the arbitrary courts of high-commission and star-chamber; deprived the king of the power of levying any taxes without the concurrence of parliament; attacked his most favourite ministers and servants; attainted archbishop *Laud*, and the earl of *Strafford*, who were both executed; expelled the bishops from their seats in the upper house; demanded the sole direction of the militia for a limited time; and finding it impossible to persuade the king to agree to this request, began openly to prepare for war. The king, on his part, seeing all hopes of accommodation lost, and that the sword alone must decide the controversy, embraced the same resolution.

Q. What was the consequence of these hostile dispositions?

*A.* Several battles were fought, with various success, between the king's forces and those of the parliament, from the year 1642 to 1645. The king was victorious at *Braddock-down*, *Stratton*, *Rowndway-down*, *Cropredy-bridge*, and *Atherton-moor*: the parliament had the advantage at *Wakefield*, *Gainsborough*, *Horn-Castle*, *Torrington*, and the second battle of *Newbury*. The battles of *Edgehill* and *Lansdown*, and the first at *Newbury*, were drawn battles. But no decisive action happened till the army commanded by prince *Rupert*, the king's nephew, was routed at *Marston-moor*, by the earl of *Manchester*, the parliamentary general. The king himself was defeated at *Naseby*, the 14th of *June*, 1645, by the lord *Fairfax*; and this prince, after making some vain attempts to retrieve his affairs, and finding himself destitute of all kind of resource, went over to the *Steech* army at *Newark*, the 5th of *May*, 1646.

Q. What reception did the *Scots* give him?

*A.* They shewed him all the exterior respect due to his dignity; but, at the same time, put a guard upon him, under

der colour of protection, and made him, in reality, a prisoner.

Q. How long did he continue among them?

A. 'Till the 23d of *January*, 1647, when they delivered him up to the commissioners of the parliament, who conducted him to *Holmby*, where he was closely confined.

Q. What became of him afterwards?

A. He was seized by *Joyce*, a cornet of horse, whom *Cromwell* had sent for that purpose, and who conducted him to the army.

Q. Was this done by the consent of the parliament?

A. On the contrary, they were surprized to the last degree, and the rather as they were upon very bad terms with the army, which began to arrogate to itself the whole sovereign power.

Q. Of whom was the parliament composed?

A. Of moderate royalists, presbyterians, and independents.

Q. What were the principles of these three parties?

A. The moderate royalists were for reducing the prerogative within proper bounds, but for preserving monarchy and episcopacy: the presbyterians were for preserving monarchy, but abolishing episcopacy: and the independents were for abolishing both monarchy and episcopacy, and establishing a republic.

Q. Which of these parties prevailed in the end?

A. The independents; chiefly by the assistance of the officers of the army, particularly of *Cromwell*, who was one of that party, or rather made use of this pretence, in order to accomplish his ambitious projects.

Q. What steps did he take for this purpose?

A. He garbled the parliament, or, as it was then called, *purged* it, by expelling all the moderate royalists and presbyterians; and having thus got a parliament entirely to his mind, he formed the bold and criminal resolution of bringing his sovereign to a trial.

Q. How was this trial conducted?

A. The house of commons (if we must so call about fifty or sixty independents, for the house was now reduced to that small number) established a pretended high court of justice, in order to try the king, though contrary to the ad-

vice and opinion of the lords, who refused to have any share in this scandalous proceeding; and they nominated, as judges, General *Fairfax*, *Oliver Cromwell*, *Henry Ireton*, *Sir Hardress Waller*, Colonel *Harrison*, *Philip Skippon*, and others, amounting, in all, to 133 persons; though no more than 70 ever attended. *Bradshaw*, a lawyer, was chosen president. *Coke* was appointed solicitor for the people of *England*. The court sat in *Westminster-hall*.

Q. Of what crimes was the king accused?

A. The charge against him was expressed in these terms: that he, *Charles Stuart*, being admitted king of *England*, and intrusted with a limited power, yet nevertheless, out of a wicked design to erect an unlimited and tyrannical government, had traiterously and maliciously levied war against the present parliament, and the people whom they represented; and was therefore impeached as a tyrant, traitor, murderer, and a public and implacable enemy to the commonwealth. The charge being read, the president directed his discourse to the king, and told him, that the court expected his answer.

Q. Did he comply with their request?

A. No: he refused to acknowledge the authority of the court, and of those who composed it. He said, that he could perceive no appearance of the upper house, so essential a member of the constitution; that the house of commons was no court of justice; and that even the commons, whose authority was pretended, were subdued by lawless force, and bereaved of their liberty; that he himself was their native hereditary king; nor was the whole authority of the state, though free and united, intitled to try him, who derived his dignity from the supreme majesty of heaven. The court, however, over-ruled his objections, and, after having obliged him to appear before them four several times, at each of which he refused to plead, they at last pronounced sentence against him the 27th of *January*, 1649. He seemed very anxious, at this time, to be admitted to a conference with the two houses; and it was generally supposed, that he intended to have resigned his crown in favour of his son, prince *Charles*.

Q. Did nobody interpose in his behalf?

A.

A. Yes; the *French*, the *Dutch*, the *Scots*, the queen, and the prince of *Wales*, exerted their utmost efforts in order to save his life; but all their endeavours proved ineffectual. The king was beheaded the 30th of *January*, on a scaffold raised in the street, near the windows of the banqueting-house, *Whitehall*. He underwent his fate with great constancy and resolution, and without discovering the least symptom either of fear or surprize. His body was embalmed; and, after having been exposed publicly during some days, in one of the apartments of *Whitehall*, it was carried to *Windſor*, and interred there in *St. George's* chapel. In a few days after the king's death, his statue in the *Royal Exchange* was thrown down; and on the pedestal these words were inscribed: *Exit tyrannus, regum ultimus*; 'the tyrant is gone, the last of kings.'

Q. What is the character of king *Charles*?

A. Lord *Clarendon*, who knew him well, and was an excellent judge, says, "that he was the worthiest gentleman, the best master, the best friend, the best husband, the best father, and the best christian of the age in which he lived:" and this character, indeed, he appears to have deserved. It must be owned, however, that he had been bred up in too high notions of the prerogative; suffered himself to be guided by weak and worthless ministers; and paid too great deference to the opinion of his consort, who was bigottedly attached to the catholic religion: and hence seem to have proceeded all these instances of misgovernment, which involved him in so many calamities during his life, and at last brought him to an untimely end.

Q. Had king *Charles* any children?

A. Yes; by his queen, *Henrietta*, daughter of *Henry IV.* of *France*, he had four sons, and five daughters, namely, *Charles-James*, who died in the cradle; *Charles*, prince of *Wales*, by whom he was succeeded; *James*, duke of *York*; *Henry*, duke of *Gloucester*, who died after the restoration; *Mary*, who espoused *William* of *Naussau*, prince of *Orange*, father to king *William III.* *Elizabeth*, confined by the parliament in *Carisbrook-Castle*, where she died; *Anne* and *Catharine*, who died in their infancy; and *Henrietta Maria*, who was carried in her infancy, by the dutchess of *Dalkeith*, into *France*, where she married *Philip*, duke of *Anjou* and

*Orleans*, brother to *Lewis XIV.* This lady died in 1670.

Q. Did any other remarkable events happen in this reign?

A. In 1635, there was presented to the king, one *William Parr*, who enjoyed a perfect state of health, though 152 years of age, being born the last year of *Edward IV.* In 1641, the catholics in *Ireland* broke out into a furious rebellion, and massacred about 40,000 *English*.

## C H A P. XLIV.

## INTER-REGNUM.

## The COMMONWEALTH of England.

From 1649 to 1653.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
INNOCENT X.	1644	JOHN IV.	1640
ALEXANDER VII.	1655	ALONSO VI.	1656
<i>Emperors.</i>		<i>King of Denmark.</i>	
FERDINAND III.	1637	FREDERICK III.	1648
LEOPOLD	1658	<i>Sovereigns of Sweden.</i>	
<i>King of France.</i>		CHRISTINA	1633
LEWIS XIV.	1643	CHARLES X.	1655
<i>King of Spain.</i>			
PHILIP IV.	1620		

Q. WHAT measures did the parliament take after the tragical death of king *Charles I*?

A. They issued a proclamation, declaring it high treason for any one to acknowledge *Charles Stuart*, eldest son of the late king, as sovereign of *England*. And they even passed an act, abolishing the kingly power, as useles, burdensome, and dangerous.

Q. What kind of government did they establish?

A. The house of commons (for so we must henceforth term a small and inconsiderable part of that assembly) abolished the house of lords, and decreed, that the state should, for the future, be governed by the representatives of the people,



people, sitting in parliament, under the form of a commonwealth. On their seal, which they called the *Great-Seal of England*, was this inscription, *In the first year of Freedom, by God's blessing restored*, 1648. They named a council of state, consisting of thirty-eight persons, to whom all addresses were made, who gave orders to all generals and admirals, who executed the laws, and who digested all business before it was introduced into parliament.

Q. Did all parts of the *British* dominions submit quietly to their government?

A. No: the *Scots* and the *Irish* recognized *Charles II.* as their king, and resolved to support his cause by force of arms.

Q. What steps did they take for that purpose?

A. The *Irish*, headed by the marquis of *Ormond*, reduced several places belonging to the parliament; and even threatened *Dublin* with a siege: but *Jones*, the governor of that city, having received a reinforcement of four thousand men, attacked *Ormond* on the second of *August*, 1649, and gave him a total defeat.

Q. What was the consequence of this overthrow?

A. *Oliver Cromwell*, who had lately been elected lieutenant of *Ireland*, arrived at *Dublin* with an army of twelve thousand men, and falling upon the royalists with irresistible fury, he routed them in several engagements; took *Fredab*, *Wexford*, *Kelkenny*, and other places, where he put the garrisons to the sword; and proceeded in his conquests with such incredible rapidity, that in the space of nine months he almost intirely subdued the island. Above forty thousand *Irish* are said to have abandoned their country, and gone into foreign services.

Q. What where the *Scots* doing in the mean time?

A. They recalled *Charles II.* who, since his father's death, had resided for the most part in *France* or in *Holland*; and they instantly put him at the head of a considerable army.

Q. What success did he meet with?

A. *Oliver Cromwell*, who had returned from *Ireland*, and assumed the command of the parliamentary forces, in the room of general *Fairfax*, marched suddenly into *Scotland* with 16,000 men, and attacking the royalists at *Dunbar*, on the third of *September*, 1650, he put them to

a total rout. He then took possession of *Leith* and *Edinburgh*.

Q. Did not this defeat ruin king *Charles's* affairs?

A. No: he was solemnly crowned at *St. Andrew's* the first of *January*, 1651; soon after which he assembled an army of 14,000 men, and encamped at *Torwood*, in the neighbourhood of *Sterling*.

Q. Was he able to maintain his ground?

A. *Cromwell* marched against him, and endeavoured to bring him to a battle; but finding it impossible to draw him from his intrenchments, he passed the *Forth*, and cut off the king's communication with the northern countries.

Q. How did *Charles* extricate herself from his present difficulty?

A. Seeing the way open into *England*, he entered that country, and advanced as far as *Worcester*, where he was honourably received.

Q. Was not this an oversight in *Cromwell*?

A. Yes: but he quickly repaired it by his vigilance and activity. He followed the king with hasty marches, and being continually reinforced by the militia of the counties through which he passed, he fell upon *Worcester*, the third of *September*, 1651, with an army of 40,000 men, and, after meeting with a faint resistance, made himself master of the place. The whole *Scotch* army were either killed or taken prisoners. The king was obliged to seek his safety by flight.

Q. What became of him afterwards?

A. He dressed himself in the habit of a peasant; and in this disguise, travelled through several parts of the kingdom, being frequently in danger of being seized by his enemies, especially as a price was set upon his head. The better to elude the researches of his pursuers, he passed a whole day on a tufted oak at *Boscobel* in *Staffordshire*, thence called *The Royal Oak*; where he saw pass under him some persons on horseback, who expressed, in his hearing, their earnest wishes that he might fall into their hands. At last, after a concealment of forty-one days, he embarked in a vessel at *Shoreham* in *Sussex*, and landed safely at *Fescamp* in *Normandy*, the twenty-second of *October*, 1651. No less than

than forty men and women had at different times been privy to his escape.

Q. Was the commonwealth of *England* engaged in any foreign wars?

A. Yes, with *Holland*; and several furious battles were fought with various success between the fleets of the two nations, in 1652 and 1653. One battle, in particular, lasted three whole days. The principal commanders on the side of *England* were *Blake*, *Monk*, and *Ayscue*; on that of *Holland*, *Tromp* and *De Ruyter*.

Q. How long did the commonwealth continue?

A. Till the spring of 1653, when the commons endeavouring to disband some of the forces, *Cromwell*, who was at the head of the army, and knew that his authority depended solely on that support, suddenly dissolved the parliament on the twentieth day of *April*. To gratify the nation, however, with the appearance of a parliament, he appointed 144 persons (known by the names of *Barebone's* parliament) to meet at *Westminster*, and manage the affairs of government. But these being chosen from the very dregs of the populace, soon found themselves exposed to the derision of the public: they therefore resigned their power into the hands of *Cromwell*, who caused himself to be proclaimed Protector of the kingdoms of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, the 16th of *December*, 1653.

## OLIVER CROMWELL, Protector.

From 1653 to 1658.

Q. WHOSE son was *Oliver Cromwell*?

A. Of Mr. *Robert Cromwell*, a gentleman of good family and fortune in the county of *Huntington*; and of *Elizabeth Stuart*, daughter of Sir *Richard Stuart*, of the *Isle of Ely*, remotely allied, as is by some supposed, to the royal family. With regard to the story of his being descended from *Cromwell*, earl of *Essex*, in the reign of king *Henry VIII.* it seems not to be supported by any good authority.

Q. Pray give some farther account of *Cromwell*.

A. In his youth he had led a very dissolute and licentious life; and consumed in gaming, drinking, debauchery, and country riots, a considerable part of his patrimony. About the age of twenty, however, he suddenly reformed, entered into the married state, affected a grave and composed behaviour, and became a most zealous and rigid puritan. Being chosen a member of the long parliament, he was one of the most violent of the country-party, and strenuously promoted every thing that could tend to widen the breach between the king and the people. When the civil wars began, he raised a troop of horse, which he afterwards augmented to a regiment; and he first introduced that discipline, and inspired that spirit, which rendered the parliamentary armies in the end victorious. In all the great battles, which were fought during the course of the civil wars, he had a principal and distinguished share. Endowed alike with courage and prudence, and possessed at the same time of the most consummate hypocrisy, he rose, by his merit, no less than, by his cunning, to be the first in the army; and, soon after, to be the first in the state.

Q. Were not the people enraged at *Cromwell's* usurpation?

A. Not so much as might have been expected. Their hatred against the *Long*, or, as it was now called, by way of derision, the *Rump* Parliament, was so great, that they were willing to submit to any other kind of government.

Q. How did *Cromwell* behave in his high station?

A. With as much equity, and even lenity, as could be expected from one in such delicate circumstances. He was obliged, however, for his own safety, and for the sake of preserving the public tranquillity, to make some examples; and he put to death *Gayard* and *Vowel*, who had conspired against his person. He likewise condemned some other royalists, who had formed a design to overturn his authority.

Q. Was *Cromwell's* protectorship acknowledged by the other states of *Europe*?

A. The *Dutch*, the *French*, and the *Spaniards* seemed to vie with each other in courting his alliance.

Q. Did he accept their proffers of friendship ?

A. He concluded a peace with the *Dutch*, which was signed at *London* the 15th of *April*, 1654 ; though not before he had compelled that people to come under an obligation to banish all the enemies of the *English* commonwealth ; to punish those who had been concerned in the massacre of *Amboyna* ; to yield the honour of the flag to *England* ; to pay 85,000*l.* as an indemnification for the losses which the *English East-India* company had sustained ; and to deliver to that company the island of *Polarone*, in the *East-Indies*.

Q. Did he act in the same manner towards *France* ?

A. Yes : he concluded a peace with that nation, which was proclaimed at *London* the 23d of *October*, 1655 ; and the *French* were glad to agree to this treaty, without obtaining the least reparation for the insult they had received from the *English* commonwealth, who, in 1652, had intercepted the *French* succours that were sailing to *Dunkirk*, then closely besieged by the *Spaniards*, and which, for want of that supply, fell into the hands of the enemy.

Q. How did *Cromwell* behave towards *Spain* ?

A. In a less friendly manner, notwithstanding the manifest partiality, which that court had discovered in favour of the *English* parliament. But *Cromwell* hated the *Spaniards* on account of their bigotted attachment to the catholic religion : he was acquainted too with the extensive dominions, and yet extreme weakness of that great monarchy ; and he was desirous, if possible, to make some important conquest, which might transmit his name with honour to posterity. With this view he fitted out an armament in 1654, and sent it, under *Pen* and *Venables*, to make a descent upon the island of *Hispaniola*. The attempt miscarried ; but the commanders, in their return, attacked *Jamaica*, and took it the 16th of *May* 1655. Some time after, *Blake* and *Montague* made prize, near *Cadix*, of two *Spanish* galleons, valued at two millions of pieces of eight ; and sunk five others. *Blake* likewise burnt sixteen galleons in the bay of *Santa Cruz* in the *Canaries* ; but this admiral died in his return to *England*, and just when he was within sight of land ; and *Cromwell*, who had a great regard for him, honoured him with a pompous funeral at the public expence, and

caused his remains to be deposited in *Henry the VIIth's* chapel, in *Westminster-Abbey*.

Q. Did *Cromwell* obtain any other advantages over the *Spaniards*?

A. He assisted the *French* in their war against that nation; and when the confederate army took *Mardyke* and *Dunkirk* in 1658, both these places were put into his hands.

Q. Did he give any other proof of his vigour and resolution?

A. In 1654, *Don Pantaleon Sa*, brother to the *Portuguese* ambassador, and joined with him in the same commission, assassinated a gentleman upon the *Royal Exchange*, and took refuge in his brother's house. The populace surrounded the house, and threatened to set it on fire. *Cromwell* sent a guard, who seized the criminal. He was instantly brought to trial; and, notwithstanding the remonstrances of the ambassador, who pleaded the privileges of his office, *Don Pantaleon* was executed on *Tower-bill*. The *Portuguese* complained loudly of this violation of the laws of nations; but as they were in no condition to revenge the injury, they agreed soon after to a treaty of peace and alliance.

Q. How many parliaments did *Cromwell* assemble?

A. Two, besides *Barebone's*; and though the first of these was somewhat refractory, he yet obliged the second, partly by force, and partly by artifice, to confirm his protectorship, and even to make him a tender of the crown. This offer, however, he thought it most prudent to reject.

Q. Of what disease did *Cromwell* die?

A. Of a tertian ague, the 3d of *September*, 1658, being then in the fifty-ninth year of his age. His body was interred with regal pomp in *Henry the VIIth's* chapel, in *Westminster-Abbey*; though some think it was either sunk in the *Thames*, or buried in *Naseby-Field*. A little before his death he named his son *Richard* his successor.

Q. What is the character of *Cromwell*?

A. Cardinal *Mazarine* was wont to call him a fortunate madman: father *Orleans* styles him a judicious villain: lord *Clarendon*, a brave wicked man: and *Gregorio Leti* says, that he was a tyrant without vices, and a prince without virtues. His courage, indeed, and his conduct as a soldier, were unquestionable; but his abilities, as a statesman, were  
by

by no means proportionable: for, after he had, by his cunning and capacity, obtained the supreme power, he seems still to have been at a loss what kind of government to establish. He continued, it is true, till the day of his death, to act only as protector; but the extent of his authority was never precisely determined; and it is generally allowed, that, had it not been for the well-grounded apprehension of being opposed by the army, he would willingly have accepted the title of king.

Q. Had he any children?

A. By his wife, *Elizabeth*, daughter of Sir *James Bouchier*, he had two sons, and four daughters, viz. *Richard*, who succeeded him in the protectorship; *Henry*, who, at the time of his father's death, was lord-lieutenant of *Ireland*; *Bridget*, married first to *Henry Ireton*, and afterwards to lieutenant-general *Fleetwood*; *Elizabeth*, his favourite, married to Mr. *Claypole*; *Mary*, espoused to the lord viscount *Falconbridge*; and *Frances*, matched first with Mr. *Rich*, grandson and heir of the earl of *Warwick*, and afterwards with Sir *John Ruffel*.

## RICHARD CROMWELL, *Second Protector.*

Q. WHO succeeded *Oliver* in the protectorship?

A. *Richard*, his eldest son, who was proclaimed without opposition, the 4th of *September*, 1658, the day immediately following his father's death.

Q. What were the first acts of his government.

A. He summoned a parliament, which met at *Westminster* the 27th of *January*, 1659; and which, after confirming his authority, were proceeding to other matters, when their deliberations were suddenly interrupted by the cabals of the army.

Q. Whence arose those cabals?

A. *Richard* had unwarily given his consent to the calling a council of officers. These were no sooner assembled, than they presented a petition to him, requesting the power of chusing their own general. The parliament, alarmed at this demand, voted, that there should be no council of officers

officers during its sitting. This vote brought matters immediately to a rupture. The officers hastened to *Richard*, and compelled him to dissolve the parliament; and by the same act, the protector was by every one considered as effectually deposed. Soon after, he signed his deposition in form. He only desired that his debts should be paid by the public; but even this favour he could not obtain. His brother *Henry* was at that time governor of *Ireland*; and as he was extremely beloved, both by the army and people, he might have made (had he pleased) considerable resistance; but being naturally of a moderate temper, and being likewise threatened by *Waller*, *Jones*, and other officers, he very quietly resigned his command. Both of them remained safe after the restoration. *Richard*, however, thought proper to travel for a few years; and returning to *England*, he continued to live in privacy and retirement, till the latter end of queen *Anne's* reign, when he died.

Q. What followed upon the deposition of *Richard*?

A. The council of officers, headed by *Fleetwood*, a weak man, and *Lambert*, an ambitious one, seized upon the government; and after a short anarchy, restored the *Long* or *Rump* Parliament, which had been dissolved by *Oliver* in 1653.

Q. What course did this parliament pursue?

A. They were concerting measures for subjecting the military to the civil authority, when *Fleetwood*, *Lambert*, and other officers, suspecting their designs, expelled them the house the 13th of *October*; and appointed twenty-three persons, whom they called a *Committee of Safety*, and to whom they pretended to entrust the sole administration of affairs, which, nevertheless, they were determined to retain in their own hands.

Q. How were these revolutions relished by the people?

A. Very ill; particularly by the presbyterians and royalists, who composed the bulk of the nation; and who, in order to free themselves from such a succession of tyrants, entered into a design of restoring the king; and with this view, endeavoured to engage in their interest, general *Monk*, who at that time commanded in *Scotland*.

Q. Did they succeed in their endeavours?

A.



*A. Monk*, it is probable, had already formed the same design; but as he knew it could not be accomplished without observing the most profound secrecy, he affected to disregard the applications that were made to him. He would not even enter into a correspondence with the king, or with any commissioned by him, till affairs should be brought into a more favourable situation.

Q. How did he conduct his project?

*A.* He pretended to espouse the cause of the expelled parliament; and in order to restore them, as he said, to their authority, he began his march immediately for *England*. The greatest part of the army followed his example: *Lambert*, who was the soul of the opposite party, was thrown into the *Tower*: and thus the *Rump* Parliament, being now freed from all kind of restraint, assembled once more, the 26th of *December*, 1659.

Q. Did *Monk* stop his march upon receiving the news of this fresh revolution?

*A.* No: he continued to advance, though still under the pretence of supporting the authority of parliament. He knew that the people in general were so enraged at the tyranny of the rump and the army, that the assembling of a free parliament, (which he was determined to effect,) and the restoring of the king, was one and the same measure. Accordingly, upon his arrival in *London*, he restored to their seats all those members, who had been expelled the house in 1648, a little before the late king's trial. These being re-admitted, appeared to be the majority; and after giving orders for the assembling of a free parliament on the 25th of *April* following, they immediately dissolved themselves. This measure had been previously concerted with the general?

Q. What step did *Monk* take next?

*A.* He sent a message to his majesty, who was then in *Spain*, exhorting him to retire into *Holland*, and to depute some person to lay his proposals before the parliament.

Q. Was not this scheme like to have been overturned by an unforeseen accident?

*A.* Yes: *Lambert* escaped from the *Tower*, and began to assemble forces; but he had been able to collect only four troops of horse, when, being closely pursued by colonel *Ingoldsby*,

*Ingoldſby*, he was taken priſoner with very little difficulty.

Q. What followed after this ?

A. The parliament aſſembling on the day appointed, general *Monk* informed them, that Sir *John Granville* was arrived with a letter from his majeſty. Sir *John* was introduced into the houſe : his majeſty's letter was read and approved : a preſent of 50,000 *l.* was conferred on the king ; 10,000 *l.* on the duke of *York*, 5000 *l.* on the duke of *Glouceſter* : a deputation was ſent to invite his majeſty to return : and he was accordingly proclaimed king of *Great-Britain*, the 8th of *May*, 1660.

Q. Where was *Charles* at this time ?

A. At *Breda* in *Holland*, whence he immediately departed ; and embarking at the *Hague*, on *Wednesday* the 23d of *May*, landed at *Dover* on *Friday*, accompanied by the dukes of *York* and *Glouceſter*, and great numbers of the nobility and gentry. On his landing, he was met by general *Monk*, whom he cordially embraced, honouring him with the appellation of father ; and upon his arrival at *Canterbury*, he inveſted him with the order of the *Gar*ter. On the 29th of *May*, which was his birth-day, he entered *London*, and proceeded to his palace at *Whitehall*, amidſt ſuch ſhouts and acclamations of the people, that the king had reaſon to ſay, it muſt ſurely have been his own fault, that he had not ſooner taken poſſeſſion of the throne ; ſince he found every body ſo zealous for promoting his happy reſtoration.

Q. What eminent writers flouriſhed during this period ?

A. *Milton*, *Waller*, *Cowley*, *Denham*, *Harrington*, *Hobbes*, *Clarendon*, and *Harvey*, who firſt diſcovered the circulation of the blood.

Q. Did not a great many religious ſects ſpring up in *England* about this time ?

A. So many, that it would be almoſt impoſſible to enumerate them. That of the *Quakers* was the moſt remarkable. Its founder was one *George Fox*, born at *Drayton*, in *Lancaſhire*, in 1624. He was the ſon of a weaver, and had been bound apprentice to a ſhoe-maker.

## C H A P. XLV.

CHARLES II. XLV<sup>th</sup> King of England,  
And Third of Great-Britain :

From 1660 to 1685.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>Kings of Spain.</i>	
ALEXANDER VII.	1655	PHILIP IV.	1620
CELESTIN IX.	1667	CHARLES II.	1665
CLEMENT X.	1670	<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
INNOCENT XI.	1676	ALONSO VI.	1656
		PEDRO II.	1683
<i>Emperor.</i>		<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
LEOPOLD	1658	FREDERIC III.	1648
		CHRISTIAN V.	1670
<i>King of France.</i>		<i>King of Sweden.</i>	
LEWIS XIV.	1643	CHARLES XI.	1660

Q. WHAT were the first steps king *Charles* took upon his ascending the throne?

A. After having settled his ministry, he passed an act of indemnity, out of which forty-nine of the late king's judges were excepted. Twenty-nine of these were condemned to death. Ten only were executed. The rest were reprieved, and dispersed into several prisons. The bodies of *Cromwell*, *Ireton*, *Bradshaw*, and *Pride*, were taken out of their graves, hung up at *Tyburn*, and interred under the gallows.

Q. What were the king's next measures?

A. He repealed all the laws which had been enacted against a kingly government; rewarded those who had adhered to his interest; restored the episcopal clergy to their livings, of which *Cromwell* had deprived them, in order to bestow them upon the presbyterians: and, in a word, replaced every thing upon the same footing on which it stood before the commencement of the civil wars.

Q. Was *Charles* engaged in any foreign wars?

A. In 1664, he declared war against *Holland*, upon very frivolous pretences. The chief reason alledged, was the taking

taking of two *English* ships by the *Dutch*, the *Good-Hope* and the *Bona-venture*; and even with regard to these, the *Hollanders* offered to make proper satisfaction.

Q. Was this war attended with any remarkable action?

A. Several naval battles were fought with great courage and obstinacy on both sides, and, at the same time, with considerable bloodshed. In the first of these, which happened the 3d of *June*, 1665, the duke of *York*, who commanded the *English* fleet, obtained a complete victory over the *Dutch*, who were commanded by *Obdam*. During the heat of the engagement, *Obdam's* ship blew up, and himself perished in it. The *Dutch* lost nineteen other ships with about 6000 men; and some affirm, that their whole fleet might have been destroyed, had not orders been issued to slacken sail, by *Brounker*, a gentleman of the duke's bed-chamber, who pretended authority from his master. The duke disclaimed the orders; but *Brounker* was never sufficiently punished for his rashness.

Q. What was the issue of the other battles?

A. One of them, which happened in *June*, 1666, lasted four days, and the event was not decisive. The *English*, commanded by prince *Rupert*, and by *Monk*, now created duke of *Albemarle*, defeated the *Dutch* in the month of *July* following. They even entered the road of *Ulie*, and burned 142 ships, together with *Brandaris*, a large and populous village on the coast. In revenge for this injury, the *Dutch* entered the *Tbames* in 1667, sailed up the *Medway*, and burned several ships at *Cbatham*. Both sides, however, were now equally weary of the war; and a peace was accordingly concluded at *Breda*, on the 10th of *July* of the same year.

Q. What was the next foreign transaction of *Charles*?

A. He concluded the famous treaty, called the *Triple League or Alliance*, between the *English*, the *Swedes*, and the *Dutch*. It was signed at the *Hague*, the 14th of *January*, 1668.

Q. What was the intention of this alliance?

A. To check the ambition of *Lewis XIV.* king of *France*, who, under pretence of supporting the rights of his wife, who was a daughter of *Spain*, had invaded the *Spanish Netherlands*,

*therlands*, made himself master of a great many places, and seemed plainly to aspire to universal monarchy.

Q. How long did *Charles* persevere in this wise conduct?

A. 'Till 1670, when actuated, partly by his own fickle temper, partly by the advice of his wicked ministers, he broke the triple league, and entered into an alliance with *France*.

Q. What was the scope of this new alliance?

A. It was never certainly known; but it is generally thought, that *Charles* engaged to assist *Lewis* in making a conquest of *Holland*, and *Lewis* promised to enable *Charles* to render himself absolute in his own dominions.

Q. What steps did they take in order to execute these projects?

A. They both declared war against *Holland*, in *March*, 1672; and their example was soon after followed by the elector of *Cologne*, and the bishop of *Munster*; so that the *Dutch* were suddenly and unawares attacked by four different powers at once.

Q. How did they behave in this desperate extremity?

A. They were at first thrown into the utmost consternation; but having soon recovered their native spirit, they exerted themselves with so much vigour and activity, that they not only repelled all the attacks of their enemies, but at last obliged them to agree to reasonable terms of peace.

Q. What were the principal events of this war?

A. Four great naval battles were fought, between the *Dutch* on the one hand, and the combined fleets of *England* and *France* on the other, between the years 1672 and 1674; but none of them were decisive. The *English* were commanded by the duke of *York*, prince *Rupert*, the earl of *Sandwich*, and Sir *Edward Sprague*; the *Dutch*, by de *Ruyler* and *Tromp*, son of the famous admiral of that name; and the *French*, by *Marschal d'Évres*. Peace was concluded between *England* and *Holland* the 28th of *February*, 1674. *Charles* would willingly have continued the war longer; but finding, that the commons, suspicious of the designs which *Lewis* and he had formed, would grant him no supplies, he was obliged, though with great reluctance, to put an end to hostilities.

Q. What

Q. What were the operations of the war at land?

A. The king of *France* invaded the *Dutch* with a numerous army; and meeting with little or no opposition, and being assisted by the elector of *Cologne* and the bishop of *Munster*, he soon made himself master of all the united provinces, *Holland* and *Zealand* excepted: nor could even these be saved but by laying them under water. The *Dutch*, confounded at the progress of the enemy, were struck with such a panic, that they had actually once entertained thoughts of abandoning their native country, and transporting themselves and their effects to their settlements in the *East-Indies*. At length, however, they assumed courage from despair, and resolved to expend the last drop of their blood, in defending against their haughty and insulting foes the two provinces, which still remained to them. The people rose in arms; they displaced their magistrates, who then ruled the state; they murdered the *De Wits*, who were supposed to be attached to the *French* faction; they invested the prince of *Orange* with the office of stadtholder; and being soon after joined by the *Spaniards* and *Imperialists*, they continued, for the space of six successive campaigns, to make such a steady and vigorous resistance against the whole power of the *French* monarchy, that *Lewis*, being deprived of all hopes of accomplishing his ambitious projects, was glad to agree to a peace, without retaining any of the conquests which he had made from the *Dutch*, except *Grave* and *Maestricht*. He preserved, however, a good number of places which he had taken in the *Spanish Netherlands*. The treaty was signed at *Nimeguen*, the 30th of *June*, 1678.

Q. Did not the parliament exhort king *Charles*, towards the latter end of this war, to engage in an offensive alliance with the *Dutch*, and to put a stop to the progress of the *French* arms?

A. So earnestly, that he at last seemed to yield to their entreaties. The prince of *Orange* too, who came over to *England*, in order to espouse the princess *Mary*, eldest daughter of the duke of *York*, whom he married the 4th of *November*, 1677, exerted all his influence for the same purpose; and *Charles* was at length prevailed on to promise, that if *Lewis* should refuse the conditions of peace,

which he offered him, he would instantly declare war against that monarch, and compel him to accept of reasonable terms. He even went so far as to assemble a formidable fleet, and raise an army of 30,000 men; but, after all these mighty boasts and preparations, he suddenly changed his resolution; and the allies, finding they could have no dependance upon the promises of *Charles*, concluded a peace upon the best terms they could obtain.

Q. How did *Charles* conduct the domestic administration of his kingdoms?

A. In a very unpopular manner; being almost continually at variance with the parliament, particularly with the commons.

Q. What gave occasion to this misunderstanding?

A. The suspicion they entertained of the king's designs to render himself absolute; and the danger they apprehended from the succession of the duke of *York*, who had declared himself a *Roman catholic*.

Q. What steps did they take, in order to guard against this danger?

A. The commons brought in a bill for excluding the duke of *York* from the throne; and, after a long and violent debate, it passed by a great majority of voices; but being sent up to the lords for their concurrence, it was thrown out by a majority of thirty-three.

Q. Whom did the commons propose to appoint the king's successor on the throne?

A. Some had in view the princess of *Orange*; but others had fixed their eyes upon *James*, duke of *Monmouth*, a natural son of the king, by one *Lucy Walters*, whom the partizans of that nobleman alledged had been married to his majesty. The king, however, thought proper to contradict this report, and to declare in full council, that he had never been married to *Mrs. Walters*.

Q. Was there not a popish plot hatched in *England* during this reign?

A. Yes; at least, if the depositions of *Oates*, *Bedloe*, and others, may be credited. These men declared, upon oath, in 1678, that a conspiracy was formed, by the *Jesuits*, for assassinating the king, subverting the govern-

ment, extirpating the protestant religion, and establishing popery: that *Thomas Whitebread*, provincial of the *Jesuits* in *England*, was at the head of this conspiracy: and that the design was secretly favoured by the king of *France*, the duke of *York*, and several of the nobility and gentry.

Q. What credit was given to this information?

A. The king paid no regard to it, and treated the plot itself as a mere fiction; but the parliament, having taken the matter into consideration, and farther examined the witnesses, resolved, that the evidence they had produced was well founded, and that a plot had actually been formed.

Q. What was the consequence of this resolution?

A. *Whitebread*, *Fenwic*, *Gavan*, *Turner*, and *Harcourt*, all of them *Jesuits*, together with *Coleman*, the duke of *York's* secretary, were tried, condemned, and executed.

Q. What are the sentiments of different historians with regard to this plot?

A. Some maintain it to be true in all its circumstances: others admit its truth only with regard to the design of subverting the government, and destroying the protestant religion; but deny its reality with respect to the project of murdering the king: while a third set represent it as false in every particular, and contrived on purpose to distress the court, and render the duke of *York* odious.

Q. Was there not likewise a protestant plot carried on in this reign?

A. Yes, in 1683. The principal conspirators seem only to have proposed the excluding the duke of *York* from the throne, in case of his brother's decease; but some of the inferior sort, it is said, had embraced more criminal and dangerous resolutions. They had, it is affirmed, laid a regular plan for murdering both the king and the duke, in their return from *Newmarket*. This assassination they intended to commit at a place called the *Rye-house*, near *Hodson* in *Hertfordshire*; whence this conspiracy is commonly known by the name of the *Rye-house* plot. It is further added, that the king escaped the danger merely by accident; and that the house, in which he lodged at *Newmarket*, happening to take fire, he returned to *London* sooner than was expected; by which means the



conspirators were disappointed. Whatever be in this, certain it is, that several persons were accused of being concerned in this conspiracy, and were tried, condemned, and executed. Among these were lord *Ruffel*, one of the most popular noblemen in the kingdom, and *Algernon Sidney*, the famous republican. The earl of *Essex* too was committed to the *Tower*, where he was soon after found with his throat cut. The duke of *Monmouth* likewise was impeached of the same crime, and was some time in disgrace, but afterwards obtained a pardon. The earl of *Shaftsbury* fled to *Holland*, and there ended his days.

Q. Did you not say, that king *Charles* was almost continually at variance with his parliaments?

A. Yes; and this misunderstanding rose at length to such a pitch, that the king continued, during the latter part of his reign, to rule without parliaments: and being thus freed from the salutary restraint of these national assemblies, he proceeded to invade, without fear or remorse, the most valuable privileges of his subjects. The city of *London*, and most of the corporations in *England*, were deprived of their charters; and though these were afterwards restored, yet was it upon such precarious conditions, as left the liberties of the people entirely at the king's mercy.

Q. Was not *Charles* suspected of being secretly attached to the catholic religion?

A. Yes; and not without reason: for, though he made profession, during his whole life, of the protestant faith, he yet died in the *Romish* communion.

Q. What steps did he take in favour of the *Roman* catholics?

A. He published, in 1672, a declaration for liberty of conscience, which was chiefly calculated for their benefit; but he was obliged, by the parliament, in 1673, to revoke this indulgence.

Q. What was the most remarkable law enacted in this reign?

A. The act of *Habeas-Corpus* (passed in 1679) by which the subject is secured against arbitrary imprisonment; one of the most important laws that ever was made since the commencement of the *English* monarchy; and so much the

more valuable, as nothing of the like nature has place in any other government in the world.

Q Did any thing memorable happen in the other parts of the *British* dominions during this reign?

A. The rigour exercised against the presbyterians in *Scotland* excited great disturbances in that kingdom. The presbyterians rose up in arms; they murdered Dr. *Sharpe*, archbishop of *St. Andrews*: and they even fought two battles with the king's forces, one at *Pentland-hills*, the other at *Bothwell bridge*; in both which, however, they were easily defeated.

Q When did king *Charles* die?

A. The 6th of *October*, 1685, in the fifty-fifth year of his age, and the twenty-fifth of his reign. He was carried off by a fit resembling an apoplexy; and a suspicion prevailed, that he had been poisoned by the *Jesuits*: but this, according to the most impartial historians, was altogether groundless.

Q Describe the person and qualities of *Charles*.

A. He possessed a vigorous constitution, a fine shape, a manly figure, a graceful air; and though his features were harsh, yet was his countenance, in the main, lively and agreeable. Frank, open, affable, and polite, he engaged the affections of all who approached him. He was endued with a ready wit, a quick apprehension, and a solid judgment; but this last quality he was prevented from exercising to any useful purpose, by his love of ease and his love of pleasure, which seem to have been his ruling passions. During his exile, he had applied himself to the study of several parts of mechanics, particularly the art of ship-building, in which he had made considerable proficiency.

Q Was he ever married?

A. Yes; *May* 21, 1662, he espoused *Catharine*, daughter of *John IV.* king of *Portugal*. That princess had, for her portion, two millions of crusades, or about 300,000 l. sterling, together with two fortresses, *Tangiers* in *Africa*, and *Bombay* in the *East Indies*.

Q Had *Charles* any children?

A. None by his queen; but several by his mistresses.

Q Pray give an account of them.

A. By Mrs. *Lucy Walters*, he had *James Scot*, afterwards created duke of *Monmouth*: by *Elizabeth Killigrew*, viscountess *Sbannon*, he had *Charlotte-Jemima-Maria*, married to the earl of *Yarmouth*: by Mrs. *Catherine Peg*, he had *Charles Fitz-Charles*, commonly called *Don Carlos*, created earl of *Plymouth*, married to the heiress of the duke of *Leeds*, and killed at *Tangiers* in 1680: by *Barbara Villiers*, dutchess of *Cleveland*, he had *Charles Fitz-Roy*, created duke of *Southampton*; *Henry Fitz-Roy*, created duke of *Grafton*; and *George Fitz-Roy*, duke of *Northumberland*; *Anne Fitz-Roy*, married to the earl of *Suffex*; *Charlotte Fitz-Roy*, matched with the earl of *Litchfield*; and *Barbara*, who became a nun at *Pontoise* in *France*: by *Louisa de Querouaille*, dutchess of *Portsmouth*, he had *Charles Lennox*, duke of *Richmond*: by Mrs. *Eleanor Gwyn*, an actress, he had *Charles Beauclerk*, duke of *St. Albans*, and *James Beauclerk*, who died in his infancy: and by Mrs. *Mary Davis*, a lady of the same profession, he had *Mary Tudor*, married to the earl of *Derwentwater*.

Q. Was this reign distinguished by no other remarkable events?

A. In 1661, the Royal Society was founded. In 1662, king *Charles* sold *Dunkirk* to the *French* for 400,000*l.* In 1665, *London* was visited by a dreadful plague, which swept away, in the space of a year, above 100,000 of the inhabitants. This was succeeded, the year following, by a calamity, if possible, still more terrible. A fire, breaking out at a baker's house near the bridge, raged with such violence, that, before it could be extinguished, it consumed 400 streets, 89 churches, and 13,200 private houses. The ruins comprehending 406 acres of ground, extended from the *Tower* along the river to the *Temple-Church*, and from the north-east gate as far as *Holborn-Bridge*. In 1671, one *Blood*, a disbanded officer of the protector, formed a design of carrying off the crown and regalia from the *Tower*; and he had very near succeeded in the attempt. He had bound and wounded *Edwards*, the keeper of the Jewel-office, and had got out of the *Tower* with his prey, when he was overtaken and secured with some of his associates. In 1683, king *Charles* received two ambassadors; one from the emperor of *Fex.* and *Morocco*, the other from the

king of *Bantam*. This reign is likewise remarkable for the first rise of the two famous parties, called *Whigs* and *Tories*.

## C H A P. XLVI.

JAMES II. XLVI<sup>th</sup> King of England,  
And Fourth of Great-Britain.

From 1685 to 1688.

<i>Pope.</i>		<i>King of Portugal.</i>	
INNOCENT XI.	1676	PEDRO II.	1683
<i>Emperor.</i>		<i>King of Denmark.</i>	
LEOPOLD	1658	CHRISTIAN V.	1670
<i>King of France.</i>		<i>King of Sweden.</i>	
LEWIS XIV.	1643	CHARLES XI.	1660
<i>King of Spain.</i>			
CHARLES II.	1665		

Q. WHO ascended the throne after *Charles II*?

A. His brother *James*, duke of *York*, who assumed the title of *James II*. He began his reign in 1685, being then fifty-two years of age.

Q. Did he succeed with the unanimous consent of the nation?

A. Yes, at least in appearance: the *tories* were his fast friends; and the *whigs*, who, in the preceding reign, had endeavoured to exclude him from the succession to the throne, were become so unpopular on account of the share they had in the *Rye-house* conspiracy, that they were able to make little or no opposition.

Q. What were the first acts of his reign?

A. He assembled the privy-council, where, after bestowing some praises on the memory of his predecessor, he declared his firm resolution to maintain the established government, both in church and state.

Q. Did he adhere to this wise resolution?

A. No: he issued a proclamation for levying the duties of the customs and excise, without the consent of parliament;

ment; though these duties had been voted only during the life of the late king.

Q. Did not the parliament resent this stretch of authority?

A. No: that assembly meeting the 19th of *May*, granted king *James* an annual revenue of above 2,000,000*l.* sterling. The *Scotch* parliament too were no less liberal, in proportion to their abilities; for, besides annexing the duty of excise to the crown for ever, they voted an yearly subsidy of 260,000*l.* sterling. About this time *Titus Oates*, being tried for perjury in the affair of the popish plot, was condemned to pay a fine of 2000 marks, to be whipped from *Aldgate* to *Tyburn*, to be imprisoned during life, and to be pilloried five times every year. He survived, however, till the reign of king *William*; when he received from that prince a pension of four hundred pounds.

Q. Was not a rebellion raised in the beginning of this reign?

A. *James*, duke of *Monmouth*, natural son to the late king, returning from the *Low-Countries*, whither he had been banished, landed at *Lime* in *Dorsetshire* the 11th of *June* 1685; and though he brought not with him above one hundred followers, he soon assembled an army of six thousand men.

Q. What reason did he alledge for this insurrection?

A. He pretended that his mother had been married to *Charles II.*; and, of consequence, that he himself was legitimate. He was therefore come, he said, to assert his right to the crown, and to prevent king *James* (whom he stiled only duke of *York*) from subverting the government, and extirpating the protestant religion.

Q. What success did he meet with in this enterprize?

A. He advanced first to *Taunton*, and thence to *Bridge-water*, where he was solemnly proclaimed by the title of *James II.*; but being encountered by the king's forces under the earl of *Fewerham*, he was defeated with the loss of 1500 men.

Q. What became of him afterwards?

A. Being hotly pursued, he was discovered, two days after the battle, lying in the bottom of a ditch, and covered with fern; and having only some raw peas in his pocket,

which he had gathered in the fields to sustain life. He was thence carried to the *Tower*, where he was committed to close custody, and beheaded the 15th of *July* 1685.

Q. Did no body act in concert with *Monmouth*?

A. The earl of *Argyle*, who had been unjustly condemned to death in the preceding reign, and had made his escape into *Holland*, returned now from that country; and landing in *Scotland*, the 20th of *May*, endeavoured to persuade the people to rise up in arms: but though he was able to collect a few of his own vassals, he was suddenly deserted by them, and was soon after taken prisoner, and beheaded at *Edinburgh*, upon his former attainder.

Q. Did the death of these two noblemen satisfy the vengeance of the court?

A. No: the earl of *Feverham*, immediately after the battle, hanged up above twenty prisoners without form or trial. But this cruelty was nothing in comparison of what was exercised by colonel *Kirke*, a soldier of fortune, who had long served at *Tangiers*, and contracted, from his commerce with the *Moors*, an inhumanity less known in *European* countries. This barbarian, at his first entry into *Bridgewater*, hanged nineteen without the least inquiry into the merits of their cause. As if to make sport with death, he ordered a certain number to be executed, while he and his company should drink to the king's health, or to the queen's, or to judge *Jefferies's*. Observing their feet to shake in the agonies of death, he cried, that he would give them musick to their dancing; and he immediately commanded the drums to beat, and the trumpets to sound. One execution was attended with such circumstances of treachery, as well as barbarity, as to merit a particular relation. A young maid pleaded for the life of her brother, and flung herself at *Kirke's* feet, armed with all the charms, which beauty and innocence, bathed in tears, could bestow upon her. The tyrant was inflamed with desire, not softened into love or clemency: he promised to grant her request, provided that she, in her turn, would be equally complaisant to him. The maid yielded to the condition; but, after she had passed the night with him, the wanton savage, next morning, shewed her, from the window, her brother, the darling object, for whom she had sacrificed her virtue,

virtue, hanging on a gibbet, which he had secretly ordered to be erected for his execution. This shocking and unexpected sight had such an effect upon her, that she was instantly seized with a phrensy, and never after recovered her senses.

Q. Was *Kirke* the only instrument in these barbarities?

A. No: he was succeeded by the cruel chief-justice *Jefferies*, who made a circuit through the western counties, and shewed the people, that the rigours of the law might equal, if not exceed, the ravages of military tyranny. He caused nineteen persons to be executed at *Dorchester*; eighty at *Exeter*; a great number at *Taunton* and *Wells*; and, in a word, besides those butchered by the military commanders, 251 are computed to have fallen by the hand of justice. The whole country was strowed with the heads and limbs of traitors. Every village almost beheld the dead carcass of a wretched inhabitant. And the savage *Jefferies* boasted, that he had hanged more men than all the judges of *England* since the time of *William the Conqueror*.

Q. What were the most remarkable of these executions?

A. Those of *Mrs. Gaunt* and lady *Lisle*, who were both put to death for harbouring rebels. *Mrs. Gaunt* was an anabaptist, noted for her beneficence. The person she had concealed, hearing of a proclamation, which offered an indemnity and rewards to those who discovered criminals, was so base as to betray his benefactress, and to bear evidence against her. He received a pardon for his treachery: she was burned alive for her charity. Lady *Lisle* was widow of the lord *Lisle*, one of the judges of king *Charles I.* Three times did the jury bring her in *Not guilty*: they were as often sent back with menaces by *Jefferies*; and at last were compelled to give sentence against her. She was above eighty years of age, when she suffered. About the same time alderman *Cornish*, one of the sheriffs of *London*, was tried for being concerned in the *Rye House* conspiracy; and, though the depositions of the witnesses contained the most glaring contradictions, he was nevertheless condemned, and executed as a traitor.

Q. What was the great object of *James's* ambition?

A. To establish the popish religion, and by that means to erect a despotic government.

Q. What were the first steps he took for this purpose ?

A. By the test-act, all persons who enjoyed any place, whether civil or military, under the government, were obliged to conform to the established religion. This was considered as the grand barrier against popery, and the chief security of the constitution. *James* dispensed with this law in favour of his catholic subjects, several of whom he introduced into the army, and even into the privy-council.

Q. Did the parliament approve of this dispensing power ?

A. No: and for that reason it was dissolved. The king, however, prevailed upon the judges to give it as their opinion, that his majesty could dispense with the test, in cases of necessity, and that he alone was the proper judge of that necessity.

Q. What were the next measures which the king embraced ?

A. He issued orders to the inferior clergy, forbidding them to preach upon controverted points of divinity ; but few of them paid any regard to this prohibition. *Dr. Sharpe*, in particular, rector of *St. Giles's*, and afterwards archbishop of *York*, exposed, in his sermons, with great force of reasoning, the errors of popery ; a conduct, which gave so much offence to his majesty, that he sent positive instructions to the bishop of *London*, his diocesan, to suspend the doctor.

Q. Did the bishop obey these orders ?

A. No : and for this refusal he was summoned before the high court of ecclesiastical commission (which had been abolished in the reign of king *Charles I.* and which *James* had again illegally erected) and both the bishop and doctor were suspended from their office. *Mr. Johnson* too, a clergyman, having addressed a writing to the army, was pilloried, whipt cruelly, and sentenced to pay a fine of 500 marks.

Q. Was *James* guilty of no other acts of violence ?

A. He invaded the privileges of the two universities of *Oxford* and *Cambridge*, particularly those of the former, into which he endeavoured to intrude several Roman catholics.

Q. What steps did he take next ?

A.



A. He issued a proclamation, in 1687, suspending all the penal laws in ecclesiastical affairs, and granting a general liberty of conscience to all his subjects; but, though this indulgence was seemingly calculated for the benefit of dissenters of every denomination, yet was it well known, that it was chiefly intended in favour of the papists.

Q. How was this declaration received?

A. With great joy by all the dissenters, who thanked his majesty in repeated addresses for this mark of his goodness. The members alone of the church of *England* were dissatisfied with it.

Q. What other proofs did the king give of his attachment to the catholic faith?

A. He sent *Roger Palmer*, earl of *Castlemain*, to *Rome*, in order to reconcile his three kingdoms to the Holy See; but the pope, who perceived that *James's* imprudence would ruin the whole scheme, gave the ambassador a very cold reception. Nevertheless, he sent count *Ferdinand Dada*, as his nuncio, into *England*; and though any communication with the pope was, by the laws of the land, declared, high-treason, *James* gave the nuncio a public audience at *Windsor*. Four catholic bishops were solemnly consecrated in the king's chapel, and sent out, under the title of vicars apostolical, to exercise the episcopal function in their respective dioceses. Even the monks began to appear at court; and some of them were so insolent as to boast, that, in a little time, they hoped to walk in procession through the capital.

Q. Did not king *James* publish a second declaration for liberty of conscience?

A. Yes; and he likewise ordered, that, immediately after divine service, it should be read by the clergy in all the churches.

Q. Did the clergy obey this order?

A. No: they all refused to comply; about two hundred excepted. Some of them went even farther: *Sancroft* archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Lloyd* bishop of *St. Asaph*, *Ken* of *Bath and Wells*, *Turner* of *Ely*, *Lake* of *Chichester*, *White* of *Retterborough*, and *Trelawny* of *Bristol*, presented a petition to the king, in which they assigned the reasons of their refusal.

Q. Was the king satisfied with their apology?

A. On the contrary, he ordered them to be committed to the *Tower*, and to be tried in the court of *King's-Bench*, for having composed, as he pretended, and uttered a seditious libel.

Q. What was the issue of this trial?

A. The bishops were acquitted to the inexpressible joy of the whole nation.

Q. What happened during this interval?

A. The queen was said to be delivered of a prince the 10th of *June*, 1688; an event, which was as agreeable to the catholics, as it was alarming to the protestants. The former hoped, that, as the young prince would be educated in their religion, they should be able to establish it, in spite of all opposition; and the latter, being thus driven to despair, began to cast their eyes towards foreign assistance.

Q. To whom did they apply?

A. To *William*, prince of *Orange* (grandson of king *Charles I.*) who had married the princess *Mary*, eldest daughter of king *James*. The whigs and tories, the episcopalians and dissenters; all parties concurred, except the catholics, in inviting him to *England*, in order to secure their religion and laws.

Q. Did he accept their invitation?

A. Yes: and he immediately began to make preparations for that purpose?

Q. What did king *James* do when he heard of these preparations?

A. He instantly altered his conduct, and retracted all the measures which had given so much offence. He annulled the court of ecclesiastical commission; restored the charter of *London*, and of all the corporations; removed the popish magistrates, and put protestants in their place; took off the bishop of *London's* suspension; re-instated the expelled president and fellows of *Magdalen-College, Oxford*; and he even condescended to care for those bishops, whom he had so lately persecuted and insulted. At the same time, he assembled his army, and collected his fleet, which consisted of sixty ships of war. The command of the former he intrusted to the earl of *Feverham*; that of the latter, to the earl

earl of *Dartmouth*. The king of *France* too offered to assist him with a powerful navy, and an army of 30,000 men; but this offer he rejected by the advice of the earl of *Sunderland*, who was either engaged in the prince of *Orange's* interest, or else thought that his master would not need any foreign aid.

Q. Did these measures induce the prince of *Orange* to abandon his enterprize?

A. No: being determined, at all events, to execute his project, he set sail from *Helvoet-Sluice*, the 19th of *October*, 1688, accompanied by the earls of *Sbrowsbury* and *Macclesfield*, the lords *Mordaunt*, *Wiltshire*, and *Paulet*, admiral *Herbert*, marshal *Schomberg*, Messrs. *Auverquerque*, *Bentinck*, and others; and attended by a fleet of near 500 vessels, having on board above 14,000 men.

Q. Had he a prosperous voyage?

A. He had scarce come out of port, when he was encountered by a storm, which shattered some of his ships, and drove the rest back into the harbour; but this damage being soon repaired, he again put to sea on the 1st of *November*; and meeting with no opposition (for the same wind, which carried him through the straits of *Dover*, detained the *English* fleet in the river) he landed his forces safely at *Torbay* the 5th of the same month, the anniversary of the *Gun-Powder-Treason*.

Q. What were the first steps he took after his landing?

A. He published a declaration, in which, after enumerating all the instances of *James's* misgovernment; such as his dispensing with the laws; his erecting a court of ecclesiastical commission; his filling all offices with catholics; his annulling the charter of *London*, and other corporations; in a word, his endeavouring to usurp an arbitrary power, and extirpate the protestant religion; he added, that he had come over to *England*, at the request of great numbers of the nobility and gentry of that kingdom, in order to redress these and the like grievances, and to have the rights of the subject distinctly ascertained in a free parliament.

Q. How was this declaration received by the people?

A. With so much joy, that they immediately began to form associations for assisting the prince in the execution of his

his purpose. Even the army was infected with the same spirit. Several officers of distinction informed *Feverſham*, their general, that they could not, in conſcience, fight againſt the prince of *Orange*. Nay ſome of them deſerted to him; and carried with them a conſiderable number of their troops. Lord *Colcheſter*, ſon to the earl of *Rivers*, was the firſt who took this ſtep; and his example was ſoon after followed by Lord *Cornbury*, ſon to the earl of *Clarendon*, and by lord *Churchill*, the king's chief favourite, and afterwards the immortal duke of *Marlborough*.

Q. How did the king act in theſe alarming circumſtances?

A. He repaired to his army, which then lay at *Salisbury*; but finding it was filled with ſuch a ſpirit of diſcontent, that no dependance could be placed upon it, he ſuddenly left it, and returned to *London*; and, during his journey thither, he was deſerted by the dukes of *Ormand* and *Grafton*; and even by prince *George of Denmark*, his ſon-in-law, and the princeſs *Anne*, his own daughter; an event, which affected him to ſuch a degree, that he cried out, in the extremity of his grief, "God help me; my own children have forſaken me!"

Q. What meaſures did the king take after his return to *London*?

A. He called a council of the few peers and prelates, who were then in that city; and, by their advice, iſſued writs for ſummoning a free parliament, which was appointed to meet on the 15th of *January*. At the ſame time he diſpatched commiſſioners to make propoſals of accommodation to the prince of *Orange*.

Q. How did the prince reliſh theſe propoſals?

A. Very well; and made ſuch offers in his turn, as the king ſeemed willing to accept, when having conſulted, as is ſuppoſed, with his popiſh favourites, he was perſuaded by them to withdraw into *France*. The ſame men alſo inſpired the queen with ſuch apprehenſions for her perſonal ſafety, that ſhe fled into *France* with her ſon, the prince of *Wales*; and was received at *Versailles* by *Lewis XIV.* with the ſtrongeſt marks of ſympathy and regard. She extorted, however, before her departure, a poſitive promiſe from the king, that he would immediately follow her.

Q. Did he keep his word?

A.

A. He left *London* the 12th of *December* about four in the morning, attended by *Sir Edward Hales*, a new convert, and went on board of a ship, which waited for him at the mouth of the river; but having put in at *Feversham* for ballast, he was seized by the populace, who, mistaking him for a priest, used him very roughly, and even robbed him of his money and jewels; though, upon discovering their error, they restored the booty, and humbly asked pardon for the rudeness of their behaviour.

Q. What happened after this?

A. The earl of *Winchelsea*, lord lieutenant of the county, arriving, advised his majesty to return to *London*; and an invitation being sent him to the same purpose by the lords, who were at *Whitehall*, he set out for the capital, which he entered the 16th of *December*; when the populace, moved by compassion for his unhappy fate, and actuated by their own levity, received him with such shouts and acclamations, as if he had been returning from a signal victory.

Q. What induced his majesty to abandon the kingdom?

A. He imagined, that his absence would throw every thing into confusion, and would oblige his subjects to restore him to his throne upon more favourable terms, than perhaps they might otherwise be inclined to grant him. The prince of *Orange*, however, entertained a very different opinion, and thought, that nothing would more contribute to the public settlement than his majesty's absence; and that if once he was gone, the people would never more think of him. He therefore used every expedient to intimidate the king, and to push him into that measure, which, of himself, he seemed sufficiently disposed to embrace.

Q. What means did he employ for that purpose?

A. He ordered his forces to take possession of *Whitehall*; and sent a message to his majesty, which was delivered at midnight, desiring him to leave *London* next morning, and retire to *Ham-House* in the neighbourhood of *Hampton*.

Q. Did the king comply with this order?

A. He desired leave to withdraw to *Rochester*; and the prince, perceiving that the stratagem had taken effect, readily gave his assent. Mean while, the prince entered

*London*

London the 18th of *December*; and his arrival was celebrated with public rejoicings.

Q. Did king *James* remain long at *Rochester*?

A. No: for leaving his chamber privately the 23d of *December*, and being accompanied only by his natural son, the duke of *Berwick*, and by Messrs *Sheldon* and *Abbadie*, he rode to the sea-side; where embarking on board a frigate, he landed safely at *Ambleteuse* in *France*, and repaired thence to *St. Germain*, where he was received by *Lewis* with the utmost cordiality.

Q. How long did he survive his abdication?

A. About thirteen years, during which he made two fruitless attempts for the recovery of his crown. He died at *St. Germain* the 16th of *September*, 1701, in the sixty-eighth year of his age.

Q. Describe the qualities of *James II.*

A. His private deportment was as unexceptionable, as his public conduct was blameable. A kind husband, a tender parent, an indulgent master, a generous benefactor, a steady friend, and a dutiful subject; such was the character, with which the duke of *York* ascended the throne of *England*. But he had no sooner attained to that high dignity, than he gave full scope to his arbitrary principles, and continued, for the space of three years, to make such rude and violent attacks upon the religion and constitution of his country, as totally deprived him of the affections of his people, and at last obliged him to abandon that crown, which he had been found from experience, so unworthy to wear.

Q. Had *James* any children?

A. By his first wife, *Anne Hyde*, daughter to *Edward Hyde*, earl of *Clarendon*, and lord high-chancellor of *England*, he had four sons, who died in their infancy; and four daughters, two of whom only arrived at the age of maturity, viz. *Mary*, born in 1662, and married in 1678, to *William Nassau*, Prince of *Orange*, afterwards king *William* the III. and *Anne*, born in 1664, and married in 1683, to prince *George* of *Denmark*, son to *Frederic III.* king of *Denmark*, and *Sophia Amelia* of *Lunenburg*. By his second wife, *Maria Josepha* of *Este*, sister to the duke of *Modena*, he had a son, named *Charles*; and another (*James*,) called the prince of *Wales*, born the 10th of *June*, 1688. By the same

same lady, he had three daughters in *England*; and a fourth in *France*, born at *St. Germain*s in 1692; but she died soon after her father. He had likewise four natural children; three by *Arabella Churchill*, sister to the duke of *Marlborough*, and one by *Catharine Sedgley*, countess of *Dorchester*.

## INTER-REGNUM.

From the 25th of December, 1688, to the 13th of February, 1689.

2. **W**HAT followed upon king *James's* leaving the kingdom?

*A.* The peers, as being possessed of hereditary jurisdiction, resolved to act as the guardians of the public. They accordingly presented an address to the prince of *Orange*, desiring him to summon a convention by circular letters; to assume, in the mean time, the administration of the government; and to concert measures for the security of *Ireland*.

2. Did he comply with their request?

*A.* He seemed unwilling to act upon an authority, which might be deemed so imperfect; and expressed his desire of obtaining, if possible, a more full declaration of the public consent.

2. What expedient was fallen upon for that purpose?

*A.* All the members who had sat in the House of Commons during any parliament of *Charles* the II. (the only parliaments whose election was regarded as free) were invited to meet; and to them were added the mayor, aldermen, and fifty of the common council of *London*. This was judged the most proper representative of the people, which could be summoned during the present emergence. They unanimously voted the same address with the lords; and the prince, being thus supported by all the legal authority which could then be obtained, wrote circular letters to the counties and corporations of *England*, desiring them to return members for a convention, which was appointed to meet the 22d of *January*.

Q. What were the proceedings of this convention?

A. The commons, a few days after their meeting, passed, by a great majority, the following memorable vote, "That king *James* the 2<sup>d</sup>. having endeavoured to subvert the constitution of the kingdom, by breaking the original contract between the king and people; and having, by the advice of Jesuits, and other wicked persons, violated the fundamental laws, and withdrawn himself out of the kingdom, has abdicated the government, and that the throne is thereby vacant." This vote they sent up to the lords for their concurrence.

Q. Did the lords agree to this vote?

A. Not 'till after a violent dispute, and a conference held with a committee of the commons; but, at last, through the prevalence of the whig-party, the vote was passed, though by a small majority.

Q. What further steps did the convention take?

A. Several forms of government were proposed. Some insisted on a regent: others were desirous of bestowing the crown on the princess of *Orange* solely, and that her husband should reign in her right; but the prince declaring, that, if either of these plans of settlement were adopted, he would return to *Holland*, the convention thought proper to alter their resolution. The princess also, who arrived in *London*, the 12<sup>th</sup> of *February*, wisely joined her interests with those of her husband. Mention was made but once of the prince of *Wales*: some lords moved to enquire into his birth; but this proposal was presently rejected. All parties, therefore, being fully agreed, the convention passed a bill, by which they settled the crown on the prince and princess of *Orange*, the sole administration to remain in the prince: the princess of *Denmark* to succeed after the death of the prince and princess of *Orange*; her posterity after those of the princess; but before those of the prince, by any other wife. Accordingly, the prince and princess of *Orange* were proclaimed, the 13<sup>th</sup> of *February*, king and queen of *Great-Britain*, by the names of *William III.* and *Mary II.* and their coronation was performed the 11<sup>th</sup> of *April*, 1689.

Q. Did the convention bestow the crown on the prince and princess of *Orange*, without any conditions?

A.



A. No; they annexed to the settlement a declaration of rights, where all the points, which had, of late years, been disputed between king and people, were finally determined; and the powers of royal prerogative were more narrowly circumscribed, and more exactly defined, than in any former period of the *English* government.

Q. Pray give me the substance of this declaration of rights.

A. It imported, 1. That the king has no right to dispense with laws, or the execution of laws. 2. That all ecclesiastical commission courts are illegal. 3. That levying money for the use of the crown by prerogative, without grant of parliament, is not warranted by law. 4. That it is the right of the subjects to petition the king. 5. That a standing army, in time of peace, unless by consent of parliament, is against law. 6. That protestant subjects may have arms for their defence. 7. That the election of members of parliament ought to be free. 8. That freedom of debate in parliament ought to be allowed. 9. That excessive bail ought not to be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel punishments inflicted. 10. That jurors ought to be duly impanelled, and, upon trials for high-treason, ought to be freeholders. 11. That all grants and promises of fines and forfeitures, before conviction, are illegal. 12. And that, for redress of grievances, frequent parliaments should be assembled.

Q. Who were the most celebrated writers that flourished during the two last reigns?

A. *Wilkins*, *Wren*, *Wallis*, eminent mathematicians; *Hooke*, an accurate observer by microscopes; *Sydenham*, the restorer of true physick; *Boyle*, deeply skilled in natural philosophy; and *Newton*, one of the greatest geniusses that ever appeared in this or in any other age or nation. *Dryden* bore away the palm in poetry. *Rochester* rendered himself famous for poignancy of satire, and impurity of sentiment. *Wycherley* excelled in comedy; *Otway* in tragedy; the duke of *Buckingham* acquired great honour by his comedy, called the Rehearsal; the earls of *Dorset*, *Mulgrave*, and *Roscommon*, wrote with ease, but negligence. The marquis of *Halifax* discovers a refined genius. *Sir William Temple* is an entertaining writer. *Butler* distinguished himself by his poem,  
named

named Hudibras. The most eminent divines were *Stillingfleet, Tillotson, Tennyson, Patrick, Lloyd, and Burnet.*

## C H A P. XLVI.

WILLIAM III. and MARY II. making the  
XLVII<sup>th</sup> Sovereign of England.

*And Fifth of Great-Britain.*

From 1689 to 1702.

<i>Popes.</i>		PHILIP V.	1700
INNOCENT XI.	1076	<i>King of Portugal:</i>	
ALEXANDER VIII.	1689	PEDRO II.	1683
INNOCENT XII.	1691	<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
CLEMENT XI.	1700	CHRISTIAN V.	1670
<i>Emperor.</i>		FREDERIC IV.	1699
LEOPOLD	1658	<i>Kings of Sweden.</i>	
<i>King of France</i>		CHARLES XI.	1660
LEWIS XIV.	1643	CHARLES XII.	1697
<i>Kings of Spain.</i>			
CHARLES II.	1665		

Q. WHAT were the first acts of king *William* and queen *Mary's* reign?

A. The king repairing to the house of peers, delivered a speech from the throne to both houses, and converted the convention into a parliament; though this step was not taken without a violent opposition from the Tories.

Q. Did all parts of the *British* dominions submit quietly to their majesties authority?

A. Several *Scottish* noblemen and gentlemen, to the number of eighty, who were at *London*, met together, and chusing duke *Hamilton* for their president, made a tender to king *William* of the government of *Scotland*. This resolution was soon after confirmed by a convention, which met at *Edinburgh*, the 14th of *March*, and which settled the crown

crown on king *William* and queen *Mary*, who were solemnly proclaimed, the 11th of *April*. At the same time the convention deputed three of their members to administer to their majesties the coronation-oath, which was accordingly done at *Whitehall*, the 11th of *May*, 1689.

Q. Were the people of *Ireland* equally submissive?

A. No; most of them, headed by the earl of *Tyrconnel*, adhered to the interest of the late king. King *William's* party prevailed only in the northern counties, where they seized the towns of *Kilmore*, *Coleraine*, *Inniskilling*, *Londonderry*, and some other places.

Q. Did not *James* come to the assistance of his friends in *Ireland*?

A. He landed at *Kinsale*, on the 14th of *March*, and towards the latter end of the same month, he entered *Dublin* in triumph. On the 20th day of *April*, he laid siege to *Londonderry*; but this place, of which *Mr. Walker*, a clergyman, was chosen governor, made such a brave and obstinate defence, that *James* was obliged to abandon the enterprize with the loss of 9000 men. The inhabitants of *Inniskilling* too distinguished themselves greatly by their bravery.

A. Did king *William* take no steps towards succouring the protestants in *Ireland*?

A. He sent the duke of *Schomberg* into that kingdom, with an army of 10,000 men. The duke arrived at *Carrick-fergus*, on the 13th of *August*, and took it after a desperate siege. King *James* marched against him with a superior army; but after having in vain endeavoured, during the whole summer, to bring him to a battle, he returned to *Dublin*, in order to spend the winter.

Q. How did he employ his time during that interval?

A. He prevailed on the *Irish* parliament to pass an act of attainder against such a number of protestants as exceeded even the famous proscription at *Rome*, during the last triumvirate.

Q. Was he able to maintain his footing in the kingdom?

A. No; king *William*, attended by prince *George* of *Denmark*, the duke of *Ormond*, the earls of *Oxford*, *Scarborough*, and others, went over to *Ireland*, and arrived at *Carrick-fergus*, the 14th of *June*, 1690. Having joined his forces

to those of duke *Schomberg*, he advanced towards *Dublin*, with an army of 36,000 men, and 60 pieces of cannon.

Q. Was he allowed to proceed unmolested?

A. He was met by king *James*, at the pass of the *Boyne*, with an army of nearly the same force; and both monarchs being equally eager for action, a battle was fought on the 1st day of *July*, 1690.

Q. What was the issue of this battle?

A. After an obstinate dispute, king *William* obtained a complete victory, with the loss of about 500 men. King *James* lost three times that number. Among those who perished in this action was the brave duke of *Schomberg*, one of the most renowned generals of the age. After the battle, king *James*, instead of rallying his broken forces, as he might easily have done, retired to *Dublin*, where staying but one day, he proceeded to *Waterford*, and thence set sail for *France*. King *William* undertook the siege of *Limerick*; but meeting with a more vigorous resistance than he expected, he abandoned the enterprize, and returned to *England* the 6th of *September*. Soon after *Corke*, *Kinsale*, and other places, were reduced by the earl of *Marlborough*.

Q. What were the transactions of the next campaign?

A. In 1691, the king of *France* sent a fresh body of troops into *Ireland*, which joining those of king *James*, composed a considerable army. The *English* were commanded by general *Ginckle*, an excellent officer: the *French* and *Irish* by M. *St. Ruth*, who was not much inferior. Several battles were fought, and all to the advantage of the *English*; particularly that of *Agbrim* (*July* 12) in which M. *St. Ruth* was slain. *Athlone* was surprized by a most daring stratagem: *Limerick* surrendered upon very honourable terms the 3d of *October*, 1691: and thus the reduction of *Ireland* being happily completed, *Ginckle* returned to *England*, where he was honoured with the title of earl of *Athlone*. Twelve thousand *Irish* abandoned their native country, and entered into the service of *France*.

Q. Were king *William* and queen *Mary* engaged in any foreign wars?

A. The grand object of *William's* ambition was to humble the pride of the *French* king, and prevent him from executing the scheme he had formed to establish an univer-  
sal

fal monarchy. With this view he entered into a confederacy with the emperor, the king of *Spain*, the *United Provinces*, the duke of *Savoy*, the elector of *Brandenburg*, and most of the princes of the empire; and all these potentates, by common consent, declared war against *Lewis*. King *William's* declaration was published the 7th of *May*, 1689.

Q. What were the principal events of this war?

A. Nothing remarkable happened during the two first campaigns, except the reduction of *Mons*, which was taken by the *French*. In the month of *January*, 1691, king *William* went over to *Holland*, accompanied by the duke of *Ormond*, the earls of *Devonshire*, *Dorset*, *Portland*, &c. and was received at the *Hague* amidst the shouts and acclamations of the people.

Q. What actions did his majesty perform in *Flanders*?

A. Having settled the operations of the ensuing campaign, he returned to *England* on the 13th of *April*. In the month of *May*, however, he went back to *Holland*, and put himself at the head of the army; but after having in vain endeavoured, during the whole summer, to bring the duke of *Luxemburg*, the *French* general, to a battle, he resigned the command of the forces to prince *Waldec*, and set sail for *England*.

Q. What were the transactions of 1692?

A. In the month of *May*, admiral *Ruffel*, assisted by a *Dutch* fleet, obtained a complete victory over a *French* squadron in the neighbourhood of *La Hogue*, where the enemy lost one and twenty of their largest ships, besides two frigates, and some smaller vessels.

Q. What success had his majesty in *Flanders*?

A. Very indifferent: he was prevented, by the badness of the weather from coming to the relief of *Namur*, which was taken by the *French* king in person, after a vigorous siege. He was likewise defeated in the battle of *Steenkirk*, notwithstanding his own bravery, and that of all his officers and soldiers, who disputed the day with so much obstinacy, that the *French*, though they kept the field, reaped little or no benefit from the victory.

Q. Was king *William* more successful in the ensuing campaign?

A.

*A.* No: he had again the misfortune to be worsted in the battle of *Landen*, which was fought on the 18th of *July*, 1693; though here, as in all his former overthrows, he rose still more terrible from his defeat; for, in a few days, he put his army upon such a respectable footing, that he was once more able to offer the enemy battle. The loss of the *French* in this engagement was double of that of the allies. King *William* exerted himself greatly upon this occasion, and was frequently exposed to the most imminent danger. His peruke, the sleeve of his coat, and the knot of his scarf, were penetrated by three different musket-bullets. Even the enemy bore testimony to his valour. "Had they such a king," they said, "they would make themselves masters of Christendom." The prince of *Conti*, in a letter to his princess, declared, "That he saw king *William* exposing himself to the greatest dangers; and that such valour richly deserved the peaceable possession of the crown which he wore." The loss of this battle, however, was followed by that of the town of *Charleroy*, which surrendered on the 11th of *October*.

Q. What were the most memorable transactions of the year 1694?

*A.* Nothing material happened, except the reduction of *Huy*, which the confederates took in the month of *September*.

Q. What passed in 1695?

*A.* On the 3d day of *July*, king *William* laid siege to the city of *Namur*. This place was originally esteemed one of the strongest in *Europe*; and the *French*, since they had become masters of it, had improved the fortifications to such a degree, that it was now considered as absolutely impregnable. Add to this, that marshal *Boufflers*, foreseeing king *William's* design, had thrown himself into the town with such a powerful succour, as increased the garrison to 15,000 men. Notwithstanding all these discouraging circumstances, king *William* carried on his operations with such unremitting vigour, that the place surrendered on the 1st of *September*. Marshal *Villeroy*, at the head of 100,000 men, attempted to raise the siege; but king *William* had made such excellent dispositions, that the enemy were afraid to attack him in his entrenchments.

Q. Was this war distinguished by any other remarkable events?

A. No: the two next summers were chiefly spent in negotiations; and at last a treaty of peace was signed the 20th of *September*, 1697, at a place called *Ryswick*, belonging to king *William*, situated between the *Hague* and *Delft* in *Holland*.

Q. What were the conditions of this peace?

A. The principal articles of it, relating to king *William*, were, that he should recover possession of the principality of *Orange*, and be acknowledged king of *Great-Britain*.

Q. Were not several conspiracies formed against king *William*?

A. Yes: the first, which was headed by Sir *James Montgomery* and others, was hatched in 1690, while the king was in *Ireland*. A *French* fleet appeared upon the coast, in order to favour the insurgents: but the plot was discovered and defeated by the vigilance and activity of the queen, who governed the kingdom during her husband's absence. Nevertheless, the *French* fleet beat the combined squadrons of *England* and *Holland* on the 30th of *June* of the same year. Another conspiracy was carried on, in 1692, by the papists of *Lancashire*, who had inspired king *James* with such hopes of success, that that prince had actually come to *La Hogue*, in order to make a descent upon *England*; but admiral *Ruffel* having, as we have above observed, defeated the *French* fleet, the whole design was rendered abortive.

Q. Was not another conspiracy formed against king *William* in 1692?

A. Yes: *Grandval*, a captain of dragoons in the *French* service, undertook, at the instigation of the court of *Ver-sailles*, to assassinate king *William* in *Flanders*; but the horrid plot was happily discovered; and *Grandval* being seized, and convicted, was executed as a traitor at *Eynden-boven*, the 13th of *August*.

Q. What was the fourth conspiracy formed against king *William*?

A. It was carried on during the years 1694, 1695, and 1696, and was of a more dangerous and alarming nature than any of the former. The design of it was to as-

assassinate king *William*, and restore king *James* to the throne.

Q. What preparations were made for the execution of this plot?

A. Sir *George Barclay* engaged to assassinate king *William*; having, it is said, received a commission from king *James* for that purpose: but as *Barclay* escaped, it could never be proved, that any such commission had been granted. At the same time, king *James* repaired to *Calais*, where an army of 20,000 men was assembled, in order to make a descent upon *England*; but when every thing was ready for the intended invasion, the plot was discovered by captain *Fisher*, *Pendergras* an *Irish* officer, and *La Rue* a *Frenchman*.

Q. What was the consequence of this discovery?

A. King *James*, seeing the scheme was defeated, returned to *St. Germain's*, overwhelmed with despair: the *French* forces were dispersed into the garrisons from which they had been draughted: several of the conspirators were apprehended in *England*; but all of them received a pardon, except *Charnock*, *King*, *Keys*, Sir *John Friend*, Sir *William Perkins*, *Rockwood*, *Cranburn*, *Lowick*, and Sir *John Fenwick*, who were all executed.

Q. Who governed the kingdom during king *William's* absence in *Holland*?

A. The queen, and, after her death, a council of regency.

Q. When did the queen die?

A. She was carried off by the small-pox, on the 28th of *December*, 1694, in the thirty-third year of her age, and the sixth of her reign.

Q. What were the qualities of queen *Mary*?

A. In her person she was tall and well proportioned; her shape, while princess of *Orange*, was easy and genteel; her complexion a light-brown, with an oval visage, lively eyes, agreeable features, a mild aspect, and a majestic mien: her apprehension was quick, her memory retentive, and her judgment strong. She was zealously attached to the protestant religion, and scrupulously exact in all the duties of devotion. In a word, she was an affectionate wife, a warm friend, an indulgent mistress, a gracious sovereign,  
and



and one of the best and most accomplished princesses that ever sat upon the *English* throne. The king was so deeply afflicted with her death, that, for several days after, he could neither see company, nor attend to business.

Q. Did nothing else remarkable happen under the reign of king *William*?

A. That prince, foreseeing that the death of *Charles* II. king of *Spain*, who was in a very declining state of health, would involve *Europe* in fresh troubles, resolved, if possible, to find out some expedient for preventing these calamities. The competitors for the *Spanish* crown, upon the death of king *Charles*, were, the electoral prince of *Bavaria*, the archduke *Charles*, and the dauphin of *France*, who were, all of them, related to the royal family of *Spain*. King *William* would willingly, had it been in his power, have procured the whole *Spanish* monarchy for the archduke *Charles*, upon whom, indeed, it had been settled by the late king, *Philip* IV. but sensible of the utter impossibility of accomplishing such a scheme, he thought it most advisable to chuse the least of two evils. With this view he entered into a negotiation with the *French* ministers for making a partition of the *Spanish* monarchy; and, after several consultations, the affair was settled in such a manner, that the electoral prince of *Bavaria* was to succeed to the crown of *Spain*, while the other two competitors were to obtain a considerable part of its extensive dominions. This treaty (which was called the partition-treaty) was signed the 10th of *August*, 1698.

Q. Did it take effect?

A. No: the electoral prince dying in the mean time, a new partition-treaty was made, by which the archduke *Charles* was to inherit the crown of *Spain*, and the dauphin to receive a proper equivalent.

Q. Did the king of *France* adhere to this second treaty?

A. No: and it is natural to think, that he never had any other intention in agreeing to it, than to amuse king *William* and the *United Provinces*; for he exerted his interest with so much success at the court of *Madrid*, that, being assisted by cardinal *Portocarrero* and others, he prevailed upon king *Charles* to make a will in favour of the duke of *Anjou*, second son of the dauphin.

Q. Did *Lewis* accept of this will ?

A. Yes: the death of the king of *Spain*, which happened the 1st of *November*, 1700, was no sooner known, than he sent his grandson, the duke of *Anjou*, into that kingdom, and prepared to support his cause by force of arms.

Q. What pretence did the *French* ministers alledge for this gross violation of the partition-treaty ?

A. They said, that the chief design of that treaty was to maintain the peace of *Europe*; that that peace could not be so well maintained by any other means as by the method which their sovereign had now adopted; and that he had, therefore, only departed from the letter, that he might the better adhere to the spirit of the treaty.

Q. Was king *William* satisfied with this apology ?

A. On the contrary, he was inflamed with the highest indignation. He thought it prudent, however, to conceal his resentment, until he should be able to express it in a more effectual manner. With this view, he formed, in 1701, a new alliance with *Holland* and the Empire; and was preparing to chastize the perfidy of *Lewis XIV.* and to settle the ballance of power in *Europe*, when a fall from his horse, near *Hampton-Court*, threw him into a fever, which put a period to his life the 8th of *March*, 1702, in the fifty-second year of his age, and the fourteenth of his reign.

Q. Describe the person and qualities of this monarch.

A. King *William* was of a middle stature, a thin body and delicate constitution, subject to an asthma and continual cough from his infancy. He had an aquiline nose, sparkling eyes, a large forehead, and a grave and solemn aspect. In courage, conduct, and magnanimity, he rivalled the most eminent warriors of antiquity. He was religious, temperate, just, and merciful, and possessed of an uncommon equanimity of temper. But what seems chiefly to have distinguished his character, and to have constituted his ruling and predominant passion, was a sincere regard to the natural rights and liberties of mankind. Animated by this godlike ardour, he bravely undertook, and successfully accomplished, even in his most tender years, the delivery of his native country, when it was not only threatened with  
immediate

immediate subjection, but was almost involved in utter ruin and destruction. Prompted by the same generous principle, he rescued the inhabitants of this island from the dreadful calamity of civil and religious slavery, to which, without his timely assistance, they would, in all probability, have been finally reduced. Influenced by the like benevolent spirit, he commenced the champion of the general liberties of *Europe*, which he not only preserved from impending ruin, but established upon a firm and solid foundation. It must be acknowledged, however, that, with all his good qualities, *William* was not free from foibles. He was naturally incapable of bearing contradiction, though by no means fond of flattery. His address was cold, and his manner disgusting; and, though liberal of money upon some occasions, he possessed not the virtue of true generosity.

Q. Was this reign distinguished by no other remarkable events?

A. In 1689, the episcopal religion was abolished in *Scotland*, and presbytery established. In 1692, *Ernest Augustus*, duke of *Hanover*, ancestor of his present majesty, was created an elector of the empire. The year following the bank of *England* was established. In 1694, a bill was passed for triennial parliaments; and this continued in force till the accession of *George I.* when septennial parliaments were restored. In 1697, *Peter the Great of Muscovy*, who had already visited most of the kingdoms of *Europe*, came over to *England*. An elegant house was fitted up for him in *Westminster*; but he chose rather to live among the sailors in *Wapping*, as his chief intention was to learn the art of ship-building. In 1700, the succession of the crown was settled upon the princess *Sophia*, electress dowager of *Hanover*, and the protestant heirs of her body.

Q. How did *William* conduct the domestic administration of the kingdom?

A. With great prudence and success, notwithstanding the numerous mortifications he received from the alternate opposition of the Whigs and Tories. The former, particularly provoked him, at one time, to such a degree, that he had actually formed a resolution to abandon the kingdom.

Q. Did any thing memorable happen in the other states of *Europe* during this reign?

A. In 1700, *Charles XII.* of *Sweden*, though only nineteen years of age, and at the head of no more than 8000 men, defeated, at *Narva*, the czar of *Muscovy*, who commanded an army 100,000 strong.

## C H A P. XLVII.

Queen ANNE, XLVIII<sup>th</sup> Sovereign of England,  
And Sixth of Great-Britain :

*In whose Reign the two Kingdoms were united.*

From 1702 to 1714.

	<i>Pope.</i>		<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
CLEMENT XI.		1700	PEDRO II.	1683
	<i>Emperors.</i>		JOHN V.	1706
LEOPOLD		1658		
JOSEPH		1705	<i>King of Denmark.</i>	
CHARLES VI.		1711	FREDERIC	1699
	<i>King of France.</i>			
LEWIS XIV.		1643	<i>King of Sweden.</i>	
	<i>King of Spain.</i>		CHARLES XII.	1697
PHILIP V.		1700		

Q. WHO succeeded king *William III.*?

A. *Anne Stuart*, second daughter of *James II.* and the illustrious consort of *George*, prince of *Denmark*, to whom she was married in 1683. She ascended the throne in 1702, being then thirty-eight years of age.

Q. What were the first acts of her reign?

A. Having settled her ministry, she called a privy-council, in order to deliberate whether she should prosecute the design, which her predecessor had formed, for humbling the pride

pride of the *Bourbon* family, and restoring the ballance of power in *Europe*.

Q. What was this design?

A. To compel the king of *France* to adhere to the second partition-treaty, by which it was stipulated, that the arch-duke *Charles*, second son to the emperor *Leopold*, should inherit the crown of *Spain*; and the dauphin should receive, as his share of the succession, the kingdoms of *Naples* and *Sicily*, the islands of *St. Stephano*, *Porto Hercole*, and other depending provinces of the *Spanish* monarchy. Such was the purport of the grand alliance, which king *William* had concluded, in 1701, with the emperor and the states-general; and to which the kings of *Prussia* and *Portugal*, the duke of *Savoy*, the elector of *Hanover*, and several other princes, afterwards acceded.

Q. What resolution did the privy-council come to?

A. They were unanimously of opinion, that the queen should adhere to the grand alliance; but they differed with regard to the method she should do so. Some proposed, that she should engage in the war only as an auxiliary; others insisted, that, agreeable to king *William's* plan, she should enter in it as a principal. The former opinion was adopted by the Tories, who were headed by the earl of *Rocheſter*, the queen's maternal uncle: the latter was espoused by the Whigs, the chief of whom were the dukes of *Devonshire* and *Somerset*, the earls of *Marlborough*, *Pembroke*, and others. A violent dispute ensued, and many arguments were urged on both sides of the question; but at last the Whigs, whose opinion was more agreeable to the bulk of the nation, prevailed in the contest: and accordingly war was proclaimed against *France* by the *English*, the emperor, and the states-general on the 4th day of *May*, 1702. The duke of *Marlborough* was declared captain-general of her majesty's forces both at home and abroad; and the queen's husband, prince *George* of *Denmark*, was appointed lord-high-admiral of *England* and *Ireland*.

Q. Was this war successful?

A. More perhaps than any that is to be found either in ancient or modern story.

Q. What were the principal military transactions of 1702?

A. The old duke of Zell, assisted by his nephew, the elector of *Brunswick*, disarmed the dukes of *Wolfembutte* and *Saxe-Gotha*, and compelled them to renounce their engagements with *France*, and accede to the terms of the grand alliance. *Keyserfwaert* was reduced by the imperial general. The *French*, who were commanded by marshal *Boufflers*, were disappointed, by the vigilance of the earl of *Athlone*, in the design they had formed of surprising *Nimeguen*; and prince *Lewis* of *Baden* invested *Landau*, and took it by assault. Such was the situation of affairs when the earl of *Marlborough* arrived in *Flanders*, and assumed the command of the allied army; and this he had no sooner done, than he used every expedient to bring the enemy to a battle; but finding it impossible to succeed in his endeavours, he reduced *Wertz*, *Venlo*, *Ruremonde*, *Stevenswaert*, *Liege*, and expelled the *French* intirely from the *Spanish Guelderland*.

Q. What were the naval transactions of this year?

A. A resolution having been taken to execute a project, formed by king *William*, for storming the town of *Cadix*, the combined squadrons of *England* and *Holland* sailed towards that place in the latter end of *June*, having on board an army of about 14,000 men. The army was commanded by the duke of *Ormond*; the fleet, by Sir *George Rooke*. The troops were landed, and took port *St. Mary*; but, whether it were owing to the misconduct of some of the officers, who seemed more intent upon plunder than conquest; or to the misunderstanding which arose between the general and admiral, the attempt upon *Cadix* unhappily proved abortive.

Q. Did this fleet perform no action of importance?

A. Yes: the admiral being informed, that twenty-two *Spanish* galleons, richly laden, under convoy of a *French* squadron of thirty men of war, had taken shelter at *Vigo*, he immediately sailed thither; and forcing his way into the harbour, with great gallantry, the 12th of *October*, in spite of all the obstructions, which the enemy had raised to prevent his entrance, he either took or destroyed the whole navy, and returned to *England* with plunder to the value of above a million sterling. In the *West-Indies*, the brave admiral *Bembow*, being treacherously deserted by his captains,  
main-

maintained, with his single ship, for four days successively, a desperate fight against ten *French* men of war.

Q. What happened in 1703?

A. The duke of *Marlborough* (for he had now been advanced to that title) opened the campaign in *April*, with the siege of the important town of *Bonne*, which surrendered on the 14th of *May*. He then chased the *French*, who were commanded by *Boufflers* and *Villeroy*, within the lines of *Brabant*; and having reduced the town and castle of *Huy*, he proposed attacking the enemy in their lines; but this being opposed by the deputies of the states-general, he was obliged to finish the campaign with the siege and conquest of *Limburgh*. In the course of this year, the archduke *Charles*, who had lately assumed the title of king of *Spain*, arrived in *England*, and was received by the queen with great cordiality and respect.

Q. Were the allies as successful in all other parts as they had been in *Flanders*?

A. No: the duke of *Savoy*, who, by this time, had entered into the grand alliance, was in the utmost danger of being expelled his dominions by the superior power of the *French* monarch, had he not been succoured, in an almost miraculous manner, by count *Staremberg*, the imperial general, who, by one of the most masterly marches that ever was performed, came to his assistance with an army of 15,000 men. Count *Tallard* had reduced the town of *Brisac*, and retaken the strong fortrefs of *Landau*, after defeating the *German* army at *Spire*; and the elector of *Bavaria*, having, either from a principle of ambition or resentment, espoused the cause of the *French* king, had seized the imperial cities of *Ulm*, *Ratisbon*, *Augsburgh*, and *Passau*. The *Hungarians* too, oppressed by their governors, and instigated by the emissaries of *France*, had rose up in arms, and demanded a redress of their grievances. *Vienna* was threatened with a siege on both sides; and had the *Hungarians* and *Bavarians* acted in concert, it must infallibly have been lost. In this forlorn condition the emperor implored the assistance of her *Britannic* majesty; and that generous princess, after some consultations with her ministers, embraced the bold and magnanimous resolution of saving the empire from impending ruin.

Q. What steps did she take for that purpose ?

A. The duke of *Marlborough*, who was the soul of this project, went over to *Holland*, in 1704, and having persuaded the states-general to concur in the design, he put himself at the head of the confederate army ; marched into *Germany* with incredible rapidity ; drove the *French* and *Bavarians* from their entrenchments at *Schellenberg* ; took the town of *Donawert* on the *Danube* ; and being afterwards joined by a considerable body of forces under the command of prince *Eugene* of *Savoy*, these two illustrious heroes, on the 13th of *August*, 1704, attacked the *French* and *Bavarians* at *Blenheim* or *Hockstadt*, and after a fierce and obstinate dispute, gave them a total and most terrible overthrow. This was one of the most glorious and complete victories, that ever was gained in any war, or by any general ; 10,000 *French* and *Bavarians* were killed upon the spot ; the greater part of thirty squadrons of dragoons were drowned in the *Danube* ; 13,000 men were made prisoners, including 1200 officers ; 100 pieces of cannon were taken, together with twenty-four mortars, 129 colours, 171 standards, seventeen pairs of kettledrums, 3600 tents, thirty-four coaches, &c. After this battle, the allies meeting with no farther resistance, drove the *French* out of *Germany*, reduced *Landau*, and conquered all *Bavaria*.

Q. What reward did the duke of *Marlborough* receive for the important services he had done the empire ?

A. Not to mention the principality of *Mindelheim*, which the emperor bestowed upon him ; he had no sooner returned to *England*, than he was honoured with the thanks of both houses of parliament ; and the queen made him a present of *Woodstock-Park*, where she caused to be built for him, at her own expence, a magnificent palace, distinguished by the name of *Blenheim-house*, in order to perpetuate the memory of his victory. This year, on the 14th of *July*, the strong fortress of *Gibraltar* was taken by Sir *George Rooke*, who, on the 13th of the following month, fought a drawn battle with the *French* fleet off *Malaga*.

Q. What success had the allies in other parts this year ?

A. Very indifferent ; for though the *Portuguese* received succours both from *England* and *Holland*, they were yet unable to prevent the *Spaniards* from making some petty conquests ;



quests; and the *French* dispossessed the duke of *Savoy* of several strong holds in *Italy*.

Q. What were the most remarkable events of 1705?

A. In the month of *June*, the duke of *Marlborough* marched, with the best part of the confederate army, towards the *Moselle*, in order to execute, in conjunction with the imperialists, a grand project, which he had formed on that side; but prince *Lewis* of *Baden*, who commanded the imperial troops, having failed in his engagements, the duke was obliged to return into *Flanders*, without effecting his purpose.

Q. What passed in *Flanders* during this interval?

A. The *French*, taking advantage of the duke's absence, reduced *Huy*, and invested *Liege*; but the duke, coming suddenly upon them, recovered the former place, and drove them from the latter; forced their lines of *Brabant*, expelled them from their entrenchments, and would have fought them in a pitched battle, had he not been prevented by the deputies of the states-general. Soon after the towns of *Levee* and *Saulvliet* were taken; by which means the *Dutch* frontiers were effectually secured.

Q. What happened in *Germany*?

A. Nothing of importance. The *French* took *Homburg*; the imperialists reduced *Drusenheim* and *Hagenau*, and forced the enemies lines at the place last mentioned.

Q. What were the transactions of the war in *Portugal*?

A. The allies met at first with considerable success in that kingdom: they took *Salva-terra*, *Marwan*, *Sarcas*, *Valencia*, *D'Alicantara*, and *Albuquerque*; and in the month of *September*, by the advice of the earl of *Galway*, who had succeeded duke *Schomberg* in the command of the *English* forces, they invested the town of *Badajox*; but that nobleman having lost his right-hand by a cannon-ball, the direction of the siege devolved to baron *Fagel*, who was compelled to raise it by the marshall *De Tefse*.

Q. Did any thing memorable happen in *Spain*?

A. Not only the city of *Barcelona*, but the whole province of *Catalonia* was reduced under the dominion of king *Charles* III. This grand project had been formed by the prince of *Hesse D'Armstadt*; and though that gallant soldier was unfortunately slain in the attack of fort *Montjuic*, yet

the earl of *Peterborough*, who commanded the *English* forces, pushed on his operations with so much vigour, that *Barcelona* surrendered in a few days, and the submission of the province followed soon after. In the course of this enterprise, the earl performed one of the most gallant exploits that ever was atchieved by any general. With a force not exceeding 1000 infantry, and 200 dragoons, he compelled the *Conde de las Torres*, who had invested *San-Mattheo*, to raise the siege of that place, though at the head of an army of 6000 men.

Q. What were the events of the war in *Italy*?

A. The *French* had bent their attention so much to that quarter, that it is the less surprizing if their arms were there crowned with the most signal success. They had taken *Chi-vas*, *Nice*, and several other fortresses: in a word, they had dispossessed the duke of *Savoy* of every place of consequence in his dominions, except *Coni* and *Turin*; and even these he seemed little able to maintain, as his army was now reduced to 12,000 men. But, notwithstanding these multiplied calamities, the duke adhered to his engagements with invincible resolution; and this honourable conduct was the more meritorious, as his dutchess, his clergy, and his subjects in general, importuned him, without ceasing, to yield to the necessity of the times.

Q. What were the chief military transactions of 1706?

A. This year, the *French* had determined to make the most vigorous efforts in *Spain*, in *Flanders*, and in *Italy*; but, notwithstanding their mighty preparations, all their ambitious projects were ruined and disappointed. In *Spain*, king *Philip* had invested *Barcelona*, and the count *de Toulouse* blocked it up by sea: but Sir *John Leake*, arriving with the *English* fleet from *Portugal*, compelled the *French* admiral to retire with precipitation; and king *Philip*, being harrassed by the earl of *Peterborough*, who had assembled a small army, was obliged, soon after, to abandon the siege. This event happened the 12th of *May*; a day very remarkable on account of the sun's suffering a total eclipse. In *Flanders*, the duke of *Marlborough*, the 23d of the same month, entirely defeated, at *Ramillies*, the *French* army, commanded by the elector of *Bavaria* and marshal *Villeroy*; and this victory was immediately followed by the surrender

of *Louvaine, Mechlin, Bruffels, Antwerp, Ghent, Bruges, Ostend, Menin, Dendermonde,* and *Aeth*, which submitted to the allies. In *Italy*, the duke of *Orleans* and marshal *de Marfin* had invested *Turin*, the capital of the duke of *Savoy's* dominions; and that prince's affairs were now reduced to the most deplorable condition, when prince *Eugene*, having, by one of the most surprising marches that ever was performed, joined the duke with a good body of troops; these two princes, on the 7th of *December*, attacked the *French* army even in their trenches, and, after an obstinate dispute, put them to a total rout. The duke entered his capital in triumph, which had sustained a vigorous siege for the space of four months; and the *French*, in a little time, were driven out of every place they possessed in *Piedmont* and *Italy*, except *Cremona, Valenza*, and the castle of *Milan*, which were blocked up by the confederates.

Q. Did the allies make a proper use of their successes in *Spain*?

A. No: for had they done so, it is more than probable, that they might, in a few months, have subdued the whole kingdom. The marquis *de las Minas*, indeed, and the earl of *Galway*, who commanded the confederate army, after reducing some inconsiderable fortresses, marched immediately to *Madrid*, which, on the 24th of *June*, acknowledged king *Charles III.* But that prince (for what reason is not known) instead of repairing to the capital, where he would have been received with open arms, continued to loiter away his time in *Catalonia*, from the beginning of *May* to the end of *July*; when, the *Portuguese* army having exhausted itself to no purpose at *Madrid*, king *Philip* had leisure to assemble his scattered forces, and return into *Spain* with a superior army; a circumstance, which obliged the allies to abandon the capital, and retire into *Valencia* with the utmost precipitation.

Q. What were the most memorable transactions of 1707?

A. Fortune seemed this year to change sides, and proved now almost as favourable to the *French*, as she had formerly been to the allies. In *Spain*, the earl of *Galway* having, contrary to the advice of the earl of *Peterborough*, attacked at *Almanza*, the *Spanish* army, much superior to his own, and commanded

commanded by the duke of *Berwick*; he was, though not till after an obstinate dispute, intirely defeated the 25th of *April*, and forced, with the shattered remains of his army, to abandon the kingdom of *Valencia*, and retire into *Catalonia*. The *Spaniards*, encouraged by this great victory, laid siege successively to *Serpa*, *Moura*, *Cividad Rodrigo*, and *Lerida*, all of which they reduced. On the *Upper Rhine*, marshal *Villars*, having forced the lines and intrenchments of the *Germans* at *Biehl* and *Stolhoffen*, proceeded in his conquests with such surprizing rapidity, that he would probably have restored the elector of *Bavaria* to his dominions, had he not been opposed by the Imperialists under the elector of *Hanover*, afterwards king *George I.* of *Great-Britain*; or rather had he not been obliged to send off large detachments of his troops, in order to succour *Toulon*, which was closely invested by the duke of *Savoy* and prince *Eugene*, assisted by the *English* fleet under Sir *Cloudesty Shovel*. This last attempt, however, unhappily proved abortive; and the *English* were the more affected with the failure of this enterprize, as the duke of *Marlborough*, with all his skill in generalship, had not been able, during the whole summer, to bring the *French* army in *Flanders* to an engagement. The weakness of the allies in *Germany* was chiefly owing to this circumstance, that the emperor had employed the best part of his forces in reducing the kingdom of *Naples*, which he actually subdued.

Q. Were the *French* as successful in 1708, as they had been in the preceding campaign?

A. *Lewis XIV.* knowing that the queen of *England* was the soul of the grand confederacy, determined to undertake some enterprize, which might particularly distress that princess. With this view, he proposed to make a descent upon *England*, and establish the pretender, whom he stiled *James III.* upon the throne of that kingdom. This scheme, however, met with the fate which might naturally be expected. The pretender, indeed, embarked in the expedition, and actually arrived upon the coast of *Scotland*: but being hotly pursued by an *English* fleet of forty men of war, under the command of Sir *George Byng*, who took one of the enemy's vessels with some officers on board, the pretender was afraid to attempt a landing, and he immediately

diately returned into the harbour of *Dunkirk*. Nor was *Lewis* more successful in another project he had formed, which was to over-power the allies with superior numbers in *Flanders*, and dispossess them of all the conquests they had made in those quarters since the battle of *Ramillies*. He assembled, it is true, a prodigious army for this purpose, which was commanded by the dukes of *Vendome* and *Burgundy*; and these two generals, assisted by the interest of the elector of *Bavaria*, and of count *de Byrgbyck*, who had great influence in the *Low-Countries*, made themselves masters of *Ghent*, *Bruges*, and other places. They even laid siege to *Oudenard*, hoping to reduce it before the allies could come to its relief. But the duke of *Marlborough*, being now re-inforced by 30,000 Imperialists under prince *Eugene*, these two heroes, though still inferior to the enemy in numbers, attacked them the 11th of *July*, in the neighbourhood of *Oudenard*; and, after a short but obstinate engagement, defeated them with great slaughter; and had not night intervened, to save the shattered remains of the *French* army, few of them would have escaped to carry to their friends the news of their overthrow. By favour of the darkness, however, they effected a retreat, first to *Ghent* and *Bruges*, and afterwards to *Lovendegen*, where they threw up intrenchments. The princes of *France*, and the Pretender, were the sad eye-witnesses of this shameful defeat; while the electoral prince of *Hanover* (afterwards king *George II.* of *Great-Britain*) who was in the confederate army, fought at the head of *Bulau's* dragoons, with the most undaunted courage. His horse was shot under him, and colonel *Lusky* killed by his side.

Q. Did the allies improve the advantage they had gained?

A. They immediately laid siege to *Lisle*, the strongest town in the *Netherlands*, provided with all necessaries, and a garrison re-inforced by one and twenty of the best battalions of *France*, headed by marshal *Boufflers* in person. But, notwithstanding these discouraging circumstances, the confederates carried on their operations with surprizing vigour and activity. The siege was conducted by prince *Eugene*; the covering army commanded by the duke of *Marlborough*. The duke *de Vendome* made several motions, as if he meant

to attack the allies; but, though superior to them in point of number, he was afraid to hazard an engagement. He found means, indeed, to cut off their communication with *Antwerp*, from whence they had hitherto received their provisions, so that they were now obliged to bring all their supplies from *Ostend*, and that too along a narrow causeway, exposed to the attack of an army more numerous than their own. In spite, however, of all these obstructions, they actually brought several convoys from *Ostend*; and, in one of these enterprizes, general *Webb*, who guarded a convoy with 6000 men, defeated at *Wynendale* monsieur *de la Motte*, though at the head of an army 24,000 strong. Six thousand of the enemy were killed upon the spot; the convoy arrived safe in the camp of the allies; the city of *Lisle* surrendered a few days after, *viz.* the 23d of *October*, 1708; and the garrison retired into the citadel, which they seemed resolved to hold out to the last extremity.

Q. Did the *French* make no farther attempt for the relief of this place?

A. The elector of *Bavaria*, at the head of 15,000 chosen men, marched to *Brussels*, and attacked that city; but he was repulsed by the garrison, under the command of general *Paschal*, and fled with the utmost precipitation when he heard that the duke of *Marlborough* was advancing against him. Thus marshal *Boufflers*, being deprived of all hopes of succour, surrendered the citadel the 10th of *December*, and was conducted with his garrison to *Doway*. The *French* generals, imagining, that the allies, content with the reduction of *Lisle*, would undertake no other enterprize during the remaining part of the season, separated their army, and returned to *Paris*. But the confederates were determined to crown their conquests with the recovery of *Ghent*, which they accordingly invested the 20th of *December*, and took it after a siege of ten days, though defended by a garrison of thirty battalions, and nineteen squadrons. The enemy, alarmed at this event, abandoned *Bruges*, *Placendabl*, and *Leffingen*; and, on the whole, it may be affirmed, that this campaign, as it was one of the longest, was also one of the most glorious and successful that is to be found in modern story.

Q. Were the allies as fortunate in every other quarter ?

A. Yes: for, in spite of all the vigilance and activity of marshal *Villars*, who commanded the *French* forces in *Italy*, the duke of *Savoy* made himself master of the important fortresses of *Exilles* and *la Perugia*, and of the valley of *St. Martin* and *Fenestrelles*; so that, by the end of the year, he had secured a barrier to his own dominions, and opened a passage into the *French* provinces; after having made a diversion in favour *Charles III.* by obliging the enemy to send a large detachment from *Rouffillon* to the assistance of *Villars*. In *Spain*, indeed, the duke of *Orleans* took the city of *Torrosa*, and the chevalier *Dasfield* that of *Denia*. But these losses were more than compensated by the conquest of *Sardinia* and *Minorca*: the former being reduced by Sir *John Leake* to the obedience of king *Charles*; and the latter subdued by general *Stanhope* with about 3000 men; and at the conclusion of the war, it was added to the dominions of *Great-Britain*. On the *Upper Rhine*, the electors of *Bavaria* and *Hanover* were opposed to each other; but they were, both of them, so weak, that neither could attempt any enterprize of importance. On the 28th of *October*, 1708, died prince *George* of *Denmark*, in the fifty-sixth year of his age. His death was owing to an asthma and dropsy, with the first of which he had been afflicted almost from his infancy. He was a prince possessed of many amiable and engaging qualities, brave, generous, modest, and humane; but destitute of great talents, and little qualified for making a figure in the world. He had always lived in great harmony with the queen, who, during the whole course of their marriage, and especially in his last illness, approved herself a pattern of conjugal fidelity and tenderness.

Q. What were the transactions of 1709 ?

A. The *French* king was by this time reduced to such a state of despair by the numerous losses he had sustained, and a severe winter, which completed the misery of his subjects, that he resolved to sacrifice all the considerations of pride and ambition to the re-establishment of the public tranquillity; or, to speak more properly, he determined to counterfeit such a disposition, in order to amuse and cajole the allies, hoping, by that means, either to break the confederacy, or, at least, to prevent them from taking the field

so early, as they might otherwise, perhaps be inclined. With this view, he dispatched the president *Rouillé* and the marquis *de Torcy* to the *Hague*; and these ministers, in conjunction with those of the emperor, of *Great-Britain*, and of the States-General, agreed, the 28th of *May*, to certain preliminary articles; but as it was stipulated, in one of these, that king *Philip* should quit *Spain* in two months, *Lewis XIV.* rejected the conditions with disdain, and declared, that he would expend his last farthing rather than agree to such dishonourable terms.

Q. How did the allies bear with this equivocal conduct?

A. They were so much provoked, that they resolved to bring *Lewis* to reason, if not by strength of argument, at least by force of arms. Accordingly, prince *Eugene* and the duke of *Marlborough*, having assembled the allied army, advanced towards the enemy; but finding them so strongly intrenched in the plain of *Lens*, under marshal *Villars*, that they could not be attacked with any prospect of success, they invested the important city of *Tournay*, which, after a siege of two months, surrendered the 3d of *September*. On the 11th of the same month, they attacked the *French* army, which was advantageously posted, and intrenched almost up to the teeth at *Blaregnies* or *Malplacquet*, under the command of *Villars* and *Boufflers*. The fight was for some time maintained with great obstinacy, and dreadful havock was made among the *Dutch* infantry; but, at last, the enemy were obliged to yield to the superior valour of the *English* forces, who, led on by the earl of *Orkney*, general *Witbers*, the gallant duke of *Argyle* and others, rushed forward with irresistible fury; drove the *French* from their strongest intrenchments, and obtained over them a complete victory. This advantage, however, was dearly purchased with the loss of 18,000 men, who fell in the action; among whom were count *Lottum*, general *Tettau*, the marquis of *Tullibardine*, and other officers of distinction. The enemy lost about 15,000 men, and their number of wounded was so considerable, that they were altogether unable to give any relief to *Mons*, which surrendered to the allies the 20th of *October*.



Q. What were the events of the war in other parts?

A. In *Germany* nothing of importance happened, except one sharp action between a detachment of the *French* army and a body of the Imperialists, in which the latter were worsted. The campaign in *Piedmont* was equally inactive, owing, as was supposed, to a dispute that had arisen between the courts of *Vienna* and *Turin*, concerning a claim which the duke of *Savoy* had laid to certain dependencies of the *Milanese*. On the 7th of *May* the *English* and *Portuguese* were defeated at *Caya* by the *Spaniards*, under the command of the marshal *de Bay*. About the same time, general *Stanhope* arrived with a fleet upon the coast of *Spain*, in order to succour the castle of *Alicant*, defended by two *English* regiments, which had sustained a desperate siege during the whole winter; but finding it impossible to land his men, he capitulated with the *Spanish* general for the garrison, which was conveyed to *Minorca*. On the frontiers of *Catalonia*, general *Staremburg*, who, the year before, had checked the progress of the dukes of *Orleans's* arms, reduced *Balaguer*, where he took 900 prisoners.

Q. What happened in 1710?

A. The *French* court had, for some time, maintained a correspondence with *M. Petkum*, the *Holstein* envoy at the *Hague*, and by means of this gentleman, they now renewed the negotiations for peace; but these conferences, which were held at *Gertruydenburgh* from *March* to *July*, proved as ineffectual as those of the *Hague*; upon which the *French* ministers withdrew, after having expressed their resentment at the ungenerous treatment which they pretended they had received.

Q. What terms did the two parties propose?

A. *Lewis XIV.* offered (though probably without any design of performing his engagements) to abandon the cause of his grandson, *Philip*, provided that that prince, in lieu of *Spain*, should receive the kingdoms of *Sardinia* and *Sicily*; and though he would not consent to assist with his forces in expelling him his dominions, he yet agreed to furnish the confederates with a monthly sum of money, towards defraying the expence of driving him out of *Spain*, in case he should refuse to quit it voluntarily. But the allies, convinced of the insincerity of these professions, replied,

plied, that the restoration of *Spain* to the house of *Austria*, was the grand object, for which the war was undertaken; that as *Lewis* had placed his grandson on the throne of that kingdom, it was certainly in his power to make him resign it; and that, without this condition, no treaty could be concluded. All hopes of accommodation being thus extinguished, the conferences at *Gertruydenburgh* broke up the 13<sup>th</sup> of *July*, 1710.

Q. What encouraged *Lewis*, after so many misfortunes, to adhere to the cause of his grandson?

A. He was informed by the *Abbé Gautier*, and others, that a change of ministry would soon take place in *England*, and that the new ministers would certainly be more favourable to his interest than the old.

Q. What occasioned this change of ministry?

A. The distractions excited by the famous *Dr. Sacheverel*, rector of *St. Saviour's, Southwark*, who, in a sermon preached before the lord-mayor of *London*, and which was afterwards published, had advanced certain positions contrary to revolution-principles, to the present government, and the protestant succession. The House of Commons, having examined this discourse, voted it a scandalous and seditious libel, and impeached the doctor before the House of Peers, who, by way of punishment, prohibited him from preaching for three years, and ordered his sermon to be burned by the hands of the common hangman. This affair, assisted by the arts of designing men, raised such a flame in the nation, that the people were at last brought to believe, that the church of *England* was in danger; and as the Whigs were supposed to be low churchmen, and the Tories high churchmen, the current of popular favour rang strongly towards the latter party. The queen too, though she had hitherto employed a Whig-ministry, had always, it is said, entertained, in her heart, a greater regard and affection for the Tories. But these causes did not immediately produce their full effect.

Q. What steps did the allies take upon the breaking up of the conferences at *Gertruydenburgh*?

A. They resolved to prosecute the war with the utmost vigour; and accordingly prince *Eugene* and the duke of *Marlborough*, having assembled the army in the month of *April*,

*April*, took the cities of *Doway*, *Bethune*, *Aire*, and *St. Venant*; but they were not able, during the whole summer, to bring the enemy to a battle.

Q. What passed in other parts this year?

A. The campaign in *Germany* was intirely enactive, nor was any thing of moment transacted in *Italy*. The duke of *Savoy* being indisposed, and out of humour, the command of the forces was vested in count *Thaun*, who attempted to cross the *Alps*, and force his way into *Dauphiné*; but the duke of *Berwick* had cast up intrenchments in the mountains, and taken such precautions to defend them, as baffled the designs of the Imperial general. Greater achievements were performed in *Spain*, where both parties were conquerors and conquered in their turn. General *Stanhope*, at the head of fifteen squadrons of horse and dragoons, attacked, the 27th of *July*, the whole cavalry of the enemy at *Almenara*. *Stanhope* charged in person, and with his own hand slew general *Amessaga*, who commanded the guards of *Philip*. The *Spanish* horse were intirely defeated, together with nine battalions of foot, that escaped by favour of the darkness; and the main body of the army retreated with the utmost precipitation to *Lerida*. General *Staremberg* pursued them to *Saragossa*, where he found them drawn up in order of battle; and an engagement ensuing, on the 9th of *August*, the enemy received a total defeat. Five thousand of their men were killed, 7000 taken, together with all their artillery, and a great number of colours and standards. King *Charles* entered *Saragossa* in triumph, while *Philip*, with the remains of his army, retired towards *Madrid*. Having sent his queen and son to *Victoria*, he repaired to *Valladolid*, in order to assemble his scattered troops, so as to compose another army. *Stanhope* proposed, that a body of troops should be posted at *Pampeluna*, the only pass by which the *French* could send forces into *Spain*. But this prudent measure was neglected; and *Charles* proceeded to *Madrid*, which was abandoned by all the *grandees*; and he had the mortification to find that all the *Castilians* were attached to his competitor.

Q. Did affairs continue long in this situation?

A. No: *Charles* was not able to maintain the superiority he had gained. The king of *France* sent the duke of *Vendome*

*Vendome* to take the command of the *Spanish* army, which was, at the same time, reinforced by detachments of *French* troops. *Vendome* was a general of great reputation, and many volunteers flocked to his standard. The *Castilians*, too, exerted themselves with great industry, in order to support their sovereign: so that in less than three months after his defeat at *Saragossa*, *Philip* was in a condition to go in quest of his rival. *Charles*, on the other hand, was entirely neglected by those whose interest it was to support him. The court of *England* was too much engaged in party-disputes to have leisure to attend to foreign transactions; and the emperor was so apprehensive of a war between the grand Signor and the Czar, that he was afraid to diminish his army in *Hungary*?

Q. What happened afterwards?

A. In the beginning of *November*, *Charles* marched back to *Saragossa*, and cantoned his troops in the neighbourhood of *Cifuentes*, where *Staremburg* fixed his head-quarters. General *Stanbope* was quartered in the little town of *Brihuega*, where he found himself suddenly surrounded by the whole *Spanish* army. He immediately sent an account of his situation to *Staremburg*; and that general was no sooner apprized of his danger, than he assembled his troops, and set out to his relief. But, before his arrival, *Stanbope*, being attacked by the enemy, was obliged to surrender himself and all his forces prisoners of war to the amount of 2000 men.

Q. What measures did *Staremburg* embrace?

A. That general, being ignorant of *Stanbope's* misfortune, continued to advance towards *Brihuega*; but the roads were so bad, that night overtook him before he reached the heights which commanded the town. The troops lay on their arms; and, on the 29th of *November*, they were attacked by the enemy, who were double their number. *Staremburg's* right wing was entirely routed, all the infantry that composed it, being either killed or taken: but the victors, instead of pursuing the blow, begun to plunder the baggage; and *Staremburg*, with his right wing, fought their left with the most obstinate valour till night. Then the enemy retired in disorder, leaving him master of the field of battle, and of all their artillery. Six thousand of them  
fell

fell upon the spot; but the allies had suffered so severely, that the general could not maintain his ground. He therefore returned to *Saragossa*, and from thence marched into *Catalonia*. Thither he was followed by *Vendome*, who reduced *Balaguer*, and obliged him to take refuge under the walls of *Barcelona*. About the same time, the duke *de Noailles* laid siege to *Gironne*, which he took notwithstanding the severity of the season; so that king *Charles*, who lately might have been master of all *Spain*, was confined to the single province of *Catalonia*, and even that lay open to the incursions of the enemy.

Q. What effect did these misfortunes produce in *England*?

A. They gave great uneasiness to the duke of *Marlborough's* friends, and infinite joy to his enemies.

Q. Why were his enemies overjoyed?

A. They knew, that, as his credit and influence had first been raised, and was still supported by his military achievements, the most effectual way to ruin both, would be to put an end to the war; and the late ill success of the allies in *Spain* furnished them with a plausible pretence for alledging, that a peace was now become absolutely necessary.

Q. Who was at the head of this pacific cabal?

A. *Robert Harley, Esq;* (afterwards earl of *Oxford*) a man of great abilities and the most insinuating address. He had been brought into office by the interest of the duke of *Marlborough* and lord *Godolphin*, who had procured for him the post of secretary of state, from which, however, he had been dismissed, upon his endeavouring to undermine his benefactors. He continued, nevertheless, to enjoy the confidence of her majesty, to whom he had free, though private, access, by means of one *Mrs. Masham*, a new favourite of the queen, and one of her bed-chamber-women. She was a near relation of the dutchess of *Marlborough*, who had rescued her from indigence and obscurity, kept her some time in her own family, recommended her to the service of her majesty; and had now the mortification to see herself supplanted by the person whom she had thus generously patronized.

Q. What method did Mr. *Harley* take, in order to accomplish his purpose?

A. As he knew, that that could not be done without effecting a change of ministry, and procuring a Tory-parliament, he first resolved to execute these two projects. With this view, he represented to the queen, the absolute necessity of altering her measures: he said, that she was held in a slavish subjection by the Whigs, and was, in reality, but a cypher in the government: that the duke and dutches of *Marlborough*, in particular, exercised over her the most cruel tyranny, and had engrossed to themselves the sole disposal of honours and employments: that the Tories were her only true and sincere friends, and were firmly attached to her person and government: and that she could never reign with ease and independence, till she had delivered herself from the hands of the Whigs, and intrusted her affairs to the management of the Tories. The queen, who, of herself, was sufficiently inclined to listen to these suggestions, immediately adopted his sentiments; and accordingly, in a little time, lord *Somers* was deprived of the presidency of the council, the duke of *Devonshire* of the office of lord steward, and the earl of *Wharton* of the lieutenancy of *Ireland*. Even *Charles Spencer*, earl of *Sunderland*, son-in-law to the duke of *Marlborough*, was removed from his post of secretary of state; and the excellent earl of *Godolphin*, whose only son had married the eldest daughter of the aforesaid duke, was soon after deprived of his office of lord-high-treasurer. In a word, there was not a single Whig left in any office under the government, except the duke of *Marlborough*, and he too would have resigned his command, had he not been persuaded by his friends to refrain from taking a step, which might prove prejudicial to the interest of his country.

Q. What were the next measures which the Tories embraced?

A. Having seized into their own hands the whole power of the administration, they found it no difficult matter to procure a parliament to their liking. Accordingly the old, or Whig-parliament was dissolved, and another summoned, which proved a Tory one, and wholly at the direction of the

the *Triumvirate*, who governed the three realms, in the queen's name, till her decease.

Q. Who composed this triumvirate.

A. *Robert Harley*, earl of *Oxford*, whom we have already mentioned: *Sir Simon Harcourt*, who was first appointed lord-keeper, then lord-high-chancellor, and at last made a peer of the realm: and *Mr. Henry St. John*, a man of distinguished abilities, but of the most unbounded ambition, who was nominated secretary of state, and afterwards created viscount *Bolingbroke*.

Q. Was not the duke of *Marlborough* dissatisfied with this change in the ministry?

A. Whatever might have been his private sentiments, he resolved to act in such a manner, as might be most conducive to the interest of his country.

Q. What exploits did his grace perform in 1711?

A. *Prince Eugene* being obliged to return into *Germany* with the *Imperial* and *Palatine* troops, in order to check the progress of the elector of *Bavaria*, who was advancing towards the *Rhine* with a considerable body of *French*, all that the duke of *Marlborough* could do was to force the *French* lines on the *Schelde* and the *Sanset*, which they had fortified so strongly, as to render them, in the opinion of most people, altogether impenetrable. They used to call them, by way of bravado, the *Ne plus ultra* of *Marlborough*. That nobleman, however, by his admirable conduct, entered them without the loss of a single man. Soon after he took the important, and, as it was then esteemed, the impregnable fortress of *Bouchain*, which surrendered the 13th of *September*, in sight of the enemy, though 100,000 strong.

Q. Was this year distinguished by any other military transactions?

A. No: the duke of *Argyle* indeed, an officer of approved courage, was advanced to the command of the *British* troops in *Portugal*; but he was so entirely neglected by the ministry, who forgot to send him the promised remittances, that he could not attempt any enterprize of importance. An expedition too, which was undertaken against the *French* settlements in the *West-Indies*, was so ill concerted, and so feebly executed, that it proved utterly abortive.

Q. What happened in *Germany* this year ?

A. Nothing remarkable, except the death of the emperor *Joseph*, who was carried off by the small-pox, the 17th of *April*, 1711. Soon after, his brother, *Charles III.* was elected and crowned emperor of *Germany* in his room.

Q. What influence had this event upon the state of affairs in *Europe* ?

A. It furnished the *English* ministry with a more plausible pretext, than any they had as yet found, for accepting a peace upon the conditions offered by monsieur *Menager* in the *French* king's name, and the preliminaries of which were signed the 27th of *September*.

Q. Were these preliminaries approved by the parliament ?

A. They were readily approved by the lower house ; but were strongly opposed in the upper : and the queen, therefore, created, at once, no less than twelve new peers, which effectually cast the ballance in favour of the ministry. The duke of *Marlborough*, however, refused to agree to these measures ; for which reason he was, on the 31th of *December*, removed from all his employments, and the command of the army bestowed upon the duke of *Ormond*.

Q. How did this new general behave in 1712 ?

A. As he was a nobleman of real merit, he would probably have acted with equal spirit and sagacity, had he followed the dictates of his own judgment ; but suffering himself, though with some reluctance, to be governed by those who had raised him to power, he had no opportunity of displaying his military talents. The *English* ministers were now bent upon a peace, and they therefore sent orders to *Ormond* to refrain from all acts of hostility. In obedience to these orders, the duke refused to concur with prince *Eugene* in attacking the *French* army, or besieging the town of *Landreci* ; drew off the *English* forces from the confederates ; published a suspension of arms with *France* the 16th of *July* ; and seized *Ghent* and *Bruges* for the use of his sovereign : a conduct, which was attended with the most fatal consequences to the allies, who, being now deprived of the assistance of the *English*, were defeated at *Denain*, obliged to raise the siege of *Landreci*, and soon after



ter expelled from the important towns of *Doway*, *Bouchain*, and *Quefnoy*.

Q. What were the principal transactions of 1713?

A. The *English* ministers had long carried on a private negotiation with the court of *France*, in order to settle the terms of peace; and every thing being, at length, in some measure, adjusted, they now resolved publicly to conclude a formal treaty. For this purpose, notwithstanding the remonstrances of the emperor, of the elector of *Hanover*, and of the states-general, a congress had been formed at *Utrecht*, which was opened the 29th of *January*, 1712; and to which the confederates at last consented, however unwillingly, to send their respective plenipotentiaries. Strong objections were made by these ministers to the terms offered by *France*; but the queen of *England*, and *Lewis XIV.* having previously agreed upon the conditions of peace, they compelled all the allies, who composed the grand alliance, to accede to them all, I mean, except the emperor, who was afterwards obliged to conclude a separate treaty with *France* at *Baden*.

Q. What were the terms of this treaty of *Utrecht*?

A. Not to mention the less material articles, king *Philip* was left in quiet possession of the *Spanish* throne; and thus, the great object, for which the war had been originally undertaken, and prosecuted for the space of nine years with such signal success, was finally disappointed. This peace was signed the 11th of *April*, 1713.

Q. What happened during the remaining part of this reign?

A. The attention of the public was wholly engrossed by the violent disputes between the Whigs and Tories, who seized every opportunity of displaying to the world their mutual hatred and antipathy. The queen herself was harassed and disturbed by the furious altercations of her ministers and counsellors. *Oxford* and *Bolingbroke*, in particular, had conceived against each other the most implacable resentment; and they carried their animosity to such an intolerable height, that, forgetting the reverence due to majesty, and the obligations they owed to their royal benefactress, they broke out into open invectives, even in the queen's presence. *Oxford* was removed from his post of lord-high-treasurer; and *Bolingbroke* expected to become prime minister

ter : but all his hopes were blasted by the sudden death of the queen, who, oppressed with the burden of her bodily infirmities, and further worn out with anxiety of mind, was seized with a kind of lethargic disorder, of which she expired on the 1st day of *August*, 1714.

Q. Had queen *Anne* any children ?

A. She bore to her husband, prince *George of Denmark*, two sons and four daughters ; all of whom died in their infancy, except *William*, duke of *Gloucester*, who attained to the eleventh year of his age, when he was carried off by a malignant fever, to the inexpressible grief of the whole nation.

Q. Describe the person and qualities of this princess ?

A. Queen *Anne* was of the middle stature, and well proportioned. Her hair was of a dark brown colour, her complexion sanguine and ruddy, her features strong and regular, her countenance rather round than oval, and her aspect more comely than majestic. Her voice was remarkably clear and harmonious, as appeared in the graceful delivery of her speeches to parliament. She had a tolerable ear for music, and performed indifferently on the guitar, an instrument then greatly in vogue. Her character, viewed in a private light, is one of the most amiable that is to be found in history. She was a pattern of conjugal fidelity and affection, a tender mother, a warm friend, an indulgent mistress, and a munificent patron. Her public conduct, though not altogether free from weakness, was, in the main, laudable and praise-worthy. She seems, indeed, to have been deficient in that vigour of mind, which might preserve her from the snares of sycophants and favourites ; but her regard for the happiness and prosperity of her subjects was never called in question. She felt a mother's fondness for her people, by whom she was beloved with a warmth of affection, which even the prejudice of party could not abate. Her reign may be said to have been bloodless, no person having been executed, at least beheaded, for treason, during the whole course of her administration ; a circumstance, which cannot be affirmed of any other *English* monarch since the time of *Edward the first*.

Q. Was this reign distinguished by any other remarkable events?

A. The year 1706 will ever be memorable for the union of the two kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*; by which treaty it was stipulated, that *Scotland* should be represented in the parliament of *Great-Britain* by 16 peers, and 45 commoners. In 1707, Sir *Coudesley Shovel* was shipwrecked upon the rocks of *Scilly*.

Q. What happened in the other kingdoms of *Europe* during this period?

A. In 1708, the elector *Palatine* was restored to the possession of the *Upper-Palatinate*, with the rank and title which had been vested in the house of *Bavaria*, by the treaty of *Munster*: the duke of *Saxony* received the investiture of *Mantua* and *Montferrat*: and, by the good offices and powerful solicitations of *Great-Britain* and the *States-General*, the succession of the principality of *Neufchatel* was decided in favour of the king of *Prussia*. In 1709, king *Charles XII.* of *Sweden*, having penetrated into the heart of *Russia*, was attacked, at *Pultowa*, on the 8th of *July*, by the *Czar* in person, who defeated the *Swedens* with great slaughter, and compelled *Charles* to fly for shelter to *Bender* in *Turkey*, where he met with a very hospitable reception. In 1714, died the princess *Sophia*, electress and dutchess dowager of *Hanover*, in the 84th year of her age.

## C H A P. XLVIII.

GEORGE I. XLIX<sup>th</sup> King of England,  
And Seventh of Great-Britain.

From 1714 to 1727.

<i>Popes.</i>		<i>King of Portugal.</i>	
CLEMENT XI.	1700	JOHN V.	1706
INNOCENT XIII.	1721		
BENEDICT XIII.	1723	<i>King of Denmark.</i>	
<i>Kings of France.</i>		FREDERIC IV.	1699
LEWIS XIV.	1643	<i>Sovereigns of Sweden.</i>	
LEWIS XV.	1715	CHARLES XII.	1697
<i>King of Spain.</i>		ULRICA ELEANORA	1718
PHILIP V.	1701	FREDERIC	1720

Q. WHO succeeded queen *Anne* ?

A. *George*, elector of *Hanover*, or *Brunswick-Lunenburgh*, who ascended the throne in 1714, being then in the fifty-fifth year of his age.

Q. Of whom was he descended ?

A. He was the eldest son of *Ernest Augustus*, first elector of *Brunswick-Lunenburgh*, by the princess *Sophia*, daughter of *Frederic V.* elector *Palatine*, and king of *Bobemia*, and of *Elizabeth*, eldest daughter to *James I.* king of *Great-Britain*; and, as all the popish branches of the royal family were excluded from the throne by the act of settlement, he was thus the true lineal heir to the crown.

Q. Who governed the kingdom till his arrival in *England* ?

A. The lords-justices, who had been appointed by the late queen, together with those who were added by his majesty.

Q. What steps did the lords-justices take ?

A. Queen *Anne* had no sooner resigned her breath, than they issued orders for proclaiming king *George* in *England*,  
*Scotland*,

*Scotland*, and *Ireland*, which was accordingly done with the usual solemnity. They dispatched the earl of *Dorset* to *Hanover*, where the king then resided, to acquaint him with the queen's death, and his own accession, and to desire him to set out, with all convenient speed, on his journey for *England*. At the same time, in order to provide for the security of the kingdom, they sent the general officers, on whom they could depend, to their respective posts; they reinforced the garrison of *Portsmouth*; and appointed *Joseph Addison*, Esq; their secretary; while lord *Belingbroke* was obliged to wait at the door of the council-chamber with his bag and papers, and was soon after removed, with evident marks of displeasure, from his post of secretary of state.

Q. What was done next?

A. The parliament meeting, agreeable to the act of settlement, the lord-chancellor made a speech to both houses in the name of the regency. In consequence of this, addresses of condolence and congratulation were immediately transmitted to his majesty, humbly requesting, as soon as possible, his royal presence in *England*; to which the king returned a very gracious answer, declaring in the close of it, "that he would make it his constant care to preserve the religion, laws, and liberties of his subjects inviolate, and to advance the honour and prosperity of his kingdoms." The parliament likewise passed a bill "for the support of his majesty's household, and the dignity of the crown;" for which purpose they granted him the same revenue, which had been settled upon the late queen: and to this bill the lords-justices gave the royal assent.

Q. Was no opposition made to his majesty's accession?

A. None openly: for, whatever designs might have been formed by some persons, they were not ripe for execution. The pretender, indeed, upon advice of the queen's death, repaired from *Lorrain* to *Versailles*; but finding it impossible to obtain an audience of the *French* king, he returned to the place of his former residence. Mean while, the remains of her late majesty were interred, on the 24th of *August*, with great funeral pomp, in *Henry* the VIIth's chapel; the dutchess of *Ormond* (in the absence of the dutchess of *Somerfet*) walking as chief mourner.

Q. When did his majesty set out from *Hanover*?

*A.* Having committed the government of his *German* dominions to a council, headed by his brother, prince *Ernest*, he departed, with the prince royal, from *Herenhausen*, on the 31st day of *August*; and in five days arrived at the *Hague*, where he was complimented by the deputies of the states, and by the foreign ambassadors. Embarking at *Orange-Polder*, *September* 16, under convoy of a squadron of *English* and *Dutch* ships, commanded by the earl of *Berkeley*, he landed safe at *Greenwich* the 18th, about six in the evening. There he was received by the earl of *Northumberland*, captain of the life-guards, and by the lords of the regency. From the landing-place he walked to his house in *Greenwich-Park*, accompanied by a great number of the nobility and gentry, who had the honour to kiss his hand. It was observed, however, that some of the late ministry, when they came to pay their respects, met with but a very cold reception.

*Q.* When did his majesty and the prince arrive in *London*?

*A.* They made their public entry, on the 20th of *September*, with great pomp and magnificence; their coach being preceded by above 200 coaches and six, of the nobility, and others. The king was received by the lord-mayor, aldermen, &c. of *London*; and by the high steward, high-bailiff, &c. of *Westminster*. His entry into *London* was proclaimed by the firing of the *Tower* guns, and his arrival at *St. James's* palace by the firing of those in the park. Next day there was a numerous and splendid court; but the festivity of the company was a little interrupted by an unfortunate accident. *Mr. Aldworth*, member of parliament, and colonel *Chudleigh*, having quarrelled in the presence-chamber, retired to *Marybone Fields*, where they fought a duel, when *Mr. Aldworth* was killed upon the spot.

*Q.* What steps did his majesty take upon his arrival at *St. James's*?

*A.* His first business was to settle his ministry; and, as the late one was supposed to be not very favourably inclined to the protestant succession, an almost total change was made in every department under the government. The duke of *Ormond* was deprived of the command of the forces, which the king restored to the duke of *Marlborough*, whom he likewise appointed colonel of the first regiment of foot-guards, and

master

master of the ordnance. The great seal was given to lord *Cowper*; the privy-seal, to the earl of *Wharton*; the government of *Ireland*, to the earl of *Sunderland*. The duke of *Devonshire* was made steward of the household; lord *Townsend* and Mr. *Stanhope* were appointed secretaries of state: the post of secretary for *Scotland* was bestowed upon the duke of *Montrose*. The duke of *Somerset* was constituted master of the horse; the duke of *St. Alban's*, captain of the band of pensioners; and the duke of *Argyle*, commander in chief of the forces in *Scotland*. Lord *Halifax* was made first commissioner of the treasury; Sir *Richard Onslow*, chancellor of the exchequer; the earl of *Orford*, first commissioner of the admiralty; Mr. *William Pulteney*, secretary at war; and Mr. *Robert Walpole*, pay-master to the army, and to *Chelsea-Hospital*. The old privy-council was dissolved, and a new one appointed, of which the earl of *Nottingham* was made president. Soon after, his majesty declared, in council, his firm resolution to support and maintain the churches of *England* and *Scotland*, as by law established; and he concluded with the following words: "the good effects of making property secure are no where so clearly seen, and to so great a degree, as in this happy kingdom; and I assure you, there is not any among you that shall more earnestly endeavour at the preservation of it than myself." At the same time the prince royal was declared prince of *Wales*, and took his seat at the board accordingly. Addresses of congratulation were presented by the two universities, by the bishops, by the several counties, cities, and boroughs, by the dissenters, the church of *Scotland*, the protestants of *Ireland*, &c. October 11, the princess of *Wales*, with the princesses *Anne* and *Amelia*, arrived in *England*; the princess *Caroline* not coming over till *May*, on account of a late indisposition.

Q. When was the king crowned?

A. October 20, with the usual solemnity; his majesty having previously created several new peers, and advanced others to higher titles. The occasion was observed with the greatest demonstrations of joy in all parts of the kingdom, except at *Bristol*, and a few other places, where the rabble rose in tumults, and committed the most shocking disorders; breaking windows, pulling down meeting-houses, &c. The

cry was, "Down with the whigs; high church, *Sacheverels* and *Ormona*, for ever." This factious spirit in the people was supposed to be owing to a number of seditious pamphlets, which were published about this time, as well as to the unwarrantable conduct of certain clergymen, who neglected praying for the king in the usual form; but orders were issued for preventing this practice, and silencing all disputes about the Trinity, which had likewise raised some disturbance. The Pretender, encouraged by these marks of disaffection in the *English*, transmitted a declaration to the dukes of *Marlbrough*, *Sbrewsbury*, *Argyle*, &c. but no further notice was taken of it, than a proclamation's being published against Papists and Non-jurors.

Q. What were the most remarkable events of 1715?

A. The old parliament having been dissolved, and a new one summoned, the Whigs and Tories exerted their utmost efforts in influencing the elections; but the former gained the superiority by a great number of voices. The parliament met the 17th of *March*, and *Spencer Compton* was chosen speaker of the House of Commons. The king made a speech to both houses, in which, among other things, he said, "the established constitution in church and state shall be the rule of my government: the happiness, ease, and prosperity of my people, shall be the chief care of my life. Those who assist me in carrying on these measures, I shall always esteem my best friends; and I doubt not but I shall be able, with your assistance, to disappoint the designs of those, who would deprive me of that blessing, which I most value, the affection of my people."

Q. What was done the first session of this new parliament?

A. After granting the necessary sums for the service of the current year, and 700,000 l. for the support of his majesty's household, a committee of secrecy was appointed, of which Mr. *Robert Walpole* was chairman, to enquire into the conduct of the late ministry; when it was resolved, that *Henry* viscount *Bolingbroke*, *Robert* earl of *Oxford*, and *James* duke of *Ormond*, should be impeached of high treason; and *Thomas* earl of *Strafford*,  
of



of high crimes and misdemeanors. The charge against these noblemen may be reduced to the following particulars: 1. The clandestine negotiations with *Monf. Menager*, the *French* agent; in consequence of which, two sets of preliminary articles were drawn; the one private and special for *Great Britain* only, the other general for all the allies. 2. The extraordinary steps taken to form the congress of *Utrecht*. 3. The trifling conduct of the *French* plenipotentiaries at *Utrecht*, by the connivance of the *British* ministers. 4. The negotiations relating to the renunciation of the *Spanish* monarchy. 5. The fatal suspension of arms. 6. The seizure of *Ghent* and *Bruges*, to serve the *French* interest. 7. The duke of *Ormond*'s acting in concert with the *French* general. 8. Lord *Bolingbroke*'s journey to *France*. 9. The duke of *Shrewsbury* and Mr. *Prior*'s negotiation there. 10. The hasty conclusion of the peace of *Utrecht*. 11. The sacrifice made of the *Catalans*. 12. The promoting the pretender's interest. Lord *Bolingbroke*, dreading the impending storm, fled the kingdom, and left a paper behind him in vindication of his conduct. His example was soon after followed by the duke of *Ormond*. The earl of *Oxford* was thrown into the *Tower*. By the riot-act, which was passed this session, it was declared death for any persons, to the number of twelve, to continue together for the space of one hour, after proclamation being made for their dispersing.

Q. What other steps did the parliament take?

A. The king having acquainted them, that designs were carrying on, both at home and abroad, in favour of the pretender, they passed a bill for suspending the *Habeas-Corpus* act, during the space of six months: soon after which, the duke of *Powis*, the earls of *Jersey* and *Scarsdale*, the lords *Landsdown*, *Dunbar*, &c. were taken into custody; the coasts were strictly guarded, and an express sent to the *Dutch*, demanding the 6000 men, which they were bound by treaty to furnish to his majesty.

Q. Were the designs of the *Jacobites* carried into execution?

A. Yes: for, though the death of *Lewis XIV.* which happened about this time, and upon whose promises of assistance they had built their chief hopes of

success, tended considerably to depress their spirits; and though the duke of *Orleans*, who was appointed regent of *France*, during the minority of *Lewis XV.* maintained a friendly correspondence with his majesty, king *George*; yet, as they had been so rash as to engage in this enterprise, they were determined to try their fortune in the field; and accordingly a rebellion was soon after raised in *Scotland*, which was seconded by another in *England*. The former was headed by the earl of *Mar*; the latter, by *Mr. Foster*. The earl, during the late reign, had been secretary of state for *Scotland*, and was one of the first who made professions of their loyalty to king *George*; but not meeting with the encouragement he expected, and knowing that his designs could not be much longer concealed, he withdrew privately to his seat at *Kildrummy*, in the *Higblands*: where, being joined by the marquisses of *Huntley* and *Tullibardine*, the earls of *Nithisdale*, *Marischal*, *Traquair*, *Errol*, and others, he openly erected the standard of rebellion, and proclaimed the pretender by the name of *James VIII.* about the 16th of *September*, in *Aberdeen*, *Dundee*, *Pertb*, &c. The *Jacobites*, in the mean time, exerted themselves with so much industry, that he soon found himself at the head of an army 6000 strong.

Q. What measures did the government take, in order to suppress this rebellion?

A. The duke of *Argyle*, commander in chief of his majesty's forces in *North Britain*, immediately assembled all the regular troops, which were in that kingdom; and tho' they did not exceed 3,500 men, yet, with this small force, he ventured, on *Sunday* the 13th of *November*, to attack, at *Sheriff-Moor*, near *Dumblain*, the rebels, who amounted to 9000 men, under the command of the earl of *Mar*. A bloody battle was fought, and both sides claimed victory. This much is certain, that the left wing of both armies was defeated. The right of the duke's soon routed the left of the rebels; but, while his grace was pursuing them, the right of the rebels charged the left of the duke's with such impetuosity, that they advanced to the very muzzles of the muskets; and pushing aside the bayonets with their targets, and falling on furiously with their broad

broad swords, they committed such terrible slaughter among the king's forces, that these last, being confounded and terrified at this strange and desperate manner of fighting, were instantly put to flight. Upon the whole, however, it appeared that the king's army had the advantage, as the earl of *Mar*, immediately after the battle, retired with his forces to *Perth*. In this action the rebels lost about 800 men in killed and wounded, besides great numbers who were taken prisoners. The loss of the king's army did not amount to above 500 men. A little before this battle, lord *Lovat* dispossessed the rebels of *Inverness*. This nobleman had hitherto appeared in the interest of the pretender, though he now declared for the government; and he afterwards joined the rebellion in 1745, when, being taken prisoner, he was executed on *Tower-hill*. It is likewise to be observed, that an attempt had been made to surprise the castle of *Edinburgh*, but the design miscarried.

Q. What was the issue of the rebellion in *England*?

A. Mr. *Foster*, being joined by the earl of *Derwentwater*, and several *English* gentlemen, and by the earl of *Widdrington*, with a small body of forces from *Scotland*, proclaimed the Pretender at *Morpeth*, *Hexham*, &c. in the beginning of *October*. He then marched to *Preston*, where on the 13th of *November* he was attacked by the king's forces, under the generals *Carpenter* and *Wills*. His majesty's troops were, at first, very much galled by the shot from the windows; but general *Carpenter* threatening to set fire to the town, the rebels surrendered at discretion. Of the king's forces about 130 were slain; how many of the rebels is uncertain. About 1400 of them were taken prisoners; among whom were general *Forster*, the earl of *Derwentwater*, lord *Widdrington*, with 75 *English* gentlemen; the earls of *Nithisdale*, *Wintoun*, and *Carnwath*; viscount *Kenmure*, and other *Scotch* noblemen and gentlemen, amounting in all to about 143.

Q. Did not the Pretender arrive in *Scotland*?

A. Yes, on the 22d of *December*, about five weeks after the battle of *Sheriff-moor*, by which all his hopes were blasted. This circumstance, however, was carefully concealed from his partisans, who were made to believe,

that

that he would soon be able to retrieve his affairs. On the 5th of *January* 1716, he entered *Dundee* on horseback, having the earl of *Mar* on his right-hand, and the earl of *Mareschal* on his left, and attended by about 300 gentlemen. On the 9th of the same month, he made his public entry into *Pertb*, and retired in the evening to the palace of *Score*, the place where the *Scottish* kings were anciently wont to be crowned. Here he began to establish a regular council, and to perform several acts of state. He published six different proclamations; one, for a general thanksgiving, on account of his safe arrival; another, for praying for him in churches; a third, for the currency of all foreign coins; a fourth, for summoning a convention of the estates; a fifth, ordering all fencible men to repair to his standard; and a sixth, appointing his coronation on the 23d of *January*. He afterwards conferred various degrees of honour, and received addresses from the episcopal clergy and laity. He continued, for some time, to exercise other acts of royalty; till hearing that the duke of *Argyle*, who had lately been reinforced by 6000 *Dutch*, was advancing against him, he suddenly quitted *Pertb*, and proceeding first to *Dundee*, then to *Monrose*, he embarked, *February* 13, on board a *French* ship, accompanied by the earls of *Mar* and *Melfort*, lord *Drummond*, Mr. *Buckley*, Mr. *Sheldon*, and others; and setting off with a fair wind, arrived safe, about five days after, at *Gravelins* in *France*. The deluded rebels, being thus deserted by their leaders, dispersed immediately, and returned to their several habitations; some submitted to the king's mercy, and others were taken prisoners. The Pretender, during his stay in *Scotland*, did not once attend the Protestant worship.

Q. What became of the rebels who were taken prisoners?

A. They were brought to *London*, and imprisoned in the *Tower*, *Newgate*, and the *Fleet*. Among these were *Forster*, their general, the earls of *Derwentwater*, *Nithisdale*, *Carnwath*, and *Wintoun*; viscount *Kenmure*, and the lords *Widdrington* and *Nairne*. Those of the inferior sort were pinioned at *Barnet*; and their horses being led by foot soldiers, they proceeded, in that manner, to their respective

spective prisons. On the 10th of *January* 1716, the impeached lords were brought from the *Tower* to *Westminster-hall*, where earl *Cowper* presided as lord high-steward on that solemn occasion. They all pleaded guilty, and received sentence of death, except the earl of *Wintoun*, who petitioned for a longer time to prepare for his trial. Lord *Nitbisdale* escaped, in woman's apparel, the night before the execution. The lords *Derrwentwater* and *Kennure* were beheaded on *Tower-hill*, *February* 24. Both of them died with great composure: the former professed himself a *Roman Catholic*; the latter a member of the church of *England*. The earl of *Wintoun* was tried *March* 13, and, at last, found guilty; but he made his escape out of the *Tower*. *Carnwath*, *Widdrington*, and *Nairne*, were reprieved, and received the benefit of the act of grace, which was afterwards passed.

Q. What punishments were inflicted upon the other rebels?

A. General *Foster*, brigadier *Mackintosh*, and a few more, escaped out of *Newgate*. The gaoler was tried for his negligence, but acquitted. Some were executed in *Lancashire*, eleven at *Preston*, six at *Wigan*, and five at *Manchester*. Colonel *Oxburgh*, Mr. *Gascoigne*, *William Paul*, a clergyman, and Mr. *Hall*, who had been a justice of peace, were executed at *Tyburn*. In a word, great numbers were found guilty, of whom some were transported, and others reprieved; some were tried and acquitted; and those who remained untried, had the benefit of the act of indemnity. But the earls of *Mar* and *Linlithgow*, the marquis of *Tullibardine*, and lord *John Drummond*, were attainted by parliament.

Q. What was done in parliament in 1716, besides attainting these noblemen?

A. A bill passed, *May* 7, for discontinuing triennial, and establishing septennial parliaments. Triennial parliaments had subsisted ever since the sixth year of king *William* and queen *Mary*.

Q. What were the detached events of 1715, and 1716?

A. On the 22d of *April* 1715, happened the famous eclipse of the sun, when the stars appeared. About the same

same time died bishop *Burnet*, the marquis of *Wharton*, and the earl of *Halifax*, all of them men of distinguished abilities. The second left a son, who afterwards became a duke, and was a nobleman of great wit and spirit; but having, by his extravagance, impaired his fortune, he first engaged in an opposition to the court, and afterwards espoused the cause of the Pretender. Soon after he retired to *Madrid*, where having, one day as he was riding in a coach, received a letter from his sovereign, commanding his return home, he threw it into the street, without deigning to open it. He died in *Spain*. The close of the year 1715, and the beginning of the next, were remarkable for a most severe frost. The *Thames* was quite froze over, and whole oxen were roasted upon it. On the 21st of *September* 1716, were executed at the end of *Salisbury-court* in *Fleet-street*, five rioters, being part of a mob, who had endeavoured to pull down the mug-house in that court. These mug houses were so called from the vessel in which the liquor was sold. There were several of them in the city and suburbs, and all of them frequented by persons, who had formed themselves into clubs or societies, and were extremely zealous for the *Hanover* succession. His majesty visited his *German* dominions this summer, when a triple alliance was concluded between *Great-Britain*, *France*, and *Holland*. The spirit of disaffection being very prevalent at this period, guards were posted in several parts of the city to prevent the wearing of white roses on the 10th of *June*; and one *Forden*, a printer, was shot in *Newgate-street*, by a foot soldier, for his insolence. *December* 4, above 150 houses were burnt near *Limehouse-bridge*. Two days after, the prince of *Wales*, being at *Drury-lane* play-house, one of the guards, who attended him, was shot with a pistol in the shoulder (though the wound did not prove mortal) by one *Mr. Freeman*, who appeared to be a lunatic. Upon being searched, however, he was found to have two or three other loaded pistols about him, and was suspected of having a design on the prince's life.

Q. What were the most remarkable events of 1717?

A. *England* was threatened with an invasion from *Sweden*; the reason of which was said to be as follows. The

The *Danes* having conquered the dutchies of *Bremen* and *Verden* from the *Swedes*, king *George* had purchased these two provinces from the former. *Charles XII.* of *Sweden*, provoked at this circumstance, resolved to make a descent upon *England*, and by the assistance of the *Jacobites*, to establish the pretender upon the throne of that kingdom. For this purpose, *Baron Gortz*, his favourite minister, and his resident in *Holland*, began to purchase arms, and make other necessary preparations. But the plot being discovered; *Gortz* was seized, at the instance of *Mr. Leatbes*, the *British* envoy at the *Hague*; and, about the same time, count *Gyllen-burg*, the *Swedish* ambassador at the *English* court, was likewise taken into custody. The other foreign ministers at *London* complained of this step, as a manifest breach of the law of nations; but they seemed satisfied, when they were told, that they should soon be informed of the reasons for taking so extraordinary a measure. Soon after, a bill was passed for prohibiting all commerce with *Sweden*; and a squadron of twenty-one *British* ships of the line, besides frigates and fireships, was sent to the *Baltic*, in order to observe the motions of the *Swedes*. The king of *Sweden*; being thus disappointed in his designs, endeavoured to make a peace with his *Britannic* majesty; and this was at last accomplished by the mediation of the duke of *Orleans*, regent of *France*, who, for the greater satisfaction of the *British* court, obliged the pretender to quit *Avignon*, and retire beyond the *Alps*.

Q. What were the chief transactions in parliament this year?

A. A warm debate arose in the House of Commons, in consequence of a message from his majesty, demanding an extraordinary supply, for concluding some alliances, without informing the house of the particulars. Many of the courtiers declared against this method, as being altogether unparliamentary and unprecedented. Several changes were immediately made in the ministry; and at last it was resolved, though only by a majority of four voices, that a sum, not exceeding 250,000 *l.* should be granted to the king, "for enabling him to make good such engagements with other princes and states, as might prevent the present danger from *Sweden*, &c." The earl of *Oxford*, who had

now remained a prisoner almost two years in the *Tower*, hearing of the divisions which prevailed among the ministry, resolved to take advantage of that favourable circumstance. With this view he petitioned for his trial; and a day was accordingly appointed for the purpose. On the 24th of *June*, 1717, he was brought, by water, to *Westminster-hall*, where earl *Coxeter* presided as lord high-steward on the occasion. A violent dispute arose between the two houses with regard to their respective privileges. The Commons refused to carry on the prosecution: the lords determined to proceed with the trial. The earl of *Oxford's* accusers were summoned to come forth; but no one appeared. His lordship was therefore acquitted by the unanimous consent of his peers. Nevertheless, at the request of the House of Commons, he was excepted out of the act of indemnity, together with *Simon*, lord *Harcourt*, *Matthew Prior*, *Thomas Harley*, *Arthur Moore*, and a few others. The duke of *Ormond* and lord *Bolingbroke* had already been attainted. In the course of this session Mr. *Schippen*, a member of parliament, was committed to the *Tower*, for saying, "that the second paragraph in his majesty's speech seemed rather calculated for the meridian of *Germany* than of *Great-Britain*; and that it was a great misfortune that the king was a stranger to our language and constitutions."

Q. What passed in the convocation?

A. The lower house drew up, by their committee, a representation against certain tenets advanced by Dr. *Benjamin Hoadley*, bishop of *Bangor*, in a work of his, intitled, *A Preservative against the Principles and Practices of the Nonjurors*; and in a sermon, preached before the king, intitled, *The Nature of the Kingdom of Christ, shewing it not to be of this World*. The dispute was carried on with great vehemence both within and without doors; in print, as well as in conversation. The committee censured both these works; but his majesty, in order to allay the animosity of the parties, prorogued the convocation. The meeting of the convocation has been put off ever since by successive prorogations; nor has it ever been allowed to sit to do any business.

Q. What were the detached events of this year?



A. Some drummers, belonging to the guards, were imprisoned in the *Marshalsea*, for beating a point of war before the earl of *Oxford's* house, and congratulating him upon the recovery of his liberty. On the 2d of *November* the princess of *Wales* was delivered of a prince, who was christened by the name of *George-William*, but died in the month of *February* following. The choosing of sponsors at the baptism of this prince occasioned a misunderstanding between the king and the prince of *Wales*; in consequence of which, the latter was ordered to depart from *St. James's*. Accordingly his royal highness, and his consort, went and resided at the earl of *Grantham's* in *Arlington-Street*, and afterwards removed to *Leicester-House*; but the children continued at *St. James's*. During the divisions in the royal family, the persons in the service of the king, and those in that of the prince, were not suffered to visit each other. His majesty afterwards, whenever he went abroad, intrusted the government in the hands of a regency. This year the sinking-fund was established, and guineas were reduced to twenty-one shillings. The earl of *Peterborough* was seized at *Bologna*, upon a groundless suspicion of his having come thither with a design against the life of the pretender; but he was soon set at liberty; and received satisfaction for this insult upon his honour.

Q. What happened in 1718?

A. In *April*, earl *Cowper* resigned the great-seal, which was given to *Thomas*, lord *Parker*, afterwards earl of *Macclesfield*. About the same time, several other changes were made in the ministry. On the 22d of *June*, was signed, at *London*, the quadruple alliance, between the emperor, *Great-Britain*, *France*, and *Holland*. The design of this treaty was to re-establish the tranquillity of *Europe*, which had been disturbed last year by the king of *Spain's* invading the island of *Sardinia*. A little before this, another convention had been made between his *Britannic* majesty and the regent of *France*, for settling the terms of peace between the emperor and the king of *Spain*, as also between the emperor and the king of *Sicily* (duke of *Savoy*) afterwards king of *Sardinia*. Mean while the *Spaniards*, having fitted out a strong armament for the conquest of *Sicily*, made a descent in *July* upon that island, and soon reduced

reduced a great number of places; but while they were employed in the siege of *Messina*, the capital of the island, the *British* fleet, under Sir *George Byng*, attacking that of *Spain* off cape *Passaro*, July 31, obtained over it a complete victory. In a little time after, the king of *Sicily* acceded to the quadruple alliance. The *Spaniards* complained loudly of this breach of faith (as they called it) in the *British* court; but it was retorted upon them, that, by the invasion of *Sicily*, they themselves had violated the treaty of *Utrecht*, of which *England* was one of the guarantees. On the 16th of *December*, war was declared against *Spain*.

Q. What were the more private incidents of this year?

A. On the 17th of *March* was hanged at *Tyburn*, for the murder of his footman, the marquis de *Paleotti*, an *Italian* nobleman, and brother to the dutchess of *Shrewsbury*. Great intercession was made for him; but his character was so extremely bad, that the king refused to grant him a pardon. At the same place, and on the same day, suffered, for high-treason, one *James Shepberd*, a coach-maker's apprentice. This fanatic, who was but eighteen years of age, had formed a design to assassinate the king; which, in a letter to *Mr. Leake*, a nonjuring clergyman, he called "Smiting the usurper in his palace." *Mr. Leake* informed against him; and he was immediately seized, and condemned to death. So obstinate were his prejudices, that he triumphed in his sufferings. *Mt. Edward Byffe*, rector of *Portbury* in *Somersetsbire*, was sentenced, by the court of *King's-Bench*, to be twice pilloried, to pay a fine of 600 *l.* to be imprisoned four years, and to find sureties for his good behaviour during life. He had insolently affirmed, "that king *George* was an usurper; and that we had had neither king, parliament, nor laws, these thirty years."

Q. What were the principal occurrences of 1719?

A. In the course of this session the occasional conformity and schism bills were repealed; and great debates arose concerning the bill for limiting the peerage. This bill was begun in the House of Lords. The purport of it was, that the number of *English* peers should not be enlarged beyond six above the present number; and that, instead of the sixteen elective *Scottish* peers, twenty-five should be made

made hereditary. The scheme, however, proved abortive. A bill was passed for prohibiting the wearing of printed, painted, or stained calicoes, &c. This bill was owing to the disturbances that were raised by the journeymen-weavers in *London*, who, being reduced to great straits, for want of employment, tore off the calicoe-cloaths from the backs of the women. The parliament gave his majesty the strongest assurances of support and assistance against all the attempts of his foreign and domestic enemies. A plan had been formed by cardinal *Alberoni*, the king of *Spain's* prime-minister, for an invasion of *England*, in favour of the pretender, who coming to *Madrid*, *March* 26, in one of his catholic majesty's coaches, and attended by his life-guards, was received with all the honours that are usually paid to a crowned head. The public funds fell seven or eight *per cent.* on this occasion. In order to guard against the impending danger, a fleet was equipped, and troops were commanded to march to the western parts of *England*, where it was thought most likely the enemy would endeavour to land. Forces were likewise sent for from *Ireland* and *Holland*; and the regent of *France*, and the governor of the *Austrian Netherlands*, caused troops to be kept in readiness, agreeable to treaty, to maintain the protestant succession. These preparations, however prudent, were altogether unnecessary. The *Spanish* fleet, consisting of ten men of war, and about fifty transports, having 6000 regular troops on board, under the command of the duke of *Ormond*, was totally dispersed by a violent storm near *Cape-Finisterre*. The marquis of *Tullibardine*, indeed, with the earls of *Seaforth* and *Mareschal*, and about 300 men, landed in *April* in *Scotland*, and assembled about 2000 *Highlanders*. They made themselves masters of *Donan-Castle*; but were soon dispossessed of it by captain *Boyle*; and general *Wightman*, coming up, drove them first from the pass of *Glenshiel*, then from that of *Strachel*; and chasing them briskly from rock to rock, obliged the rebels at last to disperse. The *Spaniards* surrendered themselves prisoners of war. *Tullibardine*, *Mareschal*, and *Seaforth*, retired to the *Orkney Isles*, from whence they escaped to *France*. In the month of *October* lord *Cobham* and admiral *Mighels* took the city of *Vigo*; an acquisition, indeed, of every little importance. On the

the 6th of *November*, one *John Mathews*, a printer, in *Little-Britain*, a youth of about eighteen years of age, was executed for printing and publishing a treasonable libel, intitled, *Vox Populi, Vox Dei*. The author of this pamphlet asserted, that the majority of the people being for a change of government, it was just to attempt it, even upon Whig-principles. This year the king visited his *German* dominions, and had an interview at *Hanover* with his *Prussian* majesty. During his stay abroad, he exerted himself, with equal zeal and success, in favour of the protestants of *Poland*, *Litvania*, and the *Palatinate*. About the same time, the *Pretender* married a daughter of prince *Sobieski*, eldest son of *John Sobieski*, king of *Poland*.

2. What happened in 1720?

A. The most remarkable transaction of this year, and indeed of this whole reign, was the famous affair of the *South-sea* scheme; the nature of which was as follows. A plan had been formed for paying off the national debt, by reducing all the public funds into one. The bank of *England* and the *South-sea* company delivered in their several proposals to the government, for effecting this purpose. The two companies endeavoured to outbid each other; but, at last, the offers of the *South-sea* company were accepted. A bill accordingly was passed in their favour; and, in the month of *April*, it received the royal assent. Upon this *South-sea* stock rose surprisngly, and the number of buyers increased every day. *Exchange Alley* was filled with a confused crowd of statesmen and mechanics, clergymen and officers, churchmen and dissenters, whigs, tories, physicians, lawyers, and even multitudes of females. All other professions and employments were utterly neglected; and the people's attention wholly engrossed by this and other chimerical schemes, which were known by the appellation of *Bubbles*. New companies started up every day, under the direction of some of the prime nobility. The prince of *Wales* was declared governor of the *Welch* copper company; the duke of *Chandos* was placed at the head of the *York* building company: the duke of *Bridgewater* formed a third, for building houses in *London* and *Westminster*. About an hundred such schemes were projected and set on foot, to the ruin of infinite numbers of families. They were afterwards, indeed, suppressed

suppressed by proclamation; but little regard was paid to this prohibition. The nation was so transported with the spirit of adventure, that people become a prey to the most impudent impostors. An obscure projector, pretending to have formed a very advantageous scheme, which, however, he did not think proper to explain, published proposals for a subscription, in which he promised, that, in one month, the particulars of his project should be disclosed. In the mean time, he declared, that every person, upon paying two guineas by way of earnest, should be intitled to the annual sum of one hundred pounds for every hundred which he chose to subscribe. In one forenoon, this undertaker received a thousand of these subscriptions; and, in the evening, set out for another kingdom, leaving the subscribers to carry on the project, in the best manner they could. The enthusiasm of the public was carried to such a height, that *South-sea* stock, after rising gradually from 100 to 890, advanced, in *June*, to 1000. This project seems to have been borrowed from the famous *Mississippi*-scheme in *France*, invented by Mr. *John Law*, a *Scotchman*; and it was attended at last with the same fatal effects. About the end of *August*, *South-sea* stock began to fall, and sunk, by *Michaelmas* day, to 150. The amazement of the subscribers is hardly to be expressed. Nothing was now heard but the ravings of grief, disappointment, and despair. Public credit received a terrible shock: the nation was thrown into a dangerous ferment: successive expresses were dispatched to *Hanover*, representing to the king the state of affairs, and earnestly pressing him to hasten his return. He accordingly shortened his intended stay in *Germany*, and arrived in *England*, *November* 11. It is computed that, by all these iniquitous schemes, the people were robbed of near a million and a half sterling. Nor were they only prejudicial to public and private credit: they likewise tended greatly to corrupt the morals of the nation; for, at this time, there were several blasphemous assemblies, called *Hell-fire* clubs, for the suppressing of which, an order of council was published.

Q. What was done in 1721?

A. The affairs of the *South sea* company were of too interesting a nature, to leave room, in parliament, for almost any other transaction. A motion being made, that the direc-

tors, &c. should immediately lay an account of their proceedings before the house of commons, a committee of thirteen persons was appointed to enquire into all matters relating to the *South-sea* act. Several persons were examined by this committee; and, among the rest, Mr. *Robert Knight*, the company's treasurer, and Sir *John Blunt*, the original projector of this wicked scheme. *Knight* thought proper to retire out of the kingdom, and carried off with him the famous green book, containing the company's secrets; and, though a reward of 2000 l. was offered for seizing him, he could never be apprehended. He lived afterwards in great splendour in *France*; and, being pardoned about twenty-three years after, was, for a paurtry sum of money, suffered to return to his native country, where he died. His son was even created a peer by title of baron *Luxborough*, in the kingdom of *Ireland*. Notwithstanding the loss of the green book, the committee informed the house of commons, "that they had already discovered a train of the deepest  
 "villainy and fraud, that hell ever contrived to ruin a na-  
 "tion, which, in due time they would lay before the  
 "house; and that, in the mean while, in order to enable  
 "them to make farther discoveries, they judged it highly  
 "necessary to secure the persons of some of the principal  
 "directors, as well as to seize their papers." In consequence of this report, *John Aislaby*, Esq; chancellor of the exchequer, and Sir *George Caswell*, were expelled the house, and imprisoned in the *Tower*; and, in the month of *July*, an act was passed, "to restrain the  
 "sub-governor, directors, &c. of the *South-sea* company,  
 "from going out of the kingdom for one year; for disco-  
 "vering their effects, and for incapacitating them from  
 "holding any office or place of trust, under his majesty,  
 "&c." The parliament applied to the relief of the sufferers, the estates of the deputy-governor, directors, &c. allowing only to each such part of them as was judged proper. Those, who were supposed to be the most innocent, had the largest allowance. Sir *Theodore Janssen*, in particular, had 50,000 l. His estate was valued at 243,244 l. A little before this, many hundreds of the proprietors of the short annuities, &c. came, in a riotous manner, to the door of  
 the

the house of commons, to demand justice. The house was alarmed; the justices and constables were ordered to attend, and protect the members; and the proclamation against riots was twice read: upon which the petitioners dispersed, crying out aloud, "that they first picked their pockets, and then threatened to send them to jail for complaining." On the 10th of *August*, the bill passed for restoring the public credit, which was chiefly done by means of a scheme proposed by *Robert Walpole*, Esq; for ingrafting nine millions of the *South sea* stock into the bank of *England*, and the like sum into the *East-India* company, on certain conditions. Then the parliament was prorogued, and soon after dissolved; and Mr. *Walpole*, as a reward of his services in this intricate and important affair, was again brought into full favour, was appointed chancellor of the exchequer, and first commissioner of the treasury, was afterwards created knight of the bath and of the garter, and continued prime minister during the remainder of this reign, and the first fifteen years of the next, when being obliged to resign, he obtained the title of earl of *Orford*. On the 15th of *April*, the princess of *Wales* was delivered of a prince, who was christened by the name of *William Augustus*, the late duke of *Cumberland*. About a twelvemonth before this, a reconciliation had been effected in the royal family, chiefly by the mediation of the duke of *Devonshire* and Mr. *Walpole*. The prince was allowed his guards as usual, and they accordingly mounted at *Leicester-house*. This year the practice of inoculation for the small pox was introduced into *England* from *Turky*, and the experiment was tried, with success, on seven criminals in *Newgate*. About the same time, the peace of the north was restored by the conclusion of a treaty between *Russia* and *Sweden*.

Q. What were the principal transactions of 1722?

A. About 300 *British* subjects, who had been slaves in *Morocco*, were redeemed. Upon their arrival at *London*, they marched in procession through the city to *St. Paul's*, to return thanks to heaven for their deliverance; and afterwards to *St. James's*, to thank the king for his interposition in their favour. His majesty gave them a bounty of 500 *l.* the prince of 150 *l.* A dreadful plague having broke out at *Marseilles*, a proclamation was published, forbidding any person to come

into *England*, from any part of *France*, between the bay of *Biscay* and *Dunkirk*, without certificates of health. On the 16th of *June* died the great duke of *Marlborough*, one of the most accomplished generals that ever lived. His body was interred with vast funeral pomp in *Westminster Abbey*. By his consort, *Sarah*, daughter to *Richard Jennings*, Esq; in the county of *Hertford*, he had one son, named *John*, who died at *Cambridge*, in 1703; and four daughters. On the 28th of *August*, there happened, at *Port-Royal* in *Jamaica*, a most dreadful hurricane, which did infinite damage to the town and shipping. This summer his majesty, accompanied by the prince of *Wales*, made a progress through the western counties. He gave 2000 l. to the poor of *Salisbury*, and 500 l. to the workmen at *Portsmouth*.

Q. When did the parliament meet this year?

A. *October 9*, this being the first session of the second septennial parliament. The two parties had exerted themselves with great activity in influencing the elections; but the Whigs obtained a considerable majority. The king, in his speech to both houses, told them, that a fresh conspiracy had been formed against his person and government, in favour of the pretender; upon which the *habeas corpus* act was suspended; the earl of *Orrery*, Dr. *Atterbury*, bishop of *Rockester*, the lords *North* and *Grey*, and the duke of *Norfolk*, were committed to the *Tower* for high-treason. Soon after, Dr. *Friend*, *John Plunket*, *George Kelly*, *Dennis Kelly*, and *Christopher Layer*, a counsellor at law, were likewise seized and imprisoned. All these, bishop *Atterbury*, *Layer*, *Plunket*, and *George Kelly*, excepted, were admitted to bail, and discharged. In the mean time, *Stephen Neynoe*, a clergyman, one of the chief evidences against the prisoners, was drowned in the *Thames*, upon his endeavouring to escape out of the messenger's house.

Q. What became of the conspirators?

A. *Bishop Atterbury* was condemned to perpetual banishment; *George Kelly* and *Plunket* to be imprisoned for life; *Layer* to be hanged, drawn, and quartered; and this punishment he accordingly suffered at *Tyburn*, *May 17*, 1723, his head being fixed up at *Temple-bar*.

Q. What farther discoveries were made with regard to this conspiracy?

A. The



A. The committee appointed to enquire into the plot, reported it as their opinion, that several persons of distinction at home, in conjunction with traitors abroad, had formed a design for placing the pretender upon the throne of these kingdoms: that, for effecting this purpose, a body of foreign forces was to have been brought into the kingdom at the time of the late elections; but this project not succeeding, the conspirators resolved to make the attempt when his majesty, it was supposed, would be absent in *Hanover*: that this scheme being likewise disappointed, by the king's putting off his journey, by the forming of a camp at *London*, by sending for troops from *Ireland* and *Holland*, and by the duke of *Ormond's* being hindered from coming over; the plotters determined to accomplish their wicked purposes by tampering with the officers and soldiers of the army, and endeavouring to debauch them from their allegiance to his majesty.

Q. What were the other incidents of 1723?

A. In the month of *February*, the *black act* was passed, for preventing the practices of certain persons, who used to go armed and disguised, with their faces blackened, into several forests, where they killed vast quantities of deer, and committed other outrages. This crime was made capital. A lottery had been established at *Harburgh*, in his majesty's *German* dominions, for opening a trade for the woollen manufacture between *Great-Britain* and *Germany*. This lottery was now declared by the commons to be an infamous and scandalous undertaking. On the 22d of *February* was born the princess *Mary*, afterwards married to the prince of *Hesse*. An act passed for suppressing the pretended privileges of that scandalous place, the *Mint*, in *Southwark*, where great numbers of debtors had taken sanctuary. The earl of *Harold*, only son to the duke of *Kent*, was killed by the beards of an ear of barley sticking in his throat. This year died the duke of *Orleans*, regent of *France*. About the same time the Protestants in that kingdom were exposed to a severe persecution. Many of the preachers were hanged, and their hearers sent to the gallies. On the 12th of *September*, about seven miles from *Calais*, four *Englishmen* were murdered by robbers, two of whom were afterwards apprehended and broke upon the wheel. *Wood's* half-

pence raised great disturbances in *Ireland*; and lord *Bolingbroke*, having obtained a pardon, returned to his native country.

Q. What was done in 1724?

A. Foreign ministers, peers, and members of parliament, were deprived of the privilege of granting written protections. Peers, however, have still a power of protecting their own servants. The sum of 1,407,280 l. was raised by the sale of the forfeited estates of the late *South-sea* directors, and 62,236 l. by that of the forfeited estates in *Scotland*. In *May*, the king instituted a professorship for the modern languages in both universities. Mr. *Harris* was nominated for that of *Cambridge*, Mr. *Gregory* for that of *Oxford*. Each of them had a salary of 400 l. per annum. They were obliged to maintain two teachers in either university, where twenty pupils in each were to be instructed gratis. The establishment of the army was fixed at 18264 effective men. The land-tax was two shillings in the pound. The 21st of *May* died, *Robert Harley*, earl of *Oxford* and earl *Mortimer*; as did likewise the 15th of the next month, the noted Dr. *Sacheverel*. *November* 16, was executed, at *Tyburn*, *John Shepherd*, a notorious felon, who had several times broke out of *Newgate*, in a most surprizing manner. *December* 5 was born the princess *Louisa*, late queen of *Denmark*. This year *Philip V.* king of *Spain*, resigned his crown, which, however, he afterwards resumed upon the death of his son.

Q. What were the principal occurrences of 1725?

A. The trial of *Thomas*, earl of *Macclesfield*, lord high-chancellor of *Great-Britain*, and the reversal of the attainder of the lord viscount *Bolingbroke*. The lord chancellor resigned the great-seal in the beginning of *January*, and was afterwards impeached of high crimes and misdemeanours, for receiving exorbitant sums from certain persons admitted masters in chancery, and admitting others of small substance; in consequence of which, the effects of several suitors in that court had been greatly embezzled. The earl being tried by his peers, *May* 6, was found guilty, sentenced to pay a fine of 30,000 l. and be imprisoned in the *Tower*, till he should pay that sum; which having done about six weeks after, he was discharged from his confinement. The abuses,  
for

for which lord *Macclesfield* was tried, had long prevailed in the court of chancery, but had never been carried to so enormous a height as under his lordship. He was succeeded in the office of chancellor by lord *King*. May 31, the execution of the law was suspended with respect to lord *Bolingbroke's* forfeitures, as the king's pardon had suspended it with respect to his life. This year his majesty revived the ancient and honourable order of knights of the bath. The duke of *Montague* was appointed grand-master; and prince *William* received the ribbon of the order. The whole number, including the sovereign, was thirty-eight. The ceremony of the installation was performed, June 17, with great solemnity in *Westminster-Abbey*. About this time, the levying the malt-tax caused great disturbances in *Scotland*; particularly at *Glasgow*, where several of the rioters were killed: the clans in the *HIGHLANDS* were disarmed by Gen. *Wade*. In *June*, the king set out for his *German* dominions, and returned to *England* the 9th of *January* following, when he met with a most stormy passage. A young savage, bred in the woods of *Hanover*, who used to walk on his hands and feet like a brute, was presented to his majesty. The *Ostend* company, established under the emperor, gave great offence to the *English* and *Dutch*; and produced the treaty of *Hanover*, or defensive alliance, concluded *September* 3, between the kings of *Great Britain*, *France*, and *Prussia*. This treaty was designed as a counterpoise to that of *Vienna*, concluded between the imperial and *Spanish* courts.

Q. When did the parliament meet in 1726?

A. On the 20th of *January*, when his majesty, after making a speech to both houses, laid before them the treaties of *Vienna* and *Hanover*. Violent debates arose concerning the latter treaty. The anti-courtiers alledged, that it would involve *Great Britain* in a war, merely for the defence of his majesty's *German* dominions, contrary to the act of settlement. But to this it was answered, that the true meaning of that act was not totally to deprive *Hanover* of all assistance from the *British* nation; for, in that case, his majesty, as elector of *Hanover*, would be in a worse condition after his accession to the throne of *Great Britain*, than he had been before it; but only to restrain him from engaging this nation in a war, to support his foreign dominions without

the consent of his parliament, whose business it was to determine whether such a war was necessary or not. A motion was therefore made to thank the king for communicating the treaty of *Hanover* to his parliament; and to assure him, that they would effectually support his majesty, in case any of his dominions, not belonging to the *British* crown, should be attacked. This motion was carried in the affirmative, by a majority of 285 against 107; and the lords presented an address to the same purpose.

Q. What were the other transactions of this year?

A. The czar of *Muscovy* dying the 28th of *January*, was succeeded by his consort, the empress *Catharine*. This princess was strongly suspected of having formed a design to dethrone the king of *Sweden*, as also to make some attempt in favour of the pretender. The courts of *Vienna* and *Madrid* too were supposed to have concurred in this latter project. In order, therefore, to prevent the execution of these schemes, three squadrons were fitted out in *England*: one, to overawe the *Russians*; another, to alarm the coasts of *Spain*; and a third, to block up the plate-fleet in the *West-Indies*. The command of the first was given to Sir *Charles Wager*; the conduct of the second to Sir *John Jennings*; and that of the third to admiral *Hofier*. Sir *Charles* sailed first to *Copenhagen*, where he was most graciously received by the king of *Denmark*. He afterwards proceeded to *Stockholm*, where he met with a like favourable reception from his *Swedish* majesty. He then directed his course to the island of *Nargen*, about three leagues from *Revel*, whence he dispatched an expostulatory letter from his master to the Czarina, in which his majesty told her, that he was fully apprized of the designs she had formed, and had sent a fleet into those seas, in order to prevent her from carrying them into execution. The empress, finding her schemes disconcerted, affected to disavow her intentions; and Sir *Charles Wager*, having remained near *Revel* till the month of *October*, returned with his squadron to *England*. The other two admirals executed their commission with the same vigour and success.

Q. What happened in 1727?

A. The parliament assembling on the 17th of *January*, his majesty, in his speech to both houses, observed, that the sudden and unaccountable conjunction between the emperor

and

and the king of *Spain* threatened the general liberties of *Europe*: that these two powers had formed a design to place the pretender upon the throne of this kingdom; and that the latter, in particular, had drawn together a great number of troops in the neighbourhood of *Gibraltar*, as if he intended to besiege that fortress; but that, it was his opinion, this armament was made merely with a design to amuse the world, and to disguise the projected invasion in favour of the pretender. Addresses of thanks were presented by both houses, who promised to support his majesty with the utmost vigour against all his enemies, whether foreign or domestic. Twenty thousand sailors were voted for the service of the year; the army was augmented to 26,383 men; and the land-tax was raised to four shillings in the pound.

Q. What effect had these vigorous measures upon the courts of *Vienna* and *Madrid*?

A. The emperor pretended to take so much offence at certain expressions, in his majesty's speech, that he ordered count *Palm*, his minister at *London*, to present a bold memorial to the king on that subject; and this, with a letter still more insolent from count *Zinzendorff* to the said count *Palm*, being afterwards published, his majesty was so highly provoked, that he refused to acknowledge count *Palm* any longer as a public minister, and commanded him immediately to leave the kingdom. The two houses likewise joined in an address to his majesty, expressing their indignation at the affront that had been offered him; and assuring him, in the most solemn manner, that this audacious method of appealing to the people from their sovereign, and turning a memorial into a seditious libel, was a proceeding that excited in them the utmost abhorrence and detestation.

Q. What else was done in parliament this session?

A. While the commons were employed in debating on the malt-bill, a motion was made by the secretary of the treasury, that a clause of appropriation should be received, empowering the king to apply such sums as should be found necessary for defraying all the expences and engagements, that had been, or should be contracted before the 25th of *December* next; in concerting such measures, as might best

secure the trade and navigation of this kingdom, and preserve the general tranquillity of *Europe*. In support of this motion, it was alledged, that his majesty was so unwilling to put his subjects to any extraordinary expence, that he had demanded no more than was absolutely necessary for the current service of the year: but, in the present posture of affairs, some unforeseen accidents might happen, that might require a farther expence, for which no estimate could now be given in; the rather, as certain treaties, which his majesty had begun to negotiate, were not yet compleated. To this it was answered, that this method of asking and granting supplies, without an estimate, was unparliamentary; that if any unexpected emergency should require a farther supply, such supply might be granted in the usual manner, with less inconvenience, and with less danger of misapplication, than by such a delegation of an almost dictatorial authority to the ministers; that such unlimited power ought never to be given in a free government, except upon occasions of evident necessity, and when the very being of the commonwealth was in danger; that the departing from the common forms would insensibly render parliaments useles, and would tend, in time, to lodge in the crown, and in the ministers, an absolute power of raising money upon the people, which, by our wise constitution, is, and with safety can only be, lodged in the whole legislature. The motion, however, was carried by 225 voices against 109.

2. When was this session of parliament finished?

A. *May* 15, when his majesty, after giving the royal assent to several bills, made a speech to both houses, in which he informed them, that *Gibraltar* was besieged; that the crown of *Sweden* had acceded to the treaty of *Hanover*; and that a convention was actually signed between *Great-Britain*, *France*, and *Denmark*. In order to support *Sweden* in her new alliance, a *British* fleet was sent into the *Baltick*, under the command of Sir *John Norris*; and the czarina dying on the 17th of *May*, an end was put to all the warlike preparations of the *Russians*. The jealousy between the *British* and the *Spanish* courts was about this time considerably heightened, by the later's seizing the duke de *Ripperda*, late prime-minister of *Spain*, who, upon his being

ing disgraced, had taken refuge in the *British* ambassador's house at *Madrid*. Though *Gibraltar* was vigorously besieged by an army of 20,000 men; yet the garrison, headed by their governor, the old earl of *Portmore*, made so gallant a defence, that they set the enemy at defiance; and the siege was raised by an amicable treaty, the preliminaries of which were signed at *Madrid*, about eight months after the king's death. *March* 20, died that great mathematician and natural philosopher Sir *Isaac Newton*, the glory of his age and nation. He was master of the *Mint*, and president of the Royal Society.

Q. What happened after this?

A. As the king had not visited his *German* dominions for upwards of two years, he resolved to embrace the present opportunity of enjoying that pleasure. Accordingly, having appointed a regency, he embarked at *Greenwich* on *Saturday* the 3<sup>d</sup> of *June* 1727, accompanied by the earl of *Islay* and lord *Townshend*. On the 7<sup>th</sup> he landed at *Vaert* in *Holland*, where he lay that night. Next day he proceeded on his journey to *Hanover*; and, on the 9<sup>th</sup> of *June*, between ten and eleven at night, arrived at *Delden*, in all appearance in perfect health. He supped there very heartily, and eat an orange, but no melon, as was reported; and, having rested very well that night, set out from *Delden* about four next morning. Between eight and nine he ordered the coach to stop, and perceiving, that one of his hands hung motionless, said, "I cannot move this hand." Monsieur *Fabrice*, who sat with him in the coach, rubbed it with both his, but to no effect; upon which he called the surgeon, who followed on horseback, and who rubbed it with spirits. In the mean time, the king's eyes began to stare, his mouth to be distorted, and his tongue to swell, so that he was deprived of the faculty of speech. He was instantly seized with a fit of the palsy; and, though recovered a little by opening a vein, he soon after became lethargic, and was carried, in a state of insensibility, to the palace of his brother the duke of *York*, in *Osnaburg*; where, about one next morning, *June* 11, 1727, he expired in the sixty-eighth year of his age, and the thirteenth of his reign. His body being wrapped in lead, was conveyed to *Hanover*, and interred among his ancestors.

Q. What is the character of this prince ?

A. *George I.* was plain and simple in his person and address ; grave and composed in his deportment, though easy, familiar, and facetious, in his hours of relaxation. He had given a proof of his talents for government, before his arrival in this kingdom. Naturally inclined to justice and equity, though he was absolute and despotic in his hereditary dominions, he ruled them with all the lenity and moderation of a limited monarch. He considered civil and religious liberty as the unalienable right of mankind ; and therefore he indulged it to a people, who pleaded no other claim to it, than the known goodness and humanity of his temper. Possessed of these noble and generous sentiments, though his accession to the *British* throne enlarged his sphere of action, it did not alter his plan of conduct. That was uniformly and invariably the same, both before and after his advancement to that high dignity. In a word, it may be affirmed, that no prince was ever better qualified to sway the sceptre over a free people ; nor any, who ever exercised virtues of a great and good governour with more distinguished ability or more uninterrupted success.

Q. Was king *George I.* ever married ?

A. Yes, to *Sophia Dorothea*, who died *November 2, 1726*, in the castle of *Ahlen*, in the electorate of *Brunswick*, where she had been confined many years. She was daughter and heiress to the duke of *Zell* ; was born in 1666, and married in 1681. She bore to the king one son, named *George*, afterwards *George II.* of *Great-Britain* ; and a daughter, called *Dorothea Sophia*, the late queen dowager of *Prussia*, born in 1687.

Q. Who were the most eminent writers that flourished in *Great-Britain* since the revolution ?

A. *Atterbury*, *Clarke*, and *Whiston*, able divines : *Locke*, well known for his *Essay on Human Understanding* : *Sbaftsbury*, author of an elegant system of moral philosophy : *Cudworth* and *Berkley*, ingenious metaphysicians : *Wallis*, *Halley*, *Flamsteed*, profound mathematicians and astronomers : *Friend* and *Mead*, learned physicians : *Steele* and *Addison* ; the former the author of several comedies ; the latter, of the tragedy of *Cato* ; and both of them distinguished for their excellent papers in the *Spectator*, *Guardian*,



and *Tatler*: *Swift*, noted for his satirical writings, both in poetry and prose: *Congreve*, *Vanburgh*, *Farquhar*, and *Rowe*, dramatic authors; the other most celebrated poets were *Philips*, *Prior*, *Pope*, *Parnel*, *Garth*, and *Gay*. *Bentley* acquired a good share of fame by his criticisms and commentaries, and particularly by his sermons at *Boyle's* lectures. The most remarkable political writers were *Bolingbroke*, *Davenant*, *Hare*, and *Trenchard*.

## C H A P. XLIX.

GEORGE II. L<sup>th</sup> King of England,  
 And Eighth of Great-Britain.

From 1727 to 1760.

<i>Popes.</i>		FERDINAND	1746
BENEDICT XIII.	1723	CHARLES III.	1759
CLEMENT XII.	1730	<i>Kings of Portugal.</i>	
BENEDICT XIV.	1740	JOHN V.	1706
CLEMENT XIII.	1758	JOSEPH	1750
<i>Emperors.</i>		<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
CHARLES VI.	1711	FREDERIC IV.	1699
CHARLES VII.	1740	CHRISTIAN VI.	1730
FRANCIS STEPHEN	1745	FREDERIC V.	1746
<i>King of France.</i>		<i>Kings of Sweden.</i>	
LEWIS XV.	1715	FREDERIC	1720
<i>Kings of Spain.</i>		ADOLPHUS FREDERIC	1758
PHILIP V.	1701		

Q. WHO succeeded king George I?

A. His only son, George II. who ascended the throne in 1727, being then forty-three years of age. The ceremony of the coronation was performed on the 11th of October.

Q. What were the first acts of his reign?

A. On the 14th of June, his majesty declared in council, that he was firmly determined to maintain the religion, laws

laws, and liberties of his kingdom, and to adhere to the alliances, which his father had contracted. The parliament meeting on the 27th of the same month, the Commons unanimously resolved to grant to his majesty the same civil list, *viz.* 700,000 *l.* per annum, which the late king had enjoyed. In a few days after, a provision was made, by parliament, for her majesty, queen *Caroline*, in case of her surviving the king, *viz.* 100,000 *l.* per annum, together with the palace of *Somerset-House*, and the lodge and lands of *Richmond Old-Park*. About the same time, the king was pleased to accept the governorship of the *South-Sea* company. The public business being finished, the parliament was dissolved by proclamation the 7th of *August*, and a new one summoned.

Q. What was done next?

A. His majesty proceeded to settle his ministry, his council, and his household. The duke of *Newcastle*, and lord *Townshend*, were continued secretaries of state. Mr. *Pelham* was appointed secretary of war; the duke of *Rutland*, chancellor of the dutchy of *Lancaster*; lord *Torrington*, first lord of the *Admiralty*; the earl of *Chesterfield*, ambassador to the *States-General*; and lord *Carteret*, lord lieutenant of *Ireland*. Sir *Robert Walpole*, who was in no less favour with the present king than he had been with the late sovereign, retained the office of chancellor of the Exchequer, and first lord of the Treasury; and, by the union of these two great posts in his person, he was considered as prime-minister. The character of this gentleman has been drawn by party-writers, in very different and even opposite colours. His enemies have treated him with the utmost severity; his friends have defended him with no less zeal. The former accuse him of the most barefaced corruption; the latter extol his administration, as worthy of the highest praise. He possessed what is esteemed a competent share of learning for a man of fortune; but cultivated it no farther than as he thought it might be useful to him as a minister. As a speaker in parliament, he was sensible, judicious, and so extremely dispassionate, that nothing could put him out of humour. He answered the most bitter invectives of his enemies with the greatest temper and moderation imaginable. He spoke, perhaps, too frequently and too long for

a person of his distinction ; but this might be owing to his thorough knowledge of business, which none of his friends, he believed, could so well explain. On the Lord-Mayor's-Day, their majesties honoured, with their presence, the entertainment made on that occasion.

Q. What were the transactions of 1728 ?

A. The new parliament meeting on the 23<sup>d</sup> of *January*, the commons chose for their speaker, *Arthur Onslow*, Esq; knight of the shire for *Surrey*, a gentleman of distinguished abilities and incorrigible integrity, grave, eloquent, venerable, and every way qualified for the discharge of that important office; which he continued to enjoy till the 18<sup>th</sup> of *March*, 1761, when he resigned the chair, after having received from the house the most honourable testimony of their satisfaction with his conduct. His majesty, in his speech, expressed his hopes, that he should be able to restore the tranquillity of *Europe*. Loyal and affectionate addresses were presented by both houses. The land forces were fixed at 22,955 men; the number of seamen at 15,000. A subsidy of 230,923 *l.* was granted to the prince of *Hesse-Cassel*; one of 50,000 *l.* to the king of *Sweden*; and 25,000 *l.* to the duke of *Brunswick Wolfembutte*, with whom his majesty had lately concluded a treaty. The whole supply amounted to about four millions. The land-tax was three shillings in the pound. On the 28<sup>th</sup> of *May* his majesty put an end to the session.

Q. What were the other events of this year ?

A. On the 19<sup>th</sup> of *June* a congress was opened at *Soissons* for reconciling the jarring interests of the different princes of *Europe*; but, after long debates, the conferences broke up, without producing any effect. About this time the protestant interest in *Germany* sustained a considerable loss by the death of his royal highness, *Ernest Augustus*, bishop of *Osnaburg*, duke of *York* and *Albany*, and brother to king *George I.* He died on the third of *August*, and was succeeded by the elector of *Cologn*. *December* the 4<sup>th</sup>, his majesty's eldest son, prince *Frederic*, arrived in *England* from *Hanover*, where he had hitherto resided; was introduced into the privy-council, and created prince of *Wales*. Signor *Como*, the duke of *Parma's* resident at *London*, was ordered to quit the kingdom, because his master had invited the pretender

pretender into his dominions, and paid him the honours and distinctions due to the king of *Great-Britain*. The *Spaniards* had long committed the most cruel depredations upon the *British* shipping; and these barbarities they still continued to exercise, particularly in the *West-Indies*, where was an *English* Squadron under the command of vice-admiral *Hofier*. The queen of *Spain*, who expected to recover *Gibraltar* and *Portmahon*, and procure a settlement for her son in *Italy*, seemed cold and indifferent with regard to a pacification with *England*: she had renewed a good understanding with *France*, and now strengthened her interest by a double marriage between the royal houses of *Spain* and *Portugal*.

Q. What happened in 1729?

A. The parliament met the 21st of *January*, when the king made a speech to both houses, in which he seemed desirous of avoiding a war. Warm debates arose in the lower house, with regard to some words in the address to his majesty: the courtiers proposed this expression; "to secure the commerce of the kingdom:" the anti-courtiers insisted on this phrase; "to restore the commerce of the kingdom:" but, after a long dispute, it was carried in favour of the ministry. The government, it was thought, was rather too averse to engage in a war. The depredations of the *Spaniards* in *America* were equally injurious, and disgraceful; and at last inflamed the nation to such a degree, that the merchants of *London*, *Bristol*, and *Liverpool*, presented petitions to parliament on the subject. In consequence of these complaints, the commons addressed the king, humbly beseeching him to use his endeavours to obtain satisfaction to the unhappy sufferers; and his majesty assured them, he would comply with their request.

Q. What else was done in this session of parliament?

A. An enquiry was made by a committee of the lower house (chiefly at the instance of general *Ogletborpe*) into the state of the public gaols; and from this it appeared, that great cruelties had been exercised on the prisoners, particularly on *Sir William Rich*, baronet, who was found in the *Fleet-Prison* loaded with irons, by order of the warden. For these, and the like barbarities, *Thomas Bambridge*, the then acting warden, *John Huggins*, the late one, and several of their accomplices were committed to *Newgate*; and

a bill was brought in, for regulating the *Fleet-Prison*. As the immoderate use of gin or geneva made great havock among the common people, a duty of five shillings per gallon, to the retailer, and twenty shillings *per annum* for a licence to retail it, was imposed upon that commodity. 115000 *l.* were granted to make good the arrears of the civil list; and his majesty was enabled to purchase of the lords proprietors of *Carolina* all their title and interest in that province. The session ended on the 14th of *May*, when his majesty declared his intention of visiting his *German* dominions, and leaving the queen as regent. His design in going to *Germany* was to compromise some differences, that had lately arisen between the regency of *Hanover* and the king of *Prussia*. About this time the duke of *Mecklenburgh* was deposed by the emperor for his cruelty, tyranny, and oppression.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. On the 9th of *November* was concluded at *Seville*, a treaty between their *Britannic*, most Christian, and Catholic majesties. The *British* plenipotentiaries were colonel *Stanhope*, afterwards earl of *Harrington*, (a man of probity and of great political knowledge) and Mr. *Keene*. By this treaty all former conventions between *Great-Britain* and *Spain* were confirmed: 6000 of his catholic majesty's troops were to garrison *Leghorn*, *Porto-Ferraro*, *Parma*, and *Placentia*, in order to secure the succession of the infant *Don Carlos* to these states: every thing relating to the ships and effects, taken by sea on either side, was to be amicably decided by commissaries; and particularly the affair of the ship *Prince Frederic*, and her cargo. Such was the substance of this famous treaty, which, joined to other events that soon after happened, produced a considerable change in the state of affairs in *Europe*.

Q. What were the principal occurrences of 1730?

A. The parliament meeting on the 13th of *January*, his majesty informed them, that he had concluded an absolute peace with *Spain*, and thereby prevented the calamities of war. Great exceptions were made to this treaty both within and without doors; but every question in parliament was carried in favour of the ministry. The emperor was greatly offended at this treaty, and began to make preparations for war; but, as he was in want of money, he set

on foot a negotiation for a loan in *England*, of 400,000 l. This circumstance alarmed the ministry, who imagined, that the money would be employed to disturb the repose of *Great Britain*: they therefore brought in a bill, to prevent the subjects of *England* from lending any money to foreign powers, without the king's licence for that purpose. The establishment of the army was at 17,709 men: the land tax was 2 s. in the pound.

Q. Please to mention the other proceedings of this session.

A. A *pension-bill* was brought in, for disabling persons from sitting in parliament, who enjoyed any place under the government, or received any pension from his majesty. This bill passed the lower house, but was rejected in the upper. The charter of the *East-India* company was renewed and extended to the year 1766, notwithstanding the opposition of several eminent merchants, who endeavoured to lay this branch of trade open. The salt-tax was reduced; and a most excellent law made for the better regulation of juries. The session was finished on the 15th of *May*. Great licentiousness prevailed at this time among all ranks of people, particularly among those of the lower class, who indulged themselves in every kind of wickedness; and, among other methods of injuring their fellow-subjects, circulated incendiary letters, demanding sums of money of certain individuals, on pain of reducing their houses to ashes. This species of villainy had never before been known in *England*. The *Irish* were happy under the government of lord *Carteret*, and exerted themselves, with equal diligence and success, in promoting the trade and manufactures of their country. In the course of this summer, seven *Indian* chiefs were brought over to *England*.

Q. What happened in the other kingdoms of *Europe* this year?

A. The young czar of *Muscovy* died, and was succeeded on the throne by the princess *Anne Ivanowna*. The prince-royal of *Prussia* attempting to escape from his father, was brought back and confined; and *Katt*, his favourite, beheaded. The famous *Victor Amadeus*, king of *Sardinia*, resigned his crown, which he would afterwards have resumed,

fumed, had he not been prevented by his son. The grand signor, *Achmet*, was dethroned and imprisoned; and his nephew, *Mabomet*, substituted in his room. This revolution was effected without the least bloodshed. The insurrection was begun by one *Patrona Alli*, a *Janizary*.

Q. When did the parliament meet in 1731?

A. The 21st of *January*. Violent disputes arose in the lower house this session. The opposition was headed by *Sir William Wyndham*; *Mr. William Pulteney*, afterwards earl of *Batb*; *Mr. Shippen*, *Mr. Hungerford*, and *Mr. Daniel Pulteney*. These gentlemen, not content with opposing the measures of the ministry in parliament, attacked them in pamphlets and periodical writings, particularly in the *Craftsman*, a famous anti-ministerial paper, which appeared about this time. The professed author was one *Amberst*, a man of some wit, but little knowledge; but the principal writers were the lord *Bolingbroke* and *Mr. William Pulteney*, particularly the latter. This gentleman fought a duel, in the green park, with lord *Hervey*, on account of a remarkable political pamphlet. Lord *Hervey* was wounded, and narrowly escaped with his life. This *Latin* tongue was abolished in all law-proceedings, which were ordered for the future to be in *English*. An enquiry was made into the fees of the law-courts, which wanted reformation, it is said, no less than the gaols. The parliament rose in *May*.

Q. What were the other transactions of this year?

A. A treaty, called the second treaty of *Vienna*, was signed *March* 16, between the emperor and his *Britannick* majesty. The States-general afterwards acceded to this treaty, by which the *Ostend*-company was abolished. The king of *Spain* now declared, that he considered himself as no longer bound to observe the articles of the treaty of *Seville*. His subjects therefore renewed their depredations, and the *English* continued to complain of these barbarities. *Sir Charles Wager* sailed with a fleet to *Barcelona*, and from thence to *Leybourn*; and having seen *Don Carlos* quietly settled in *Italy*, he returned to *England* in *December*.

Q. What were the principal incidents of 1732?

A. The

*A.* The parliament met on the 13th of *January*. Violent debates ensued about a standing army, and several other measures. The chief speakers in the opposition were those we have already mentioned. The conduct of the ministry was defended by *Sir Robert Walpole*, *Mr. Horatio Walpole*, *Mr. Henry Pelham*, and others. A bill was passed for reviving the salt-duties. *Sir Robert Sutton* and *Sir Archibald Grant* were expelled the house of commons for some iniquitous practices they had been guilty of, in the affair of the charitable corporation; and serjeant *Birch* and *Dennis Bond* underwent the same punishment, for the embezzlements they had committed in the sale of the *Derwentwater* estate. Some words arising in the house between *Mr. Pelham* and *Mr. Pulteney*, a challenge ensued, when both went out; but a reconciliation was effected by the interposition of the house. The session was finished the 1st of *June*.

*Q.* When did the parliament meet in 1733?

*A.* The 16th of *January*, when his majesty made a speech to both houses. A bill was passed for preventing all trade between the *British* settlements in *America* and the *French* sugar colonies; a trade, which had been long carried on to the great detriment of the *English* sugar-islands. 500,000*l.* were borrowed from the sinking-fund, towards making up the annual supply. The land-tax was reduced to 1*s.* in the pound. 10,000*l.* were granted for supporting the colony of *Georgia*, where a great number of *Saltsburghers*, driven from their native country by persecution, had settled under the conduct of *Gen. Oglethorpe*.

*Q.* What was the most important affair that came before the parliament this session?

*A.* The famous excise-scheme, projected by *Sir Robert Walpole*, for raising the duties on wines and tobacco, and preventing the frauds and abuses that prevailed in the customs, to the prejudice of the fair trader, and the diminution of the revenue. It was brought into the lower house the 14th of *March*, and gave rise to one of the longest and most memorable debates that ever happened in that assembly. The scheme was defended by *Sir Robert Walpole*, *Sir Joseph Jekyll*, and *Sir Philip Yorke*, afterwards earl of *Hardwicke*: it was opposed by *Mr. Alderman Perry*, *Mr. Pulteney*, *Sir William*



*William Wyndham*, *Sir John Barnard*, and others. Petitions were presented against it by the city of *London*, and by almost all the towns and corporations in the kingdom. The house of commons was surrounded by great crowds of people, who insulted the persons, and even endangered the lives, of all who appeared to favour the project; and *Sir Robert Walpole*, in particular, was so eagerly pressed upon by the enraged multitude, that *Mr. Cunningham*, a *Scotch* member, was obliged to draw his sword, in order to keep off the mob. In the course of the debate, *Sir William Wyndham* compared *Sir Robert Walpole* to those rapacious ministers, *Empson* and *Dudley*. *Sir Robert* made a very smart reply, and went so far as to insinuate, that he looked upon the great crowds of people that beset the house as no better than *sturdy beggars*. The nation were wrought up to the highest pitch of resentment: they considered the bill as a prelude to arbitrary power; and, had it passed into a law, it would probably have given occasion to some dangerous insurrection. It was therefore dropped at the second reading. The event was celebrated with public rejoicings; the monument was illuminated; and the minister was burnt in effigy. The session ended the 11th of *June*.

Q. What were the other transactions of this year?

A. The death of *Augustus II.* king of *Poland*, which happened on the first of *February*, gave rise to a new war in *Europe*. The principal competitors for the vacant throne were the elector of *Saxony*, and *Stanislaus*, father-in-law to the *French* monarch. Both of them were successively proclaimed king of *Poland*; but the former, at last, kept possession of the throne. An alliance had been contracted between *France*, *Spain*, and *Sardinia*, for raising *Don Carlos* to the throne of *Naples* and *Sicily*. This alliance was followed by a war between the contracting powers, on the one hand, and the emperor on the other, whose forces were very unsuccessful in several engagements. The *English* and the *Dutch* were equally averse to take any share in this war; and they therefore employed their utmost endeavours to effect a peace between the contending parties.

Q. When did the parliament assemble in 1734?

A. The

*A.* The 17th of *January*; when his majesty made a speech, in which he took notice of the then critical state of affairs in *Europe*. Warm debates were maintained this session about the pacific conduct of the minister, the number of land-forces, the repealing the septennial act, and the place and pension bill, which was again brought in and rejected. Mr. *Pulteney* having reflected, with great severity, on the scandalous decisions of corrupt majorities, Sir *Robert Walpole* took occasion to make a very spirited speech in vindication of the ministry. A law was made, to continue for three years, for preventing the infamous practice of stock-jobbing. The parliament rose on the 16th of *April*. It was soon after dissolved, and writs were issued for electing a new one.

Q. What were the other domestic occurrences of this year?

*A.* Several changes were made in the ministry. The earl of *Chesterfield* resigned his post of steward of the household; the duke of *Bolton* and lord *Cobham* were deprived of their regiments; Mr. *Talbot* was constituted lord chancellor of *Great Britain*; Sir *Philip Yorke*, lord chief justice of the King's Bench; and both of them were honoured with a peerage. On the 14th of *March*, the prince of *Orange* espoused the princess royal of *England*, who had a fortune of 80,000 l. and an annual pension of 5000 l. during her life.

Q. What happened in the other kingdoms of *Europe* this year?

*A.* *Augustus*, elector of *Saxony*, having chased *Stanislaus* out of *Poland*, established himself on the throne of that kingdom. The *French* triumphed in *Germany*, though their general, the duke of *Berwick*, was killed before *Pbilipburgh*. *Don Carlos* defeated the imperialists in the battle of *Parma*, where their general, Count *Merci*, was slain. Soon after, he made himself master of the whole kingdom of *Naples*, and began to prepare for the invasion of *Sicily*. Neither *France* nor *Spain* looked with a very favourable eye towards *England*. The Pretender's eldest son served with peculiar marks of distinction in the army of *Don Carlos*.

Q. When did the new parliament meet?

*A.* The

A. The 14th of *January*, 1735. The elections had been carried on with great zeal and industry by the two parties; but, notwithstanding the utmost efforts of the opposition, the ministry had gained a considerable majority. The king, in his speech to both houses, told them, that he had undertaken to mediate between the powers at war; had concluded a treaty with the crown of *Denmark*; and that it would be proper for *Great-Britain* to put herself in a posture of defence. 30,000 seamen were voted for the service of the year. The election of the sixteen *Scottish* peers gave rise to a warm debate in the house of lords; the ministry, it was alledged, having exerted an undue influence in that affair. Neither was the treaty with *Denmark* approved without dispute. In the course of this session, the mutiny-bill received a material alteration. As this bill formerly stood, any magistrate had it in his power to throw a poor fellow into a dungeon, if, after receiving the inlusting-money, while, perhaps, he was drunk, he refused to take the oaths, even though he offered to return the money, and to pay all charges. By the bill, as it was now altered, every officer, who inlisted men, was obliged, within a certain number of days, to carry the person inlisted before one of the next justices of the peace, where the man should be at liberty to declare his dissent, and, upon his returning the inlusting money, and paying all expences, he was to be discharged.

Q. What else was done this session?

A. Some members complaining that their letters were opened at the post-office, a committee was appointed to enquire into the matter; and this gave occasion to the discovery of a curious scene. It appeared, that when the commons passed the bill, granting the post-office revenue to *Charles II.* they annexed to it a clause, reserving to themselves the privilege of franking, in the same manner as they enjoy it at present. When this bill was carried to the upper-house, the lords, offended that no such provision was made for them, passed the bill without the clause annexed. This alteration would certainly have occasioned the miscarriage of the bill in the lower house, to which it was sent back, had not the ministry assured the members, that their letters should be permitted to go free from postage. Thus, by

the jealousy, not of the crown, but of the two houses, the members of both were obliged to depend upon the sole will and pleasure of the sovereign, for the privilege of franking, which they meant to have reserved to themselves by an express law. Nevertheless, they have always considered this privilege as their own proper and inherent right, and independent of the royal favour. Secretaries of state, however, have a right to open any letter, in order the better to discover conspiracies. The imprisonment of the magistrates of *Haddington* in *Scotland* made some noise. In the course of the debates, it appeared, that the *Scotch* laws were extremely defective with regard to the liberty of the subject, and that the people in that kingdom had nothing equivalent to the *habeas-corpus* act. The session was finished the 15th of *May*, when his majesty informed the parliament, that he intended to visit his *German* dominions, and to leave the queen regent of the realm.

Q. What was the state of foreign affairs at this time ?

A. A quarrel breaking out between the courts of *Spain* and *Portugal*, Sir *John Norris* sailed with a strong *British* fleet for *Lisbon*, in order to protect the *Portuguese* dominions. In *Italy*, the *French*, *Spaniards*, and *Sardinians*, were triumphant ; and *Don Carlos* was crowned king of *Sicily*. Nevertheless, the famous cardinal *Fleury*, prime minister of *France*, was extremely desirous of peace. Certain preliminary articles were at last settled, importing, that the *French* should restore to the empire all the places they had taken from it ; that the dutchy of *Tuscany*, after the death of the present duke, should be given to the duke of *Lorraine*, which last dutchy should be annexed to the monarchy of *France* ; that *Stanislaus* should resign the crown of *Poland* in favour of *Augustus*, though he should still retain the title of king ; and that *Don Carlos* should be acknowledged king of *Naples* and *Sicily*.

Q. What were the chief transactions of 1736 ?

A. The parliament assembled on the 15th of *January*, when his majesty made a speech to both houses. 15,000 sailors were voted for the service of the current year. The number of land forces was reduced to 17,704. The land-tax was 2 s. in the pound. The national debt at *Christmas*,

mas, 1735, amounted to 47,938,298 *l.* 3 *s.* 3¼ *d.* and many schemes were now proposed for lowering the interest. The treaty of commerce, concluded *December* the 2d, 1734, between his majesty and the czarina was laid before the parliament. Several laws were enacted this session; one, laying a duty on all spirituous liquors, in order to prevent their excessive use: another, to restrain disposition of lands in *mortmain*, or dead-hands; with an exception, however, in favour of the two universities, and the colleges of *Westminster*, *Eton*, and *Winchester*: a third, repealing the old statutes of *England* and *Scotland* against conjuration, witchcraft, and dealing with evil spirits: a fourth, to prevent smuggling in the tea-trade; and a fifth, to prevent bribery and corruption. An attempt was made to procure a law in favour of the quakers, with regard to the payment of tythes; but the bill, after passing the lower house, was rejected in the upper. The session was closed the 20th of *May*, when his majesty told the parliament, that he intended that summer to visit his *German* dominions, and to leave the queen regent of the kingdom.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. On the 27th of *April*, his royal highness, *Frederic*, prince of *Wales*, espoused *Augusta*, sister to the duke of *Saxe-Gotha*. The princess was conducted to *England* by the lord *Delawar*. Addresses of congratulation were presented to their royal highnesses by the lord-mayor and aldermen of *London*, and by the two houses of parliament; when Mr. *George* (now lord) *Littleton*, and Mr. *William* (late secretary) *Pitt* pronounced elegant panegyrics on the prince and his amiable consort. These two young members soon distinguished themselves in the house by their eloquence and superior abilities. In the course of this year a remarkable riot happened at *Edinburgh*, occasioned by the execution of one *Wilson*, a smuggler. *Porteous*, captain of the city-guard, a man of a brutal disposition, and abandoned morals, being provoked at some insult he had received from the populace, commanded his soldiers to fire among the crowd; by which precipitate order several innocent persons were killed. *Porteous* was tried and condemned to death; but obtained a reprieve from the queen, who was then regent. The mob, however, were determined to

execute

execute the sentence. They accordingly rose in a tumultuous manner, forced open the prison doors, dragged forth *Porteous*, and hanging him on a dyer's pole, quietly dispersed to their several habitations. This affair afterwards became the object of a parliamentary enquiry. About this time, *Theodore*, king of *Corfica*, made some noise. This person, whose original title was baron *Stein*, was born near *Cologne* in *Germany*. He now went over to *Corfica*, the inhabitants of which had, in 1730, revolted from their merciless sovereigns, the *Genoese*; and putting himself at the head of the insurgents, he was instantly elected and crowned their king: but failing in his promises of men, money, and ammunition, he lost the confidence of his new subjects, and soon after left the island. His air was majestic; but his parts, though showy, were very superficial.

Q. When did the parliament assemble in 1737?

A. The 1st of *February*, when, his majesty being indisposed, the session was opened by commission. 10,000 men were voted for the sea-service: the land-forces were continued at their former number. A million of money was borrowed from the sinking-fund. An act passed, disabling *Alexander Wilson*, Esq; lord provost of *Edinburgh*, from holding any place of magistracy in *Great-Britain*, and obliging the city to pay 2000*l.* to the widow of captain *Porteous*, for the outrage committed, in putting that gentleman to death. In the lower house, Mr. *Pulteney* made a motion, that 100,000*l.* per annum (instead of 50,000) should be settled upon the prince of *Wales*, in the same manner as upon his royal father, while prince. The motion was rejected; but the attempt gave rise to a great misunderstanding between his majesty and his son. The prince had lately put himself at the head of the opposition, which tended still farther to encrease the king's jealousy. The minister and his friends having been grossly abused in some satirical comedies, a bill was now brought in, for limiting the number of play-houses, and subjecting all dramatical performances, exhibited on the stage, to the inspection of the lord-chamberlain, without a licence from whom no play should be suffered to be acted. This measure was strongly opposed by great numbers in both houses, particularly by the earl of *Chesterfield*, who considered

it as a restraint upon the liberty of the press; but, notwithstanding all their objections, the bill passed, and received the royal assent. The parliament rose the 21st of June.

Q. What were the other transactions of this year?

A. The king instituted a new post of honour, intitled Field-Marshal of the Armies of *Great-Britain*. In the month of *February* died that great and good man, the lord chancellor *Talbot*, and was succeeded on the bench by the lord *Hardwicke*. The republic of *Venice* having shewn great respect to the pretender's eldest son, its resident in *London* was ordered to leave *England* in three days. The difference between the king and prince *Frederic* was considerably heightened by the prince's carrying the princess of *Wales*, then near her time, from *Hampton-Court* (where their majesties resided) to *St. James's*, where, about two hours after her arrival, she was delivered of a daughter, the princess *Augusta*, now princess of *Brunswick*. The king was so provoked at this undutiful behaviour in the prince, that he ordered him, as soon as the princess should have recovered, to quit *St. James's*; and he and his consort accordingly retired to *Kew*. On the 20th of *November* queen *Caroline* died, of a mortification in her bowels, in the 55th year of her age; regretted as a princess of uncommon sagacity, and a pattern of conjugal fidelity and affection. About the same time died the great duke of *Tuscany*, and was succeeded in his duchy by the duke of *Lorrain*, who, on the 1st of *February*, espoused the eldest archduchess of *Austria*. This year was likewise distinguished by the death of prince *Eugene*, who expired at *Vienna* in the seventy-third year of his age, leaving behind him the character of an invincible hero, and a consummate politician.

Q. When was the session opened in 1738?

A. On the 24th of *January*, when both houses proceeded to inquire into the affair of the *Spanish* depredations, which had lately been carried to an intolerable height. Petitions were presented on this subject by the merchants of *London*, and by most of the trading towns and corporations in the kingdom. From these it appeared, that *British* ships had been unlawfully seized on the high-seas, in the direct course of their voyages to and from the *English* colonies; that the ships had been plundered and confiscated; and the sailors

Q

robbed,

robbed, imprisoned, and enslaved, to the very great loss of the merchants; to the obstruction of trade; and to the dishonour of the nation. The debate was carried on with great warmth in both houses. The minister was unwilling to engage in a war: the opposition were eager to push him into that measure. The people exclaimed against the pusillanimity of the government, and were all on fire to revenge the insults they had received from the *Spaniards*. Their resentment too was still farther inflamed by the fate of one *Jenkins*, who was said to have had his ears cut off by the crew of a *Spanish* guarda-costa; and who now appeared at the bar of the lower-house. In the upper, lord *Carteret*, in an excellent speech, demonstrated, that the basis of all *European* commerce in *America* consisted in each nation reserving to itself an exclusive right to trade with its own colonies and plantations; and that therefore no ship, which was not actually in the ports or harbours of *Spain*, could, with any show of equity, be either searched or seized by the *Spaniards*. Both houses addressed his majesty, earnestly beseeching him to exert his utmost endeavours in procuring satisfaction to the injured nation; and the king assured them he would comply with their request. An act passed for building *Westminster-Bridge*; and some farther regulations were made for preventing the abuse of spirituous liquors. The session ended the 20th of *May*; and his majesty, perceiving that there would soon be a necessity for more vigorous measures, sent the brave admiral *Haddock* with a fleet into the *Mediterranean*.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. On the 24th of *May*, the princess of *Wales* was delivered of a prince, who was christened by the name of *George*, now our most gracious sovereign, whom heaven long preserve! A resolution was taken to build the *Mansion-House* for the residence of the lord-mayor. Several eminent personages died this year, particularly the lord *Windsor*; the worthy earl of *Carlisle*; the accomplished lord *Townshend*; the amiable *George Bailey*, of *Ferriby-Wood* in *Scotland*, a lord of the treasury; the excellent Sir *Joseph Jekyll*; and the celebrated Dr. *Boerhaave*. *Haines*, the printer of the *Craftsman*, was seized, tried, fined, and imprisoned. *Comins*, a carpenter, who had been unjustly whipped



at *Gibraltar* by order of general *Sabine*, the governour, now sued that gentleman, and obtained damages to the amount of 700 *l.* Never were the common people more licentious and disorderly. A riot happened at the theatre in the *Hay Market*, where a company of *French* strollers attempted to exhibit a comedy. Great disturbances were excited in the western counties by some journeymen and servants, who committed many outrages. One *Buchanan*, a sailor, who had been condemned for murder, was cut down from the gibbet by his companions, who actually brought him to life, and carried him off in triumph. The act for suppressing gin gave much trouble to the government. The mob rose about *Spittlefields*, *Shoreditch*, &c. and were obliged to be dispersed by the guards. No less than 12,000 persons were convicted of having sold gin illegally. Near half that number were cast in the penalty of 100 *l.* and about 3000 of them paid 10 *l.* each, rather than be committed to the house of correction.

Q. What were the principal events of 1739?

A. The king of *Spain*, intimidated by the vigorous resolutions of the *British* parliament, agreed to certain preliminaries, as the basis of a treaty; and these formed the substance of the famous convention, which afterwards made so much noise. It was concluded at *Pardo* the 14th of *January* of this year, and signed by *B. Keene* and *Sebastian de la Quadra*. By this convention, the plenipotentiaries were to settle the respective pretensions of the two crowns, as well as those of their subjects; and the king of *Spain* was to pay to his *Britannic* majesty 95,000 *l.* sterling, as a balance due to the crown and subjects of *Great-Britain*. In opposition to this sum, however, his Catholic majesty started a claim of 68,000 *l.* which he pretended the *South-Sea* company owed him.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. The 1st of *February*, when his majesty informed them, that he had concluded a convention. This treaty was immediately submitted to the inspection of the commons, and a committee appointed to enquire into its contents. The most material objection to it was, that it left to a future and precarious discussion the most important rights of the *British* traders and subjects, that of navigating their

ships from one part of his majesty's dominions to another, without being subject to search; and, by that means, rendered it questionable, whether they ought to enjoy any such right. Strong exceptions were taken to this clause, and indeed to the whole convention; petitions were presented against it by the *West-India* merchants, by the city of *London*, and by most of the towns and corporations in the kingdom. The people exclaimed against it, as a most shameful agreement: the general cry was, *No search, No search*; and, when a resolution was taken in parliament to approve of the convention, *Sir William Wyndham*, and about sixty other members, retired from the house, and declared their intention of never returning to it more. An act passed, in the month of *May*, for settling 15,000 *l. per ann.* on his royal highness the duke of *Cumberland*; and 24,000 *l. per ann.* on the princesses *Amelia, Caroline, Mary, and Louisa*. 75,583 *l.* were granted to enable his majesty to make good his engagements with the king of *Denmark*, who had promised to keep in readiness, for the service of *Great-Britain*, a body of 6000 men. The parliament likewise gave 5000 *l.* as a reward to *Mrs. Stephens*, on her discovering, for the benefit of the public, a receipt for the cure of persons afflicted with the stone. The session ended the 14th of *June*.

Q. What were the other transactions of this year?

A. The ministry, provoked at the insolence of the *Spaniards*, who now insisted upon the privilege of searching all *British* ships in the *American* seas, resolved to adopt more vigorous measures. They accordingly directed *Mr. Keene*, the *English* envoy at *Madrid*, to inform that court, that, in case his catholic majesty did not immediately fulfil the terms of the convention, reprisals should instantly be made by the *English*; and, in order the more powerfully to second his remonstrances, a large re-inforcement of ships was sent to admiral *Haddock* in the *Mediterranean*.

Q. What effect had these representations?

A. None: upon which letters of marque and reprisal were issued *July* the 10th, against the *Spaniards*, who likewise began to prepare for war. The *French*, it was supposed, would join the enemy; the rather, as they wanted to procure to themselves the assiento-trade, or the privilege of supplying the *Spanish* colonies with slaves, and to carry on

on the trade of *Spain* in *French* bottoms. The *Dutch*, it was imagined, would be so overawed by the near neighbourhood of the *French*, that they would be obliged to remain neuter. Captain *Vernon*, a gentleman of spirit, and a good sea-officer, was appointed vice-admiral of the blue, and sent to annoy the *Spanish* settlements in the *West-Indies*; for which he set sail, *July* the 20th, with nine ships of war and a sloop.

Q. What did the *Spanish* ministry do when they heard of these proceedings?

A. They published a manifesto, importing, that the phrenzy of the people of *England* had forced the government into a war; upon which his *Britannic* majesty published, in his turn, a masterly declaration, explaining, with great accuracy, the unwarrantable conduct of the king of *Spain*, and proclaiming war against that monarch. The *English* had formed a design to seize the *Assogue*-ships; but failed in the attempt. Admiral *Haddock* took the *St. Joseph*, a *Spanish* ship of 800 tons burthen, and valued at 120,000 l. In the month of *November*, admiral *Vernon* reduced, with six ships only, the town and castle of *Porto-Bello*, on the isthmus of *Darien*. Both men and officers behaved with great gallantry on this occasion. The admiral blew up the fortifications with the powder taken from the *Spaniards*; and found more difficulty, it is said, in demolishing those works, than he had experienced in taking them. The news of this victory was joyful; and admiral *Vernon* was extolled as another *Raleigh* or *Drake*. Sir *Robert Walpole* was at this time so extremely unpopular in the city of *London*, that Sir *George Champion*, the senior alderman next the chair, was, merely on account of his attachment to that gentleman, deprived of his turn of being chosen lord-mayor; and Sir *John Salter* advanced in his room. This year Mr. *Whitfield's* followers made their first appearance, under the name of *Methodists*.

Q. When did the parliament meet this winter?

A. *November* the 15th, when the king, in his speech, observed, that he had augmented his forces by sea and land; and complained of the continuance of heats and animosities. The two houses joined in an address to his majesty,

humbly beseeching him, never to admit of any treaty for a peace with *Spain*, except the right of the *English* to navigate the *American* seas, without being visited or searched, should first be acknowledged. The seceding members having now resumed their seats in the lower house, Mr. *Pulteney* undertook to vindicate their conduct. Sir *Robert Walpole* replied, that, if they were returned only to oppose and perplex, he should not be sorry to see them secede again. A bill for registering seamen was brought into the house of commons by Sir *Charles Wager*; but it was rejected, as being of *French* origin. Forty thousand pounds were granted as a portion to the princess *Mary*, who, on the 8th of *May* following, was married to the prince of *Hesse-Cassel*. The land-tax was fixed at 4*s.* in the pound. The whole supply amounted to about 4,000,000*l.* The session was closed the 29th of *April*, 1740.

Q. What were the transactions of 1740?

A. The king of *Spain* having by this time declared war in form against *Great-Britain*, and threatening to invade it with a powerful armament under the command of the duke of *Ormand*, Sir *John Norris* was sent with a strong fleet to burn the *Spanish* ships in their harbours. The design miscarried; but the *Spaniards*, instead of attacking *England*, set sail for the *West-Indies*, having been, a little before, joined by a good number of *French* vessels. The duke of *Cumberland* served as a volunteer on board Sir *John Norris's* fleet. The *French* had not as yet come to an open their conduct, that they would take every opportunity of assisting the *Spaniards*, and distressing the *English*. Both they and the *Dutch* claimed the privilege of carrying *Spanish* property on board of their ships; alledging, as a reason, that *free bottoms make free goods*. Admiral *Vernon*, having complained that he was neglected by the ministry, and boasting, at the same time, that if he was properly supplied, he could perform some exploits of the utmost importance, a resolution was taken to send him a strong reinforcement. Accordingly, on the 31st of *October*, Sir *Cbaloner Ogle* sailed from *England* with twenty-seven ships of the line, besides frigates, fire-ships, transports, &c. having on board about 6000 marines, and detachments from some old regi-

regiments, under the command of lord *Cathcart*, a nobleman of great popularity, and an excellent soldier. His lordship, on his arrival at *Dominica*, was unhappily carried off by a bloody-flux; and his death was supposed to be one of the chief causes of the miscarriage of the expedition. He was succeeded in command by general *Wentworth*, a man of courage, but by no means qualified for such an important office. About the same time, commodore *Anson* set sail with a small squadron of ships for the *South-Sea*, in order to annoy the *Spanish* trade, and co-operate with admiral *Vernon* across the isthmus of *Darien*. The close of the year 1739, and the beginning of 1740, were distinguished by as severe a frost as had ever been known in *England*. The *Thames* was froze over; and was covered with shops and carriages. Fowls and fishes were found frozen to death. Many poor people perished through the extremity of the cold; and, as the price of provisions was excessively high, many more must have perished of hunger, had they not been relieved by the benevolence of the rich, who supplied their wants with the utmost generosity. The *Foundling-Hospital*, which had been erected the preceding year, was now opened.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. It was distinguished by three events, which had a considerable influence upon the state of affairs in *Europe*. The first was the death of his *Prussian* majesty; a prince, by no means amiable, either in his private or public character. He was succeeded on the throne by his eldest son, *Frederick*, the reigning king of that realm, who has rendered himself so famous both as a warrior and legislator. The second was the death of the emperor *Charles VI.* who, agreeable to the pragmatic sanction, was succeeded, in his hereditary dominions, by his eldest daughter, the arch-duchess, *Maria Theresa*, married to the grand duke of *Tuscany*. The young king of *Prussia* was no sooner informed of the emperor's death, than he entered *Silesia* at the head of 30,000 men; and though he declared he had no intention to contravene the pragmatic sanction, he yet made himself master of the greatest part of that province. The third event was the death of the czarina, *Anne Ivanowna*, who named, for her successor, *Ivan* or *John*, son of her niece, the prince of *Mecklenburgh*; but this disposition was soon set aside.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. His majesty, returning from his *German* dominions, where he had passed the summer, opened the session the 18th of *November*. Sir *Robert Walpole* had been always opposed by a numerous party in both houses, who had now acquired such a degree of strength, that they resolved to make a personal attack upon him. Accordingly, on the 11th of *February*, Mr. *Sandys* informed him, that, in two days, he intended to bring a charge against him in public. Sir *Robert* received the intimation with great indifference, and quoted the following passage of *Horace*;

*Nil conscire sibi, nulli pallescere Culpa.*

Mr. *Pulteney*, who sat upon the bench with him, said, that that was false *Latin*. Sir *Robert* wagered a guinea, that it was not; and, a copy of *Horace* being produced, and the words of the author appearing to be

—————*nullâ pallescere Culpâ,*

Mr. *Pulteney* took the guinea, and holding it up, said with a sneer, that it was the only guinea of the public money he had received for several years. Mr. *Sandys* was as good as his word. On the 13th of *February*, he made a motion in the house of Commons, that a humble address should be presented to his majesty, that he would be graciously pleased to remove the right honourable Sir *Robert Walpole* from his majesty's presence and councils for ever. A motion to the same purpose was made in the upper house by the lord *Carteret*. Many arguments were urged both for and against this motion; but, after a long and violent debate, it was rejected by a great majority. Sir *Robert Walpole* himself, during the whole dispute, behaved with uncommon temper and moderation. He was the last that spoke on the subject; and, in the close of his speech, he made use of the following expressions: "Gentlemen have talked a great deal of patriotism; a venerable word, Sir, when rightly understood. But, I am sorry, Sir, to say, that, of late, it has been so much hackneyed about, that it is in danger of falling into disgrace. The very idea of true patriotism is lost; and the term has been prostituted to the very worst of purposes. A patriot, Sir! Why, patriots spring up like mushrooms, I could raise fifty of them within the  
four

four and twenty hours. I have raised many of them, Sir, in one night. It is but refusing to gratify an unreasonable or an insolent demand, and up starts a patriot. I have never been afraid of making patriots, Sir; but I disdain and despise all they can do."—The chief article of the charge against the minister, was the concluding the first treaty of *Hanover*. Several other motions were made this session by the anti-ministerial party; not with a view of having them carried, but merely with a design of rendering the minister unpopular. The parliament rose the 25th of *April*. It was afterwards dissolved by royal proclamation, and writs were issued for electing a new one.

Q. What were the principal events of 1741?

A. By this time, the fleet under Sir *Cbalenor Ogle* had joined admiral *Vernon*; and the combined squadrons now amounted to about 115 ships, with 15,000 sailors, and about 12,000 land forces on board. With this mighty force, the admiral sailed from *Jamaica*, in order to attack *Carthagena*; and, on the 4th of *March*, he cast anchor in *Playa Grande*, to the windward of that town. General *Wentworth*, who commanded the land forces, was a man of courage, but of no great capacity. *Vernon*, though a good officer, was proud, haughty, and imperious, and held the general in the utmost contempt. A mortal antipathy now broke out between these two gentlemen; and to this unhappy circumstance the failure of the expedition was, in a great measure, owing. They took, indeed, the forts *St. Jago*, *St. Philip*, *Bocca-chica*, *St. Joseph*, and *Castillo-grande*; but they were repulsed from fort *St. Lazar* with considerable loss. In these several attacks above 1000 men were killed; and among the rest the colonels *Dauglar* and *Watson*, and the gallant lord *Aubrey Beauclerk*, captain of the prince *Frederic*, and brother to the duke of *St. Alban's*. An enemy more dreadful than the *Spaniards* now began to assail the *English* army. Sicknes raged among them to such a degree, that, according to the account of the general himself, no less than 3,445 men perished in the space of two days. This terrible calamity determined the council of war to return to *Jamaica* with the utmost expedition. Accordingly, the fortifications being entirely demolished, the fleet set sail, and, on the 19th of *May*, arrived in *Porto*.

*Royal*, in that island. Such, to the astonishment of all *Europe*, was the conclusion of an interprize, the greatest that ever had been undertaken in those parts of the world. *Vernon* was afterwards re-inforced with four ships of war, and about 4,000 soldiers; but he performed nothing worthy of his great character; and the public began to suspect, that they had entertained too high an opinion of his abilities. Above 20,000 *British* subjects are supposed to have lost their lives in this fatal expedition.

Q. What were the other transactions of 1741?

A. The queen of *Hungary* was so provoked at his *Prussian* majesty's invasion of *Silesia*, that she formed a design of making a partition of that monarch's dominions between herself and her allies. The king of *England* was accused, but very unjustly, of being concerned in this project. On the other hand, the king of *France* projected a scheme for dismembering the dominions of her *Hungarian* majesty, and raising the elector of *Bavaria* to the imperial throne. Cardinal *Fleury*, indeed, the prime-minister of *France*, would willingly have persevered in his pacific system; but was obliged to yield to the superior influence of the count *de Belleisle*, who recommended warlike measures. This nobleman was extremely popular; and, though now in a mature and advanced age, possessed all the fire and impetuosity of youth. He was brave, open, generous, polite, and insinuating; ingenious in forming his schemes, and rapid in carrying them into execution. He represented to his sovereign, that now was the time for humbling the house of *Austria*, and reducing its power to such a low ebb, that it should never be able to oppose the designs of the *Bourbon* family. In prosecution of this plan, the *French* king sent two large bodies of troops, each consisting of about 40,000 men, into *Germany*; so that the elector of *Bavaria* soon saw himself at the head of an army 70,000 strong. The king of *Prussia*, believing, or affecting to believe, that his *Britannic* majesty was privy to the partition-treaty, entered into a close alliance with *France*. The king of *England*, who was then in *Germany*, earnestly exhorted her *Hungarian* majesty to come to an agreement with the king of *Prussia*; but finding her deaf to all his remonstrances, and hearing, at the same time, that the *Dutch* were re-

solved



solved to remain neuter, he concluded a neutrality for *Hanover*; so that the queen of *Hungary* was left to defend herself by her own force, which was unable to cope with the mighty power of the numerous foes combined against her. Her troops, under count *Neupreg*, were defeated by his *Prussian* majesty at *Molwitz*, with the loss of 4000 men. The elector of *Bavaria* made so rapid a progress, that *Vienna* itself was threatened with a siege; and the queen was obliged to retire, with her eldest son, to *Presburg*, in *Hungary*; where summoning the four orders of the state, and laying her miserable situation before them, they unanimously took an oath to defend their sovereign with their lives and fortunes. Old count *Palsy* marched to the relief of *Vienna* with 30,000 men; count *Khevenbulla* raised a body of 12,000; prince *Lobkowitz*, count *Berenclau*, count *Traun*, and others, exerted themselves strenuously in support of the same cause. The *Austrians* gained a great many advantages. *Thoring*, the *Bavarian* general, was entirely defeated with the loss of 3000 men; but, notwithstanding this circumstance, the elector of *Bavaria* took the city of *Prague*, where he was crowned king of *Bohemia*; and he was, soon after, chosen emperor of *Germany* at *Franckfort on the Maine*.

Q. When did the new parliament assemble?

A. His majesty returning from his *German* dominions in the month of *October*, opened the session the 4th of *December*, when *Arthur Onslow*, Esq; was re-chosen speaker of the Commons. The minister had been extremely negligent with regard to the new elections; and the opposition, taking advantage of this omission, had exerted themselves with so much industry, that they obtained an equality, if not a majority, of voices. The affair of the *Westminster* election was of great advantage to them. A riot having happened upon that occasion, the justices had called in the assistance of the military power; and this circumstance, being soon known over the whole kingdom, inflamed the people highly against the measures of the government. Sir *Robert Walpole*, foreseeing that he should not be able to maintain his superiority in the new parliament, resolved to resign all his places; after having done every thing possible to serve his friends, and to prevent an impeachment by any violent re-

solutions. He continued, therefore, to give his attendance till the 2d of *February*, when the decision of the *Chippenham* election was carried against him by one vote only; and having been treated, in the course of the debate, with great severity, he came out of the house, and in the lobby protested, that he would never enter it more. In this resolution he was the farther confirmed by the steadiness of prince *Frederic*, who was still at the head of the opposition, and declared, that he considered Sir *Robert Walpole* as so great an obstacle between his majesty and his people, that he could agree to no terms till that gentleman was removed. Accordingly, on the 11th of *February*, Sir *Robert* resigned all his places; after having been created by his majesty baron of *Haughton*, viscount *Walpole*, and earl of *Orford*.

Q. What was the consequence of Sir *Robert Walpole's* resignation?

A. The plan of power in the succeeding ministry had been already settled; but this was a secret known to few. The removal of that minister did not alter the measures of government; though there were several changes in the higher employments. Mr. *Sandys* was appointed chancellor of the *Exchequer*; lord *Wilmington*, first lord of the *Treasury*; lord *Harrington*, lord-president; lord *Carteret*, secretary of state; the marquis of *Tweedale*, secretary of state for *Scotland*; the duke of *Argyle*, master of the ordnance, and commander in chief of his majesty's forces; and Mr. *Pulteney* was restored to the dignity of a privy-councillor. Some of the members of the opposition proposed violent measures against the late minister; but Mr. *Pulteney* recommended moderation, saying, *that government was not to be taken by storm*: upon which the duke of *Argyle* threw up all his places, and was succeeded in the command of the army by the earl of *Stair*. The people, enraged at this circumstance, exclaimed, that the nation was betrayed, and Sir *Robert Walpole* screened.

Q. What were the other proceedings of this session?

A. Petitions were presented by the merchants and the city of *London*, complaining of the damage which their trade had sustained from the numerous captures made by the *Spaniards*, amounting in value to above 1,200,000 *l*. sterling; and a bill was passed by the lower house for pre-

venting such losses for the future : but it was rejected by the upper. The same was the fate of the place and pension bill, which was likewise thrown out. A secret committee was appointed, consisting of twenty-one persons, and of which lord *Limeric* was chairman, to enquire into the conduct of affairs during the last ten years. This committee was armed with very extensive powers. They called for all the treasury-books and papers, and carried on their examination with great zeal and industry. They summoned before them Mr. *Paxton*, and Mr. *Scrope*: the former, late solicitor ; the latter, late secretary to the *Treasury*. The first was accused of having given, in 1735, the sum of 500 *l.* to one *Boteler*, to enable him to carry his election for *Wendover*. The last was questioned with regard to 1,052,211 *l.* which, in the space of ten years, had been traced into his and Sir *Robert Walpole's* hands. Both of them refused to give any answer, without his majesty's permission, about the disposal of money issued for secret service. *Paxton* was committed to *Newgate* ; *Scrope* was dismissed without any punishment. *Gwyn Vaughan* too, a confidant of Sir *Robert Walpole*, was examined with respect to a practice, which had been often charged upon that minister, *viz.* his obliging the possessor of a place or office, to pay a certain sum out of the profits of it to some person or other recommended to him by the minister. *Vaughan* begged to be excused answering, and was dismissed from the bar. A bill was next introduced, for indemnifying such persons as should make discoveries concerning the disposal of public monies or offices. It passed the lower house, but was rejected by the upper ; a circumstance, which created a strong suspicion, that a compromise had been made between the late and present ministry ; and that the proofs against Sir *Robert Walpole* had been industriously suppressed. The great charge against that gentleman was, that he had employed corruption at elections. From the papers submitted to the inspection of parliament it appeared, that the powers who were to share his *Prussian* majesty's dominions, were the queen of *Hungary*, *Great-Britain*, *Holland*, *Hanover*, *Muscovy*, and *Saxony* ; though there is not the least reason to think, that ever the king of *England* approved of this project. The supplies of  
this

this year amounted to 5,700,000 *l.* The session ended the 15th of July.

Q. What were the military transactions of 1742?

A. The earl of *Stair* was sent into *Germany*, with 26,334 *English* troops, who, immediately upon their arrival on the continent, were to be joined by an equal number of *Hanoverians*, and 6000 *Hessians*, in *British* pay; but, notwithstanding this vigorous measure, the *Dutch* still continued to adhere to their neutrality. A bloody battle was fought at *Chazlau* between his *Prussian* majesty and prince *Charles*, the *Austrian* general; in which the latter was defeated, with the loss of 3000 men: a peace, however, was at last concluded, under the mediation of his *Britannic* majesty, between the queen of *Hungary* and the king of *Prussia*; by which *Silesia* was yielded to the latter. This peace was signed at *Breslau* on the 11th day of *June*. The *French*, deprived of the assistance of the *Prussians*, were obliged to act upon the defensive. 26,000 of them were besieged in *Prague* by an army of 60,000 *Austrians*, under the command of prince *Charles*; and, after making a long and obstinate defence, marshal *Belleisle*, who commanded them, effected a retreat to *Egra*, without losing a man (according to his own account) except by the severity of the weather. Such was the conclusion of this campaign in *Germany*.

Q. What happened in the other parts of *Europe* this year?

A. The crown of *Spain*, on the demise of the emperor, *Charles VI.* laid claim to all the *Austrian* dominions in *Italy*. To support this claim, the duke of *Montemar*, the *Spanish* general, invaded that country with 15,000 men; and these being soon after joined by a fresh body of *Spaniards*, and by 20,000 *Neapolitans*, composed an army 40,000 strong. To oppose this force, the queen of *Hungary* entered into an alliance with the king of *Sardinia*, a prince of great military talents, who, in consideration of his assisting her *Hungarian* majesty, was to receive a subsidy from *Great-Britain*. At the same time, admiral *Matthews*, who commanded the *British* fleet in the *Mediterranean*, sent commodore *Martin*, with a small squadron of ships, to the coast of *Naples*, with orders to acquaint his *Neapolitan* majesty, that, if he did not immediately withdraw his troops from those of *Spain*, the city of *Naples* should be laid in ashes. This preemptory demand

demand had the desired effect. The *Neapolitan* forces were instantly recalled; and the *Spaniards*, deprived of their assistance, were able to undertake no enterprize of importance.

Q. What passed in *America*?

A. Admiral *Vernon*, who still remained in those parts, resolved to make an attack upon *Panama*; but the design miscarried. About the same time, the *Spaniards* invaded *Georgia* with a body of 3000 men; but they were repulsed with disgrace. On the 18th of *February* died the famous cardinal *Fleury*, prime-minister of *France*, in the eighty-ninth year of his age.

Q. When did the parliament meet this year?

A. The 16th of *November*, when his majesty made a speech to both houses, in which he acquainted them with the state of affairs. Lord *Carteret* was now considered as prime-minister; and never were the measures of the government attacked with more virulence and acrimony. The sending the *British* troops into *Germany*; the taking the *Hanoverians* and *Hessians* into *British* pay; every scheme, which the ministry adopted, was condemned as absurd, dangerous, and unconstitutional. So loud, indeed, was the cry raised against *Hanover* and *Hanoverian* maxims, that many people began to think the nation was ripe for a revolution; and this discontent, in all probability, laid the foundation of that rebellion, which broke out about two years after. The gin-act was repealed: the land-tax was fixed at 4 s. in the pound: the whole supply amounted to above six millions. The parliament rose the 21st of *April*.

Q. What were the principal events of 1743?

A. The king of *England*, being determined to support her *Hungarian* majesty in the most effectual manner, resolved to put himself at the head of the allied army in *Germany*; and with this view, on the 27th of *April*, he set out for the continent, accompanied by the duke of *Cumberland*; and on the 6th of *May* arrived at *Hanover*. The *Dutch* too were persuaded, in spite of all the remonstrances of the *French* court, to renounce their neutrality, and to join the confederates with a body of 20,000 men: but these did not arrive till after the battle of *Dettingen*. The king of *France* was no sooner informed of these circumstances, than he ordered

dered marshal *Noailles* to march into *Germany*, with an army of 70,000 men. The earl of *Stair*, who commanded the allies, had established his head quarters at *Aschaffenburg* on the *Maine*; and, on the 19th of *June*, his *Britannic* majesty, attended by the duke of *Cumberland*, and lord *Carteret*, arrived in the camp. The confederate army consisted of 37,000 men; that of *Noailles*, of about 58,000. On the 29th of *June*, the two armies came to an engagement at the village of *Dettingen*; and, after an obstinate and bloody battle, the *French* were defeated with the loss of 6000 men. The loss of the allies amounted to 2500. King *George* exposed his person in the hottest part of the fight; and the duke of *Cumberland* was wounded in the calf of the leg. Though the allies had gained the victory, they were obliged to leave their wounded to the care of the *French*, who treated them, it must be owned, with great humanity.

Q. What were the other transactions of the war in *Germany*?

A. The *French* were blockaded in *Egra*. Prince *Charles* of *Lorraine*, at the head of the *Austrian* army, obtained a complete victory over the *Bavarians* at *Branaw*, where the latter lost their camp and about 5000 men. The *Austrians* afterwards over-run *Bavaria*; took *Munich*, the capital of the dutchy; and entirely expelled the emperor from his dominions. By this time the emperor and the *French* were heartily tired of each other; upon which the former concluded, in *July*, a treaty of neutrality with her *Hungarian* majesty. By the treaty of *Wormes*, which was concluded in *September*, the king of *Sardinia* was to receive from *Great-Britain* an annual subsidy of 280,000 *l.*; and the *British* subjects were to enjoy in his dominions very great privileges of trade and commerce. The king of *Prussia*, provoked at the obstinacy of her *Hungarian* majesty, who had broke the neutrality, joined his forces to those of the emperor.

Q. What happened in the other parts of *Europe*?

A. In *Italy* a bloody battle was fought, the 3d of *February*, at *Campo-Santo*, between the *Spaniards* under count *Gages*, and the *Austrians* and *Piedmontese* under the counts *Traun* and *Aspremont*; in which the former lost about:

about 3,000 men; the latter 2,000. Don *Philip*, however, continued master of *Savoy*. In the North, a war broke still out between the *Russians* and the *Swedes*, which was soon after terminated by the peace of *Abo*.

Q. What were the domestic transactions of this year?

A. On the 14th of *November*, the princess of *Wales* was delivered of a prince, who was christened by the name of *William-Henry*, and on the 17th of the same month, the princess *Louisa* of *England* was married, at *Altena*, to the prince royal of *Denmark*. This year was distinguished by the death of Sir *Charles Wager* and admiral *Cavendish*. Mr. *Knight*, late cashier to the *South-Sea* company, was permitted to return to his native country.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. The 1st of *December*, when his majesty informed them, that he had concluded a definite treaty with the queen of *Hungary* and the king of *Sardinia*. Violent debates were maintained this session about the *Hanoverian* troops, the septennial act, and several other questions; but they were all carried in favour of the ministry. The supplies amounted to little less than ten millions sterling. The session ended the 12th of *May*.

Q. What were the principal events of 1744?

A. The *French*, encouraged by the almost general outcry against the *Hanoverians*, formed a design of invading *Great-Britain*. This scheme was projected by cardinal *Tencin*, a declared partisan of the *Stuart*-family. *Roquefeuille* was to command the fleet; count *Saxe*, the land-forces: and, the pretender's eldest son, then in the twenty-third year of his age, was to head the expedition. A great number of transports was collected at *Dunkirk*, and about 15,000 men assembled at that place. In order to guard against the impending danger, the coasts of *England* were properly secured; and 6000 auxiliary troops were sent for from *Holland*. At the same time, Sir *John Norris* was dispatched with a strong squadron to attack the *French* fleet, &c. which was dispersed by a storm; and thus the intended invasion was happily defeated. The *French* having, by his attempt, lost all pretences to a neutrality, declared war against *Great-Britain* on the 20th day

of *March*; and, on the 31st of the same month, a like declaration of war against *France* was published at *London*.

Q. What happened in the *Mediterranean*?

A. The *French* and *Spanish* fleets had been long blocked up in the harbour of *Toulon* by the admirals *Mathews* and *Lestock*. In point of courage these two officers were equal; in every other respect they differed. *Mathews* was frank and open; *Lestock*, cunning and reserved: *Mathews* was hot and fiery; *Lestock*, cool and dispassionate. A violent animosity had long prevailed between them; and it was thought imprudent in the government to join them in command. The combined squadron of the enemy consisted of twenty-eight ships of the line, and six frigates: the strength of the *British* fleet was not much inferior. Admiral *Rowley* commanded the van of the *English*; admiral *Mathews*, the center; admiral *Lestock*, the rear. *De Court* conducted the *French* fleet; *Navarro*, that of *Spain*. The enemy resolved to force their way out of the harbour, and give battle to the *English*. On the 11th of *February*, admiral *Mathews* bore down upon the *Spanish* admiral's ship, the *Real*, mounted with 114 guns. Mr. *Rowley* attacked the *French* admiral. The captains *Cornwall*, *Forbes*, *Osborne*, and *Haawke*, followed the example of their commanders, and fought with great bravery: but admiral *Lestock*, with his whole division, remained above five miles a-stern; and even the captains *Burrisb*, *Norris*, *Williams*, &c. who were immediately under the eye of *Mathews*, behaved in the most shameful and pusillanimous manner. The battle, however, was maintained till night, when the enemy escaped by favour of the darkness. On the 14th, they were seen again at some distance, and *Lestock* proposed pursuing them; but *Mathews* was so provoked at the behaviour of that gentleman, that he not only prevented him from giving chase, but even suspended him from his office. The conduct of the admirals was submitted to the examination of parliament, and afterwards referred to the decision of a court-martial, who, to the astonishment of all the world, honourably acquitted *Lestock*, and declared *Mathews* incapable of serving any more in the royal navy.

Q. What



Q. What passed in *Germany*?

A. Though that country had been evacuated by the *French*, yet was not its peace restored. The emperor was stripped of his dominions; the queen of *Hungary* breathed nothing but vengeance; and his *Prussian* majesty, therefore, thought it necessary for his own safety to restore the balance of power in the empire. With this view, on the 11th of *May*, he concluded, at *Frankfort*, a treaty with the emperor, the elector *Palatine*, and the landgrave of *Hesse-Cassel*. The professed design of this treaty was to support the Imperial dignity, and re-establish the peace of *Germany*; but there was a secret article, importing, that the king of *Prussia* should attempt the conquest of *Bobemia*, and *Upper Austria*, for the emperor; in return for which, his Imperial majesty was to make certain concessions to the court of *Berlin*. In prosecution of this scheme, the king of *Prussia* invaded *Bobemia*, through *Saxony*, at the head of 84,000 men. Another body of his troops penetrated through *Silesia* into *Moravia*; and the two armies being joined, the king laid siege to *Prague*, which, though defended by a garrison of 13,000 men, was obliged to surrender in a few days. As the emperor's health was now in a very declining state, the queen of *Hungary* formed a design for procuring the Imperial crown to her consort, the great duke of *Tuscany*.

Q. What was done in *Flanders*?

A. By this time the courts of *Vienna* and *Versailles* had <sup>in May, the French</sup> king invaded *Flanders*, at the head of 120,000 men; and meeting with no opposition from the allied army, which amounted only to 76,000, he soon made himself master of *Courtray*, *Menin*, *Furnes*, *Mount-Cassel*, and other fortresses. On the other hand, prince *Charles* of *Lorraine* passed the *Rhine*, and laid all the *Lower Alsace* under contribution. The king of *France* was no sooner informed of this circumstance than he returned from *Flanders* with 40,000 of his best troops, in order to stop the progress of the enemy; but, though his army consisted of 116,000 men, he could not prevent prince *Charles*, who had only 71,000, from repassing the *Rhine* with very little loss. That prince, being soon after joined by 16,000 *Saxons*,  
whose

whose sovereign had now declared in favour of her *Hungarian* majesty, drove the king of *Prussia* out of *Bohemia*, with the loss of 30,000 men. But, notwithstanding these successes of the *Austrian* arms, the *French* reduced the important fortrefs of *Friburgh*, and the emperor was restored to his hereditary dominions.

Q. What were the transactions of the war in *Italy*?

A. Don *Philip*, having received a reinforcement of 20,000 *French* under the prince of *Conti*, had now an army 60,000 strong. The king of *Sardinia* was at the head of 30,000 men. The combined armies of *France* and *Spain* forced the entrenchments of *Villa-Franca* and *Mountalban*; though art and nature seemed to have conspired in rendering them impregnable. In this attempt they lost about 5,000 men; but they took a great number of prisoners, and among the rest, the marquis de *Suze*, the king of *Sardinia*'s natural brother. They then laid siege to *Coni*; and the king of *Sardinia* coming to its relief, a battle ensued on the 24th of *September*, when the confederates obtained the victory. Nevertheless they abandoned the siege, after having lost in it about 6,000 men. Mean while his *Neapolitan* majesty, having violated his neutrality, by joining his troops to those of his brother Don *Philip*, his dominions were invaded by prince *Lobkowitz* and count *Brown*, two *Austrian* generals; the latter of whom attacked *Velitri* with such impetuosity, that he had almost surpris'd the king of *Naples*, and the duke of *Modena*, in their beds. The king, however, was soon after obliged to retire out of *Naples*; and the armies on all sides were put into winter quarters.

Q. When did commodore *Anson* return from his famous voyage round the world?

A. In 1744. In *September* 1740, he had sailed from *England* with a small squadron of ships, consisting of the *Centurion* of sixty guns; the *Gloucester*, the *Severn*, the *Pearl*, the *Wager*, and the *Trial* sloop; with two victuallers, and about 470 land forces, under the command of colonel *Cracherode*. The *Severn* and *Pearl* were separated from him on the coast of *Brasil*, whence they returned to *England*. All his other ships, except the *Centurion*, were either lost or destroyed, for want of hands to navigate them.

them. He burned the town of *Paita* in *Peru*, where he found a good deal of plunder. He likewise took the rich *Acapulco* ship, or *Manilla* galleon, valued at 400,000*l.* sterling. And, after undergoing an incredible number of difficulties, he arrived at *Spithead* on the 15th of *June*. His treasure was conveyed in a triumphant manner to *London*, where it was received amidst the shouts and acclamations of the people. He himself was soon after created a peer.

Q. What were the other occurrences of this year?

A. *Mareschal Belleisle* and his brother being seized at *Elbingrode* in the electorate of *Hanover*, were sent over to *England*, and confined in *Windsor* castle. The like accident happened to the earl of *Holderness*, ambassador from *Great-Britain* to the republic of *Venice*. He was stopped by the *Imperialists* near *Nuremberg*; but was soon after set at liberty. Sir *John Balchen's* ship, the *Victory*, of 110 guns, esteemed the finest first-rate in the world, was cast away on the coast of *Alderney*; and this brave commander, with all his crew, amounting to 1100 choice seamen, 100 of whom were volunteers and gentlemen of fortune, perished in the ocean. This year was distinguished by the death of the celebrated poet *Mr. Pope*, and of *Sarah*, the old duchess of *Marlborough*: the former of whom died in *June*; the latter, in *October*, aged 85.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. On the 27th of *November*, previous to which several changes were made in the ministry. A coalition was formed between the opposite parties, which was distinguished by the appellation of the *broad-bottoms*, and was intended to comprehend gentlemen of every denomination. The lord *Carteret*, who, in consequence of his mother's death, was now become earl *Granville*, resigned the seals as secretary of state, and was succeeded in that post by the earl of *Harrington*. The duke of *Bedford* was appointed first lord of the admiralty, and the earl of *Chesterfield* lord lieutenant of *Ireland*. The supplies amounted to 6,462,890*l.* and a quadruple-alliance was concluded, at *Warsaw*, between his *Britannic* majesty, the queen of *Hungary*, the king of *Poland*, and the *States-General*. The session ended the 2d of *May*.

Q. What

Q. What were the transactions of 1745?

A. The death of the emperor *Charles VII.* which happened in *January* of this year, produced a great alteration in the state of affairs in *Europe*. The grand duke of *Tuscany*, consort to her *Hungarian* majesty, was immediately declared a candidate for the Imperial crown; while his pretensions were warmly opposed by the *French* king, who intended to raise to that dignity, either the young elector of *Bavaria*, or the king of *Poland*. Both these princes, however, declined the offer; and the grand duke, in spite of all the intrigues of the *French* court, was elected emperor at *Frankfort* in the month of *September* of this year. Mean while, the *French* king, resolving to make a conquest of the *Austrian Netherlands*, invaded that country, at the head of a powerful army, and invested the city of *Tournay*. The duke of *Cumberland*, who commanded the allied army, though greatly inferior to the enemy in number, determined to make an attempt for raising the siege. This brought on the famous battle of *Fontenoy*, which was fought on the 1st day of *May*, and in which, after an obstinate and bloody engagement, the allies were defeated with the loss of 7,000 men. The loss of the enemy was still more considerable. Nevertheless, as they were now freed from all opposition, they reduced *Tournay*, *Ghent*, *Bruges*, *Oudenarde*, *Dendermonde*, *Ostend*, *Newport*, *Acth*, and several other places; and the *French* king after a long and successful campaign, returned in triumph to *Paris*.

Q. What happened in *Germany*?

A. The landgrave of *Hesse-Cassel* withdrew from the allied army the 6,000 troops, which he had in *British* pay; and joined them to those of the elector of *Bavaria*. This young prince, however, finding himself unable to oppose the progress of the *Austrian* arms, concluded a peace with her *Hungarian* majesty. The king of *England* had formed an excellent plan for composing all differences between the king of *Prussia*, the queen of *Hungary*, and the elector of *Saxony*: but, this being rejected by the courts of *Vienna* and *Dresden*, the king of *Prussia* entered *Saxony* with a powerful army; dispossessed that elector of all his dominions; and obtained two complete victories over the combined

combined armies of *Austria* and *Saxony*; the first, on the 3d of *June*; the second, on the 18th of *September*: in consequence of which, the queen of *Hungary* and the elector of *Saxony* were obliged to agree to a peace, by which his *Prussian* majesty retained possession of *Silesia*.

Q. What passed in *Italy*?

A. War was declared against his *Sardinian* majesty, by the republic of *Genoa*, who having engaged in a treaty offensive and defensive with the crowns of *France* and *Spain*, the affairs of the *Austrians* were entirely ruined in that quarter. Nevertheless, admiral *Medley*, who commanded the *British* fleet in the *Mediterranean*, bombarded *Genoa*, *Final*, *St. Remo*, and *Bastia* in the island of *Corfica*.

Q. What happened in the other parts of the world?

A. On the 17th of *June*, *Louisbourg*, the bulwark of the *French* empire in *America*, was taken by a body of 6,000 *New-Englanders* under Mr. *Pepperel*, assisted by a *British* fleet of ten ships of war, commanded by commodore *Warren*. The garrison consisted of 1,200 regulars. The besiegers lost 100 men; the besieged 240.

Q. Did not a rebellion break out in 1745?

A. Yes; and one that was attended with the most dangerous consequences?

Q. Please to mention the most remarkable particulars.

A. We have already observed, that the cry, raised against the *Hanoverian* forces, had encouraged *Charles*, the young pretender, to form a design, in the preceding year, for exciting an insurrection in *Scotland*, which, however, he was obliged to postpone. This attempt he now determined to resume; and, accordingly, *Charles*, who was then about twenty-five years of age, embarking with seven adherents only, on board a frigate of eighteen guns, with 900 stand of arms, set sail from port *St. Lazare* in *Brittany*. Soon after, he was joined by the *Elizabeth*, a *French* ship of sixty-six guns, between whom and the *Lion* man of war, a *British* ship of fifty-eight guns, commanded by captain *Brett*, a bloody engagement ensued, when the *Elizabeth* sheered off. Mean while *Charles* prosecuted his voyage to the western isles of *Scotland*, and landing at *Ardnamurchan*, near the house of *Kinloch Moidart*, was immediately joined by *Cameron of Lochiel*, the titular duke of *Perth*, the viscount *Strathallan*, lord *Nairn*, lord *George Murray*

*Murray* (brother to the duke of *Atbol*) and by several other chieftains. The government was no sooner informed of these circumstances, than they sent orders to Sir *John Cope*, who commanded the king's forces in *Scotland*, to crush the insurrection in its infancy. With this view, Sir *John* set out for the North; but the pretender, giving him the slip, advanced southwards, and entered *Pertb* on the 3d of *September*. Here he proclaimed his father, and reviewing his forces, found them amount to about 3000 men; but most of them miserably armed and accoutred. Soon after, he continued his march towards *Edinburgh*, the magistrates of which seemed determined to make a vigorous resistance; but this appears to have been all a farce; for the city was surrendered at the first summons. The pretender, being now master of the capital, caused his father to be proclaimed at the cross of *Edinburgh*, and published three manifestos, which, after promising mighty things in favour of the *Scottish* nation, constituted *Charles* regent of *Scotland*, *England*, and *Ireland*. His forces now consisted of about 4000 men.

Q. What happened next?

A. Sir *John Cope* had by this time returned towards *Edinburgh*, and taken post with his army (the exact number of which was never known) in the neighbourhood of *Preston-Pans*. Here, on the morning of the 21st of *September*, he was attacked by the rebels with such impetuosity, that his forces were broken and routed in the space of ten minutes. 400 of the king's troops were killed; and, among these, the brave colonel *Gardiner*, who fell covered with wounds in sight of his own threshold. About 1200 were taken prisoners, together with the train of artillery, tents, baggage, and military chest, containing 6000 *l.* in specie. The loss of the rebels was very inconsiderable. Sir *John Cope* was afterwards tried by a court-martial, and acquitted. The rebels made an unsuccessful attempt upon the castle of *Edinburgh*, which was defended by general *Guesf*, a brave and experienced officer. In a few days after the battle, the pretender received a supply of money, arms, and ammunition, from *France*. About the same time he was joined by *Gordon* of *Glenbucket*, the earl of *Kilmarnock*, the lords *Elcho*, *Ogilvie*, *Pitligo*, and *Balmerino*; and finding his army now amount to 6000 men, he resolved to march into *England*.

Q. What preparations were made for his reception in that kingdom ?

A. His majesty, who had been in *Germany* during the greatest part of the summer, returned to *England* on the 16th of *August*, when he received loyal addresses from the city of *London*, and from most of the towns and corporations in the kingdom. The like addresses were presented by the two houses of parliament, which assembled on the 16th of *October*, and granted 7,063,252 *l.* for the current service of the year. Large sums were subscribed by the public companies, and by many private persons, for cloathing his majesty's troops in the North. Associations were formed by the gentlemen of *York*, and of several other counties, for the support of the government. The lawyers, headed by lord chief-justice *Willes*, made a tender of their service to the king. In a word, the whole nation seemed to unite as one man, in defence of his majesty's person and government. A camp, consisting of 14,000 men was formed at *Newcastle*, under general *Wade*. A strong squadron was stationed in the *Channel*, under admiral *Vernon*, in order to prevent an invasion from *France*. A proclamation was issued for apprehending Jesuits and popish priests ; and every other precaution taken that could be deemed necessary for the security of the kingdom ?

Q. What were the rebels doing in the mean time ?

A. Their whole army, amounting to 6000 foot and 260 horse, entered *England* on the 6th of *November* ; and laying siege to the city of *Carlisle*, took it in less than three days. Upon this a new army was raised, to be commanded by the duke of *Cumberland*, and, under him, by Sir *John Ligonier*. This army, consisting of 13,000 men, took post at *Litchfield*. The rebels intended to have penetrated into *Wales* ; but finding that impracticable, they directed their march by *Manchester*, *Macclesfield*, *Congleton*, &c. and on the 5th of *December*, their whole army entered *Derby*, within ninety-seven miles of *London*. Understanding, however, that great preparations were made to oppose them, and that his majesty had resolved to erect the standard of *England* upon *Finchley-Common*, they suddenly wheeled about, and retreated towards *Scotland*, leaving a garrison in *Carlisle* for the defence of that place. The duke of *Cumberland* pursued them with the utmost celerity ; but was unable to

overtake them, till he arrived at the village of *Clifton*, where he had a skirmish with their rear-guard, in which several were slain on both sides. His royal highness, having reduced *Carlisle*, which surrendered on the 31st of *December*, returned to *London*. Thus ended the expedition of the rebels into *England*, which, all circumstances considered, must be allowed to have been conducted in a very masterly manner; as they were unprovided with horses, magazines, and many of them with arms. In the mean time, *Macleod* and *Monro*, who had raised their clans in favour of the government, were defeated in the north by lord *Lewis Gordon* (brother to the duke of that name) who had assembled a strong party in behalf of the pretender.

Q. What did the rebels do upon their return to *Scotland*?

A. Being joined by the *Frazers*, under the master of *Lovat*, who had been drawn into the rebellion by his father, the famous lord *Lovat*, one of the greatest hypocrites that ever existed; and being likewise re-inforced by 6 or 700 men in the *French king's* pay, under lord *John Drummond*; they laid siege to the town of *Sterling*, which they took: but were unable to make any impression upon the castle, which was gallantly defended by general *Blakeney*. Upon this a new army of 10,000 men was raised by the government, and the command of it given to general *Hawley*, who was ordered to relieve the castle of *Sterling*. The rebels, amounting to about 8000 men, met him at *Falkirk*, on the 17th of *January* 1746, when a battle ensued; in which the king's forces were defeated with the loss of 400 men killed, and about 300 taken prisoners. Among the former were Sir *Robert Monro*, colonel *Whitney*, and some other officers of distinction. The rebels lost in all about 200.

Q. What was the consequence of this misfortune?

A. The duke of *Cumberland* was appointed commander in chief against the rebels; and accordingly his royal highness set out from *St. James's*, on the 25th of *January*, at one in the morning, accompanied by the lords *Catcart* and *Bury*, and colonels *Conway* and *York*. On the 30th he arrived at *Edinburgh*, and next day began his march against the rebels, who, alarmed at his approach, abandoned the siege of *Sterling-Castle*, blew up their magazines, and retreated to *Inverness*. Here the young pretender very narrowly escaped being taken in his bed, by lord *Loudon*, who had



had distinguished himself greatly in the service of the government. The rebels, however, took *Fort-George* and *Fort-Augustus*, in the month of *February*; and defeated the *Sutherland* militia at *Dornoch*; but these losses were more than compensated by the retaking of the *Hazard* sloop of war, which the rebels had surprized the preceding year. About this time 6000 *Hessians* landed in *England*, under the command of their prince, who was attended by the earl of *Crawford*, a most accomplished officer. The duke of *Cumberland*, having secured the important posts of *Sterling* and *Pertb* with the *Hessian* troops, advanced with his army to *Aberdeen*, which he entered the 1st day of *March*. Thence he proceeded towards *Inverness*, and passing, on the 12th of *April*, the deep and rapid river *Spey*, without opposition, arrived at *Nairn*. The rebels lay at *Culloden*, to the number of 8000 men. The royal army was nearly of the same force.

Q. Please to mention the most remarkable circumstances of the battle of *Culloden*.

A. On the 16th of *April*, early in the morning, the whole royal army marched from *Nairn* in four columns. The rebels formed their front in thirteen divisions, being so many clans under their respective chiefs. About one o'clock in the afternoon the cannonading began. The artillery of the rebels was ill served, and did very little execution; but that of the king's troops made dreadful havock among the enemy. Impatient of this fire, their front-line advanced to the charge, and about 500 of the rebels attacked *Barrei's* and *Monro's* regiments, with their usual impetuosity; but were soon driven back with considerable loss. At the same time, *Kingston's* and *Hawley's* dragoons pulled down a park-wall that covered their right flank, and falling in among them, sword in hand, compleated their confusion. The *French* forces on the left did not fire a shot; but stood inactive during the engagement, and afterwards surrendered themselves prisoners of war. The young pretender, though his corps de reserve was still entire, galloped off, without making the least resistance. A large body of the rebels marched off the field in order, with pipes playing: the rest were routed with great slaughter, no less than 2000 of them being killed in the action and pursuit. The king's forces had been highly exasperated by their former losses and disgraces;

and to this resentment was owing the greatness of the carnage. Of the royalists there fell about 300, and among these lord *Robert Kerr*, son to the marquis of *Lothian*. The earl of *Kilmarnock* was taken on the field of battle: the lord *Balmerino* surrendered himself a few days after. The marquis of *Tullibardine* followed his example: but the most extraordinary part of the prisoners were four ladies, who had been very instrumental in procuring friends to the pretender; and one of them, in particular, the lady *Mackintosh*, though her husband was at that time an officer in the king's army, had forced a great many of her clan to join in the rebellion. The young pretender retired to *Aird*, where he held a consultation with lord *Lovat*, and some other chieftains; and as 40,000 louis d'ors had lately arrived from *France*, a proposal was made for renewing the rebellion: but their affairs were now so desperate, that the scheme was deemed impracticable. The duke of *Cumberland*, immediately after the action, proceeded to *Inverness*, of which he took possession. He then advanced to *Fort-Augustus*; and having received the submission of almost all the clans and chieftains, returned to *London*, which he entered amidst the acclamations of a grateful people.

Q. What became of the pretender?

A. According to the narrative of his escape, as given by himself, he, immediately after the decisive battle of *Culloden*, fled to *Fort-Augustus*, and thence to *Glenbias-dale*, where he passed several days and nights without sleep, and almost without sustenance. Though he was obliged to trust his life to the fidelity of above fifty individuals, and a price of 30,000 *l.* was set upon his head; yet could not that great sum tempt the meanest of them to seize or betray him. At one time he assumed the character of a ship-wrecked merchant; at another he appeared in a female dress, and passed for the servant of a young gentlewoman, named *Flora Macdonald*; in crossing the water with whom, he was fired at by the militia. He was seen in his female garb by several persons, who were in search of him; but without their entertaining the least suspicion. Understanding, however, that his disguise was discovered, he assumed the habit of a travelling mountaineer, and in that condition wandered about among the woods and heaths, in continual danger of  
2
being

being seized by his pursuers. On the 18th of *June*, he got into the very center of a detachment of the king's troops, whom he heard relieving the guard, and talking to one another. Here a young man, permitting himself to pass for *Charles*, and refusing to surrender, was killed upon the spot. This contributed greatly to save the life of the pretender, who afterwards travelled by several camps; and even passed between the centinels of one. In the course of his peregrinations, he was frequently obliged to lye all night upon the bare rocks, and to live on salt-fish and the coarsest provisions. In a word, he was sometimes reduced to such extremity, that he was almost tempted to surrender himself to general *Campbell*. At last, after having wandered about from the 16th of *April* till the 19th of *September*, he arrived at *Lochnanagh* in *Msidart*, where a *French* ship, the *Bellona* of *Nantz*, lay ready to receive him. On board of this vessel, he himself, with a few other exiles, embarked. He was then in a very bad state of health, and was clad in a short coat of black frize thread-bare, over which was a common highland plaid, girt round him by a belt, from whence depended a pistol and a dagger. He immediately set sail for *France*; and, after having been chased by two *English* ships of war, landed safely at *Roscau*, near *Morlaix* in *Bretagne*. Having there equipped himself, he repaired to the court of *Versailles*, where he was seemingly caressed; but this was all grimace, if we except cardinal *Tencin* and his creatures. Himself and his brother (since made cardinal of *Yorke*) had appointments just sufficient to support them with decency. The *French* found their account in providing for his followers, who entered into their armies.

Q What became of the rebel prisoners?

A. Being brought up to *London*, the noblemen were committed to the *Tower*; those of inferior rank to *Newgate*. The earls of *Kilmarnock* and *Cromartie*, with lord *Balmerino*, were indicted before their peers, and found guilty. *Kilmarnock* and *Balmerino* were executed upon *Tower hill*, *August* 18. *Cromartie's* life was spared; and he was sentenced to a mild imprisonment, and allowed a moderate support. Lord *Lovat*, who had been taken, had been so very cunning, that the government found it diffi-

cult to proceed against him, as they had done against the other noblemen, by way of indictment; and the commons were therefore obliged to impeach him before his peers. *Murray*, the pretender's secretary, appeared as an evidence against him; and, the prisoner's guilt being incontestably proved, he was condemned to lose his head. After his condemnation, he made some attempts to procure a pardon; but finding all his endeavours ineffectual, he avowed himself a jacobite and a papist. His behaviour on the scaffold was remarkably chearful, and even facetious. He surveyed the crowd with attention, examined the axe, jested with the executioner, and after repeating a passage from *Horace*, intimating, though very unjustly, that he died a martyr for the liberty of his country, he laid his head upon the block with the utmost indifference. Courts of judicature were opened in *Southwark* and in the north of *England*, for the trial of the rebels of inferior note. Out of forty-three, who were condemned at *London*, no more than seventeen were executed. They suffered upon *Kennington-common*. Among these were *Townley*, colonel of the *Manchester* regiment; and one *Morgan*, a lawyer. The like lenity was shewn to the rebels in other parts of the kingdom; nor were any put to death, except those whose conduct was attended with some circumstances of a very aggravating nature. In *November 1747*, *Charles Ratcliff*, brother to the earl of *Derwentwater*, who had been taken in a ship bound to *Scotland*, was arraigned on a former sentence passed against him in 1716; and the identity of his person being proved, he was executed on *Tower-hill*.

Q. What were the detached events of 1745?

A. In the beginning of this year died the famous Sir *Robert Walpole*, earl of *Orford*, and late prime-minister. Though he had had, for so long a time, the management of the public treasure, yet his circumstances were far from being affluent.

Q. What were the parliamentary transactions of 1746?

A. On the 14th of *January* his majesty made a speech to both houses, in which he acquainted them with the state of affairs on the continent. The *Dutch* still continued to act with their usual dilatoriness. Prince *Waldeck* had given in a plan to them, by which he desired to be put at the head  
of

of 109,000 men. The states-general refused to declare war against *France*, though they agreed to furnish 40,000 men for the support of the common cause. Great divisions prevailed at this time in the *English* ministry. Some proposed, that the war against *France* should be prosecuted with the utmost vigour, and that *England* should bear the chief share of the expence; but this was strongly opposed by the duke of *Newcastle*, the earl of *Harrington*, Mr. *Pelham*, and others, who immediately resigned their places. Upon this the earl of *Granville* was appointed principal secretary of state; but finding it impossible to raise the supplies, he re-delivered the seals to his majesty; and the gentlemen, who had resigned, were restored to their employments. The quiet of the ministry being thus re-established, the public business went on with the greatest unanimity. The parliament bestowed an additional revenue of 25,000*l.* per ann. upon his royal highness the duke of *Cumberland*, for the service he had done the nation in defeating the rebels at *Culloden*. Acts were passed for disarming the *Highlanders*; abolishing the *Highland* dress; obliging all schoolmasters in *Scotland* to take the oaths to the government; and restraining the exercise of the episcopal religion in that kingdom, where most of the episcopalists were professed *Jacobites*.

Q. What were the military transactions of this year?

A. The allied army in *Germany* amounted to 44,000 men; the *French* army, to 100,000. The former was commanded by prince *Charles* of *Lorraine*; the latter, by marshal *Saxe*, who, taking advantage of the weakness of the confederates, reduced *Brussels*, *Louvain*, *Antwerp*, *Mons*, *St. Guillain*, *Charleroy*, *Namur*, and, in a word, made himself master of all *Flanders*, *Brabant*, and *Hainault*. The allies, however, being now re-inforced to the number of 80,000 men, resolved to check the progress of the enemy; and, on the 10th of *October*, was fought the battle of *Roucoux*, in which the confederates were defeated with the loss of 5000 men. The *French*, though they gained the victory, lost above double that number. This action terminated the campaign in *Germany*.

Q. What happened in *Italy*?

*A.* The *French* army in that quarter was commanded by marshal *Maillebois*; the *Spanish*, by count *Gages*, and afterwards by the marquis *de las Minas*. The *Austrians* were conducted by prince *Lichtenstein*, and afterwards by general *Botta*; the *Piedmontese* by general *Leutrum*; and sometimes his *Sardinian* majesty assumed the command of the whole. The combined armies of *France* and *Spain* amounted to 73,000 men; those of *Austria* and *Piedmont* to 76,000. In *February* baron *Leutrum* surprised the strong fortress of *Asti*, and made the garrison, of 5000 men, prisoners of war. On the 4th day of *June*, the *French* and *Spaniards* were defeated at *Placentia*, with the loss of 12,000 men; and on the 9th of *August*, they sustained a defeat at *Rotto-Tredo*, when their loss amounted to about 8000 men. The loss of the *Austrians* in both these engagements, did not exceed 8000 men. Soon after, the *Austrians* made themselves masters of *Genoa*; where they behaved in such a tyrannical manner, that the inhabitants rose in arms, and drove them out of the city with great slaughter. The *French* and *Spaniards*, however, being entirely expelled from *Italy*, count *Brown*, a brave and enterprising general, passed the *Var*, with a body of 50,000 men, and penetrating into *France*, laid siege to *Antibes*, in which he was assisted by a *British* fleet under admiral *Medley*; but hearing that marshal *Belleisle* was advancing against him with a powerful army, he repassed the *Var*, with little or no loss.

2. What were the naval transactions of this year?

*A.* In *September*, a descent was made upon the coast of *Brittany* by 5,800 land-forces, under general *Sinclair*, attended by a fleet of sixteen ships of the line, under admiral *Lestock*. The general laid siege to port *l'Orient*, but was not able to take it; and he returned to *England*, without performing any action of importance. In the *West-Indies*, the *French* made an attempt for the recovery of *Cape-Breton*; and the *English* formed a design of reducing *Quebec*, the capital of *Canada*: the former scheme proved abortive; the latter was not carried into execution. Commodore *Mitchell* was broke for his cowardly conduct in allowing a *French* fleet to escape him at *Martinico*, where he had been stationed to intercept it. In the *East-Indies*, commodore *Peyton* shamefully declined coming to an engagement with *M. de la Bourdonnois*,

*Bourdonnois*, the *French* admiral, who took *Madras* without opposition. The *French* likewise made an unsuccessful attempt upon fort *St. David's*.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. On the 18th of *November*, when his majesty, in his speech to both houses, acquainted them, among other things, that the funds, appropriated for the support of his civil government, had, for several years past, fallen greatly short of the revenue intended, and granted by parliament. The whole supply amounted to 9,425,254 *l.* The land-tax was fixed at 4 *s.* in the pound. A duty was imposed on windows, coaches, and wheel-carriages. Among the laws passed this session, was an act abolishing the heritable jurisdictions, and taking away the tenor of wardholdings in *Scotland*; which, being a species of slavery, were deemed an inconsistency in a free government, invested the superiors with a dangerous power over their dependents, and were reckoned one of the principal sources of those rebellions, which had broke out since the revolution. The session closed with an act of indemnity, out of which eighty-six persons were excepted. On the 18th of *June* the parliament was dissolved, and writs were issued for summoning a new one.

Q. What were the most memorable events of 1747?

A. Negotiations for a peace were carried on at *Breda*; but the *French* ambassadors behaved with so much arrogance, that the conferences proved abortive. As the *Dutch* had hitherto acted only as auxiliaries in the war, strong endeavours were used by the other allies to persuade them to engage in it as principals; and to this they were further excited by the bold and masterly harangues of the celebrated *Van Haran*. At this time the state of affairs in *Europe* received a considerable alteration by the marriage of a princess of *Saxony* with the dauphin of *France*, whose first wife had lately died. Several of the *French* ministers were inclined to a peace; and so much the rather, as they wanted to execute the scheme, which *Maurepas* had formed, for making the navies of *France* stronger than those of *Great-Britain* and *Holland* united; and for the stripping the *English* of all their settlements in the *East* and *West-Indies*. In the mean time, however, the *French* king resolved to prosecute

the war with the utmost vigour. Accordingly, marshal *Saxe*, created marshal de camp general, a post, which had not been possessed by any person since the time of the great *Turenne*, entered the *Netherlands* with 150,000 men; while a separate army of 60,000 was destined to act in *Provence*. *Saxe* detached count *Lowendabl*, his near relation, with a body of 27,000 men, with which he fell into *Dutch Brabant*, and reduced *Sluys*, *Sas Van Ghent*, and *Hulst*. The duke of *Cumberland*, who commanded the allied army, advanced to the relief of this last place; but just as he was approaching it, he was informed of its surrender by a general discharge of the artillery from the fortifications, by which a great many of his men were killed, and even his own person was put in the most imminent danger.

Q. Did not the *Dutch* resent these attacks?

A. The common people, suspecting that they were betrayed by their governors, resolved to choose a stadtholder; and they accordingly raised to that dignity *William Henry Friso*, prince of *Orange*, consort of *Anne*, eldest daughter of his *Britannic* majesty. The states, animated by the new stadtholder, came to some vigorous resolutions against *France*; but still they refused to declare war in form. On the 2d of *July* was fought the battle of *Val*, in which the allies were defeated with the loss of 6000 men. The loss of the *French* amounted to 11,000. The confederate army must have been entirely ruined, had not Sir *John Ligonier*, at the head of a few squadrons of horse, charged the whole line of the *French* cavalry, and, by that means, secured the retreat of the allies. The confederates, however, took seven standards, eight pair of colours, and about 700 prisoners; sixty of whom were officers. Both the *Dutch* and *Austrians* behaved scandalously in this battle: almost the whole loss fell upon the *English*, the *Hessians*, and *Hanoverians*: so that the *French* king was heard to say, that the *English* not only paid all, but fought all. On the 15th of *July*, count *Lowendabl*, with 30,000 men, invested *Bergen-op-Zoom*, esteemed the strongest fortress in *Dutch Brabant*, and defended by a numerous garrison under old baron *Cronstroom*. On the 16th of *September* the place was taken by assault; and such was the negligence of the governour, that, had it not been for the bravery of lord *John Murray's* Highlanders, who fought



fought till two thirds of them were killed upon the spot, *Cronstroom* must have been taken prisoner in his bed. 'Twas generally supposed, that he had received private orders to let the place be surprized. *Lowendabl*, as a reward of his services, was created a marshal of *France*. The armies on both sides retired into winter-quarters, and the duke of *Cumberland* returned to *England*.

Q. What passed in *Italy*?

A. *Genoa* was besieged by the *Austrians* under *Schuylenberg*, who was soon after obliged to abandon the enterprise.

Q. What were the naval transactions of this year?

A. On the 3d of *May*, a *British* fleet of fifteen men of war, under vice admiral *Anson* and rear-admiral *Warren*, defeated, off *Cape-Finisterre*, a *French* squadron of nine ships of war, commanded, by *M. de la Jonquiere* and *M. de St. George*. The *English* took several ships, containing a good deal of treasure. Admiral *Anson* was created a lord; Sir *Peter Warren* was made a knight of the *Bath*. On the 14th of *October*, admiral *Hawke*, with fourteen men of war, defeated, near the same place, another *French* fleet, and took six of their ships. The fight was long and obstinate: 800 of the enemy were killed or wounded, and about 3000 taken prisoners. Of the *English*, 154 were killed, and 558 wounded. In the *East-Indies*, admiral *Boscawen* made an unsuccessful attempt upon *Pondicherry*, of which *M. Dupleix* was governor. He afterwards met, on the coast of *Coromandel*, with a violent storm; in which several of his ships, and 1200 men, perished.

Q. What were the domestic occurrences of this year?

A. The practice of smuggling had now risen to such an intolerable height, and the persons concerned it lawful traffick had committed such enormities (some of them having even been guilty of robbery and murder) that the government offered a reward of 500*l.* for every smuggler that was taken. In consequence of this, several smugglers were seized, tried, and executed. *Mr. Janssen* distinguished himself greatly in this affair.

Q. When did the new parliament assemble?

A. On the 10th of *November*. The elections had been carried every where in favour of the ministry; and it was

plainly perceived, that this parliament would be of the same complexion with the last. The money granted for the service of the year 1748, amounted to 8,507,930 *l.* Such was the alacrity of the public in contributing towards the exigencies of the government, that, books being opened for a subscription of 6,300,000 *l.* that sum, and two millions more, were subscribed in a few hours. The session ended the 13th of *May*.

Q. What were the transactions of 1748?

A. The king of *Prussia* seemed, at this time, to bear no good-will towards the court of *Great-Britain*; for he appointed, as his ambassador at *Paris*, the earl marshal of *Scotland*, who had been engaged in the rebellion of 1715: a step, that was thought an insult upon his *Britannic* majesty. On the 11th of *March*, conferences for a peace were opened at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, where the earl of *Sandwich*, and Sir *Thomas Robinson*, acted as the *British* plenipotentiaries. In the mean time, a *French* army of 45,000 men, under marshal *Lowendabl*, invested *Maastricht*; but, as the place was not reduced at the signing of the preliminaries, it was agreed, that, for the glory of his Christian majesty's arms, it should be surrendered, on condition of its being immediately restored. The *French* are said to have lost in this siege about 6000 men; besides 5000, who perished through the inclemency of the season. The preliminaries were signed on the 19th of *April*, when a proclamation was published at *London* for discontinuing all hostilities in the *Low-Countries*, and in the *Chanel*. The definitive treaty was concluded at *Aix-la-Chapelle* on the 7th of *October*. The contracting powers were, her imperial majesty, the kings of *Great-Britain*, *France*, *Spain*, *Sardinia*, the *Dutch*, the *Modenese*, and *Genoese*.

Q. What happened in *America*?

A. As hostilities had not yet ceased in that part of the world, rear-admiral *Knowles* reduced port *Louis* in *Hispaniola*, and made an unsuccessful attempt upon *St. Jago de Cuba*. In *September*, he engaged a *Spanish* fleet under *Reggio* and *Spinola*, who were obliged to sheer off; but, just as he was expecting the plate-fleet, he received the disagreeable news that a peace was concluded. Thus ended a bloody and expensive war; in which the *English* and *French*,

*French*, the principal parties concerned, gained nothing but the experience of each other's strength and resources. The treaty of peace was very little agreeable to any of the contracting powers; but least of all to the *English*. Nothing was concluded in favour of the *British* commerce: the restitution of *Louisburg* was extremely unpopular: and the granting hostages to *France*, for the performance of articles, was deemed a national disgrace; though precedents may be found for it in the *English* history. The value of the captures made by the *English*, in the course of this war, was supposed to amount, at an average, to two millions sterling. A little before the cessation of hostilities, 37,000 *Russians* had arrived in *Germany*, to the assistance of the allies; but the peace was no sooner signed, than their march was countermanded, and they returned to their own country. At this same time, the young pretender, who then resided at *Paris*, was given to understand, that it would not be proper for him to continue any longer in *France*; but as he neglected to take the hint, and even refused to retire, he was one evening, while stepping out of his coach into the opera house, seized by a party of *French* guards, who, having tied him with a cord, like a common felon, conducted him, first, to *Vincennes*, and thence to the frontiers of the kingdom.

Q. When did the parliament meet this year?

A. His majesty returning from *Germany*, where he had passed the summer, and had founded the university of *Göttingen*, opened the session on the 29th of *November*. An opposition was now formed in the House of Commons, consisting of a few independent country gentlemen, and the servants of the prince of *Wales*; between whom and his majesty a new misunderstanding had broke out. The whole supply for the service of the year 1749, amounted to 7,930,382 l. 5 s. 1 d. Several bills were passed in the course of this session, though not without violent debates; and among others, the mutiny-bill; a bill for subjecting half-pay officers to martial law, in the same manner as if they were on whole pay; a bill for extending and improving the trade to *Africa*; one for erecting a fish-market in *Westminster*; and another for encouraging the whale-

whale-fishery. The session was closed on the 13th of June.

Q. What were the most remarkable incidents of 1749?

A. Party-riots broke out at this time in several parts of England; one particularly at *Oxford*, where certain young men drank the Pretender's health, and were guilty of some treasonable practices. For this crime, two of them, *Darves* and *Whitmore*, were tried and imprisoned. Another riot happened at *Litchfield* races, where some persons of quality, and among others the duke of *Bedford*, were grossly insulted. The duke of *Newcastle* was chosen chancellor of the university of *Cambridge*; though the prince of *Wales*, it is said, had expressed some desire of obtaining that dignity. At this time a civil government was established in *Nova Scotia*, chiefly by the patriotic endeavours of the earl of *Hallifax*, first lord of trade and plantations. 3750 persons and families engaged themselves to go over to that colony. The greatest part of them arrived there in June, under the conduct of colonel *Cornwallis*, their governor; and, in a little time, after a town was built, which was denominated *Hallifax*, in honour of the founder. *Algernon*, duke of *Somerset*, dying on the 7th of *February*, was succeeded in his titles of baron of *Warkworth*, and earl of *Northumberland*, by Sir *Hugh Smithson*, of *Stonwick* in *Yorkshire*, who had married the lady *Elizabeth*, only daughter of his grace above-mentioned, and baroness *Piercy*, &c. in her own right.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. *November 16*. The whole supply amounted to above four millions. The most important act passed this session, was that for reducing the interest of the national debt; by which it was ordained, that the creditors should receive four *per cent.* for one year; three and a half *per cent.* for seven years; and three *per cent.* ever after. The merit of this excellent scheme was chiefly due to Mr. *Pelham*, and Sir *John Barnard*. Another act of great consequence was passed, namely, that for encouraging the *British* white herring and cod-fisheries. It imported, that a capital, not exceeding 500,000 l. might be subscribed; the proprietor to receive three *per cent. per ann.* upon the paid in, during fourteen years. A bounty of 30 s. and after-

afterwards of 5*s.* per ton was allowed. The affairs of the society were to be managed by a council, consisting of 30 persons. The prince of *Wales*, who favoured the undertaking, was chosen governor. Some regulations were made for encouraging the growth of silk in the southern colonies of *America*, and for improving the *African* trade. The session ended the 12th of *April*, when his majesty informed the parliament of his intention to go abroad.

Q. What were the occurrences of 1750?

A. In *February* and *March*, two shocks of an earthquake were felt in *London*; which, though no ways violent, yet being uncommon, filled the people with the most dreadful panic; and this was still further encreased by the ridiculous predictions of a wild enthusiast, who pretended to foretel, that, in a little time, another shock would happen, which would lay all *London* and *Westminster* in ruins. In *May*, an infectious distemper broke out in *Newgate*, which proved fatal, at the sittings in the *Old Bailey*, to *Sir Samuel Pennant*, lord mayor; to one of the aldermen; to two of the judges; to many of the lawyers; and to most of the jury. On the 31st of *July* died the king of *Portugal*. *October* the 24th, a definitive treaty was concluded between *Great Britain* and *Spain*. No positive stipulation was made in it against searching *British* ships in *America*; though this had been the original cause of the war. The people exclaimed loudly against this omission: and, *No search, No search*, became the general cry.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this winter?

A. Not till the 17th of *January* 1751. The supply for the service of the current year amounted nearly to five millions sterling. The chief subject that came before the commons this session, was the affair of the *Westminster* election. *Lord Trentbam*, one of the representatives for that city, having accepted of a place under the government, had thereby vacated his seat in parliament. He again offered himself as a candidate, as did likewise *Sir George Vandeput*, who was supported by all the anti-ministerial party. After a violent struggle, lord *Trentbam* was declared duly elected. The party in opposition, however, had acted with so much violence, that *Mr. Crowle*, an attorney, and *Mr. Murray*, brother to lord *Elibank*, the principal

principal leaders of the mob, were summoned before the House of Commons. Mr. *Crowle* received a reprimand on his knees from the speaker; but Mr. *Murray*, refusing to give that mark of submission, was committed prisoner to *Newgate*, where he remained during the whole course of the session; at the end of which he returned to his own house in triumph. He would probably have been re-committed to the same place at the next meeting of the parliament; but he thought proper, before that time, to retire out of the kingdom. An act passed this session for abolishing the old stile. The parliament rose on the 25th of *June*.

Q. What were the other transactions of 1751?

A. This year proved fatal to several royal personages. On the 20th of *March* died *Frederick*, prince of *Wales*, in the 45th year of his age\*. Never prince was more universally beloved while living, or more sincerely regretted when dead. His royal highness's death produced an entire change in the state of parties in *England*. A bill passed for settling a regency, in case of the king's demise before his successor should be 18 years of age. The princess of *Wales* was appointed regent, and was to be assisted by a council of regency, composed of the duke of *Cumberland*, and the principal officers of state. The other royal personages who died this year, were *Frederic*, king of *Sweden*, and landgrave of *Hesse-Cassel*, who expired *April* the 6th; the prince of *Orange*, who was carried off in the 41st year of his age, *October* the 11th; and *Louisa*, queen of *Denmark*, youngest daughter to his *Britannic* majesty, who died in the 27th year of her age, *December* the 19th. The prince of *Orange* left issue, the

\* His royal highness left behind him five sons, and three daughters, viz. princess *Augusta*, born *August* 11, 1737, and married in 1764, to the hereditary prince of *Brunswic*; *George* (our present most gracious sovereign) born *May* 24, 1738; *Edward*, duke of *York*, born *March* 14, 1739; princess *Elizabeth Caroline*, born *December* 30, 1740, since dead; prince *William Henry*, duke of *Gloucester*, born *November* 14, 1743; prince *Henry Frederic*, born *October* 27, 1745; princess *Louisa Anne*, since dead born *March* 8, 1749; and prince *Frederic William*, born *May* 13, 1750; the two last are since dead. The princess of *Wales*, at the time of her husband's death, was far advanced in her pregnancy, and she was afterwards delivered of a princess, named *Matilda*.

princess *Caroline*, and the count de *Buren*. The queen of *Denmark* left behind her one son, and three daughters. Many shocking crimes were committed this year. Miss *Blandy* poisoned her father; and one *Jefferies*, a young woman, with *Swan*, her lover, murdered her uncle. All these criminals were executed.

Q. In what state were foreign affairs at this time?

A. They continued nearly in their former situation. Most of the powers of *Europe* cultivated the arts of peace, while the *French* pushed their scheme of usurping the dominion of all *North-America*. In the mean time, the emperor and empress of *Germany* exerted their whole interest, in order to get their son, the archduke *Joseph*, elected king of the *Romans*; and in this they were assisted by his *Britannic* majesty, but opposed by the kings of *France* and *Prussia*.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this winter?

A. On the 14th of *November*. The supply for the service of the ensuing year amounted to about four millions sterling. Several acts were passed this session; one for enabling the government to purchase the charter of the *African* company, the trade of which was to be carried on by a committee of merchants of *London*, *Bristol*, and *Liverpool*; another for regulating places of public entertainment, and obliging all who kept them to take out a licence; a third for reducing a great number of the funds into one; a fourth vesting in the crown the forfeited estates in *Scotland*; and a fifth ordering murderers to be executed the day immediately after their condemnation, and their bodies to be dissected. The parliament rose the 26th *March*, and, in a few days after, his majesty set out for *Hanover*.

Q. What were the chief incidents of 1752?

A. Sir *Peter Warren* was chosen an alderman of *London*; but being informed, that this office was inconsistent with his post of admiral, he paid his fine of 500 l. and declined the intended honour, which was bestowed on *William Beckford*, Esq; afterwards lord-mayor. A most horrid practice prevailed at this time, viz. that of insuring ships for more than their real value, and afterwards burning or sinking them. For this crime one *Lancey*, a ship-builder,

was

was executed; and *Benson*, member for *Barnstable*, who had been concerned with him, fled his country. Immediately upon his majesty's return from *Germany*, which happened on the 18th of *November*, the earl of *Harcourt*, governor, and the bishop of *Norwich* (late of *London*) preceptor to the prince of *Wales*, resigned their places, which were conferred upon the earl of *Waldegrave*, and the bishop of *Peterborough*. A misunderstanding happend at this time between the courts of *London* and *Berlin*, concerning the principality of *East Friesland*; in consequence of which his *Prussian* majesty stopped payment of the *Silesia* loan to the *English* proprietors. He afterwards published a paper in vindication of his conduct, entitled, *An Exposition of the Motives*; but this was so strongly answered by the *British* court, that his *Prussian* majesty candidly gave up the point.

Q. When did the parliament meet this winter?

A. Not till the 11th of *January*, 1753. The supply for the service of the current year was 2,132,707 l. 17s. 2½ d. The national debt at this time amounted to 74,368,415 l. 15 s. 1 d. Two remarkable bills passed this session; one to permit persons professing the *Jewish* religion to be naturalized by parliament; another for preventing clandestine marriages. Both these acts were extremely unpopular. The former was repealed the succeeding session; the latter continues still in force. The parliament broke up on the 7th of *June*,

Q. What were the other transactions of 1753.

A. Sir *Hans Sloane's* collection of curiosities, together with his library, was purchased by the public for 20,000 l. and the *Harleian* collection of manuscripts for 10,000 l. These two, being joined to the *Cottonian* and royal libraries were converted into the *Museum*, which is now to be seen at *Montague-house*, under the direction of its trustees and governors. This year was distinguished by the romantic affair of *Elizabeth Canning*, a young woman, who pretended, that on *New-year's day*, she had been seized, under *Bedlam-wall*, by two men, who tore off her clothes, put a gag in her mouth, and carried her to *Enfield-wash*; where she was robbed of her stays, and confined for a month, without any other sustenance than a few stale crusts of bread, and about a gallon of water; and that all these hardships



hardships were imposed upon her, in order to make her turn prostitute. One *Mary Squires*, a gipsy, was tried and condemned for robbing *Canning* of her stays; but was afterwards reprieved, and indulged with a pardon: and *Canning* herself, being tried for perjury, was found guilty upon the clearest evidence, and transported for life. On the 7th of *June*, *Dr. Cameron*, brother to the famous rebel *Lochiel*, was executed at *Tyburn* for high-treason. Tumults were raised at this time at *Bristol*, *Leeds*, and in other parts of the kingdom, on account of the exportation of corn, and the high price of provisions; nor could they be suppressed, without the interposition of the military power. This year was founded a society for the encouragement of arts, manufactures, and commerce; an excellent and patriotic institution, which has already produced, and it is to be hoped, will continue to produce, the greatest national advantages.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. On the 15th of *November*. The whole supply amounted to 2,797,916 l. 10 s. 2 d. The session ended the 6th of *April*. Soon after, the parliament was dissolved by proclamation, and writs were issued for summoning a new one.

Q. What were the most memorable events of 1754?

A. In the beginning of *March* died *Henry Pelham*, Esq; first lord of the Treasury, who had long been considered as prime minister, and who, though a whig in principle, was yet so moderate in his conduct, that he was equally esteemed by both parties. He was succeeded as first commissioner of the Treasury, by his brother, the duke of *Newcastle*; and *Sir Thomas Robinson* was appointed secretary of state. In the spring of this year, some disputes arose between the government of *Great Britain*, and the House of Commons in *Ireland*, on the delicate subject of privilege and prerogative; but, by the prudence of the *English* ministry, all differences were happily composed.

Q. What was the state of the *British* affairs in *America* at this time?

A. Ever since the peace of *Aix-la-Chapelle* in 1748, and even long before that period, the *French* had been endeavouring, and with too much success, to strip the *English*

*glifh* of all their poffeffions in *North-America*. With this view, they had debauched from the *Britifh* intereft the *Indians*, called the *Six Nations*. Thefe and other favages they had infligated, by prefents and promifes, to exercife all kinds of cruelty upon the *Englifh* planters; and they had even offered a reward of three pounds fterling for every *Englifh* fcalp that was brought in by a *Canadian*. In 1746, the *Acadians*, or *French* neutrals, had joined openly with the *Canadians*; and they, foon after, made an attempt, though without fuccefs, upon the infant colony of *Hallifax*. Upon the conclufion of the peace, commiffaries were appointed by *Great Britain* and *France*, for fettling the limits of their refpective poffeffions in *North-America*; but the *French* geographers had arbitrarily contrived boundaries, marked out rivers, and given names to nations in fuch a manner, as to exclude the *Englifh* almoft entirely from *Nova Scotia*. In 1751, the *French* neutrals burnt the little town of *Dartmouth*, on the other fide of *Chebueto-bay*, where they killed and fcalped a great number of *Britifh* fubjects. In the mean time the *French* were extending their encroachments in other parts of *America*; and they built a long chain of forts, fuch as *Crown-Point*, fort *du Quefne*, fort *Frontinac*, &c. upon grounds which belonged either to the *Britifh* crown, or to the *Britifh* *Indians*. The *Englifh* planters had tamely connived at the building of thefe forts; and fome of them were even built before it was fo much as known that they were begun. In a word, it appeared from the whole proceedings of the *French* in *North-America*, that they had formed a regular and well concerted plan for making themfelves mafters of all that part of the world. Repeated complaints of thefe encroachments had been made by the *Britifh* miniftry to the court of *Versailles*; but no regard was paid to their remonftrances. They therefore refolved to adopt more vigorous meafures. Major *Washington* was fent, with a fmall body of troops, to diflodge the *French* from a fettlement, which they had made upon the *Ohio*; but he was defeated, with the lofs of the beft part of his men. Inftitutions were then tranfmitted to the *Britifh* governors in *America*, to form a fort of political confederacy, and to repel force by force; but fuch was  
the

the jealousy, which at that time prevailed among the different colonies, that it was found extremely difficult to effect the wished-for union.

Q. What was the state of the *British* affairs in the *East-Indies*?

A. The *French* had been long carrying on the same designs in the *East*, as in the *West-Indies*; and the *British* interest in the former part of the world, was reduced to the lowest ebb, when, in 1751 and 1752, it was suddenly, and almost miraculously, restored by the prudent conduct and undaunted courage of Mr. (now lord) *Clive*. This gentleman, the son of an attorney in *London*, had entered into the service of the *East-India* company, only as a writer, and was considered as a person but very indifferently qualified for succeeding in any civil station. He now offered his service in a military capacity; and, though totally unacquainted with the art of war, he defeated the *French*, and the *French Indians*, in several pitched battles; and being assisted by major *Laurence*, who had lately come over from *England*, he pushed on his conquests with such incredible rapidity, that the enemy were glad to sue for a peace. Accordingly a convention was concluded in *November* 1753, between the *English* and the *French East-India* companies. The affairs of the *French* in that part of the world were managed by Mr. *Dupleix*, governor of *Pondicherry*; and several *Nabobs*, or petty princes of the country, shared in the war.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. The hereditary prince of *Hesse-Cassel*, consort to the princess *Mary* of *England*, turned papist; to the great grief of his father, and the astonishment of all the protestant courts of *Europe*. In *Spain*, the *British* interest was powerfully supported by Mr. *Wall*, the prime-minister, who had been ambassador in *England*; while the *Portuguese*, in hopes of improving their trade by quarrelling with *Great Britain*, imposed the most cruel hardships upon the *English* merchants settled in *Portugal*; but matters were at last suffered to return into their natural channel. Robberies and murders were very frequent at this time; but they were afterwards checked by means of a police, or plan of civil government, consisting not in the exercise of arbitrary

trary power, but in the strict execution of laws already in force. This plan was drawn up in 1754, by the late-celebrated *Henry Fielding*, Esq; and has been since happily executed by his brother and successor, Sir *John Fielding*.

Q. When did the new parliament assemble?

A. The elections had been carried on with the utmost unanimity in all parts of the kingdom, except in *Oxfordshire*, where great disturbances happened. The session was opened the 31st day of *May*, by the duke of *Cumberland*, and other lords, under commission from his majesty; and the controverted elections were no sooner determined, than the parliament was prorogued. It met again on the 14th of *November*. The supply for the service of the ensuing year amounted to 4,673,779 l. part of which was to be raised by a lottery. One million of this sum was expressly allotted for enabling his majesty to augment his forces both by sea and land. The parliament rose the 25th of *April*, when his majesty declared his intention of visiting his *German* dominions.

Q. What were the principal occurrences of 1755?

A. As a war with *France* was now unavoidable, major-general *Braddock* was sent to *North-America*, with a body of regular forces, who were there to be joined by the provincial troops. *Braddock* was a man of courage, but haughty, positive, and difficult of access; qualities ill suited to the temper of the people, among whom he was to command. Upon his arrival in *America*, he set out at the head of about 2000 men against the *French* forts on the *Ohio*; but, when he had advanced within ten miles of fort *duquesne*, he was suddenly attacked by an ambuscade of the enemy, who gave him a total defeat. *Braddock* himself, Sir *Peter Halket*, the greatest part of the officers, and about one half the common soldiers, perished in the engagement. Governor *Shirley*, now made a general, was equally unsuccessful, though not so unfortunate. He had marched with a good body of troops against the *French* fort at *Niagara*, but he failed in the attempt; and even his retreat might have been rendered very precarious, had not Mr. *Johnson*, a native of *Ireland*, who had long resided in *America*, obtained, with about 5000 provincials, a complete victory over the *French* near *Lake George*;

*George*; where baron *Dieskau*, their commander, was wounded, and taken prisoner. At the same time colonel *Monckton* drove the *French*, with great bravery, out of all their forts in the bay of *Fundy*; and obliged 15,000 *Acadians*, or *French* neutrals, to deliver up their arms. Still, however, the most incurable jealousies prevailed among the *English* colonies in *North-America*; and nothing could persuade them to adopt the excellent measure, which was proposed at *Albany*; viz. that of resolving all the governments into a kind of political republic, under one head.

Q. What were the naval transactions of this year?

A. Advice being received at *London*, that, notwithstanding the pacific professions of the *French* court, a large squadron of ships of war, with a good number of land-forces on board, was ready to sail from *Brest* and *Rochfort*, for *America*, under the command of *M. de la Motte*; admiral *Boscarwen* was sent out with a strong fleet, in order to intercept them. The duke *de Mirepoix*, the *French* ambassador in *England*, was no sooner informed of this circumstance, than he publickly declared, that the first gun, which should be fired, would kindle a war throughout all *Europe*. This menace, however, far from intimidating the *English* ministry, served only to sharpen their resentment, and to make them redouble their warlike preparations. Admiral *Boscarwen* fell in with the *French* fleet on the banks of *Newfoundland*; and, though he was prevented by a thick fog from discovering and attacking their whole squadron, he yet made prize of two of their ships of the line, the *Lys* and *Alcide*, which were taken by captain, afterwards lord, *Howe*, and captain *Andrews*. At the same time orders were issued by the *British* ministry for making reprisals general, in *Europe* as well as in *America*; and for bringing all *French* ships, whether outward or homeward bound, into *English* ports: and these orders were executed with such spirit and punctuality, that before the end of the year, 300 of the enemy's merchant ships, and about 800 of their sailors, were taken. The *French* exclaimed against these captures, which they were pleased to term piracies; but all reasonable men allowed, that they were no more than a proper retaliation for the hostilities, which the *French* had committed in *America*;

and that the 'conduct of the *English* was as justifiable as it was prudent.

Q. In what state were the affairs of the continent at this time?

A. The *French* monarch, among the other plans he had formed for distressing the *English*, made no secret of his design of attacking his majesty's *German* dominions. These countries evidently had no sort of connexion with the matters, which gave rise to the war; but being subject to the same sovereign with *England*, the *French* imagined his majesty might be terrified into a relaxation of his rights in *America*, to preserve *Hanover* from the calamities with which it was threatened. Their politics, however, in this instance, proved as unsuccessful as they were unjust. His majesty refused to make any abatement of his claims in *America*: he took other methods for preserving the peace of *Germany*. The *British* subjects, by their representatives, not more generously than reasonably, resolved to defend the *Hanoverians*, if attacked in their quarrel. To answer this purpose, his majesty entered into a subsidy-treaty with the empress of *Russia*; in virtue of which she was to hold in readiness 55,000 men, and forty or fifty galleys, to be employed as the king of *Great Britain* should think proper to direct. The alliance with *Russia* was chosen for reasons, which were then sufficiently plausible; though it is to be hoped they will never exist again. The misunderstanding, which had so long subsisted between the king of *Prussia* and *England*, and the close connexion of that prince with the court of *Versailles*, raised no ill-grounded apprehensions, that he might be induced to act a dangerous part on this occasion. *Russia* was, therefore, a proper ally, who was both a political and personal enemy to that monarch, and who would not fail to employ a formidable power against him. But this system was, in a short time, totally reversed. The two empresses of *Germany* and *Russia* had formed a design of making a partition of his *Prussian* majesty's dominions. The king of *Poland*, as elector of *Saxony*, acceded to this treaty; but his *Britannic* majesty, though often invited, refused to agree to such an iniquitous project. The king of *Prussia* was no sooner informed of these circumstances,

cumstances, than he publicly declared, that he would draw his sword against any foreign troops (*French* as well as others) who should presume to enter *Germany*. Matters were, therefore, very soon explained between their *Britannic* and *Prussian* majesties; and a treaty was concluded between these two monarchs, to keep all foreigners out of that country. These treaties with *Russia* and *Prussia* were censured as inconsistent with each other; but, in reality, nothing could be more consistent, as they aimed precisely at the same object, namely, the opposing the schemes projected by *France*, for disturbing the peace of *Germany*. If, however, there was something unexpected in the alliance between *Great Britain* and *Prussia*, it was soon followed by another alliance of a nature infinitely more surprizing. This was a treaty offensive and defensive between the courts of *Vienna* and *Versailles*. By this extraordinary revolution, the whole political system of *Europe* assumed a new face. The contest was now no longer, as formerly, between the rival houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon*; but between those of *Austria* and *Prussia*. The treaty between their *Britannic* and *Prussian* majesties was highly acceptable to all those who wished well to the protestant interest in *Europe*. At the same time his majesty entered into another treaty with the landgrave of *Hesse-Cassel*, for taking into *British* pay 8000 *Hessians*; and this number was afterwards increased to 12,000.

Q. When did the parliament meet this year?

A. On the 15th of *November*, when his majesty acquainted them with the measures he had taken. Several changes were now made in the ministry. Sir *Thomas Robinson* resigning the seals as secretary of state, his majesty delivered them to Mr. *Fox*, who was succeeded, as secretary at war, by lord viscount *Barrington*. Mr. *Pitt*, and some others, were removed from their places; and Sir *George Littleton* succeeded Mr. *Legge* as chancellor of the Exchequer, and a lord of the treasury. A little before this, *viz.* on the 1st of *November*, there happened a most dreadful earthquake, which shook all *Spain* and *Portugal*, and many other parts of *Europe*; and laid the city of *Lisbon* in ruins. Nothing could be more tremendous than the spectacle, which that city presented to view. About 10,000 persons

perished on the occasion; but the *English*, then resident in *Lisbon*, suffered the least of any of the inhabitants. His majesty was no sooner informed of this terrible calamity, than he imparted it to the parliament, who, with a generosity truly noble, voted a gift of 100,000 *l.* for the assistance of the distressed people of *Portugal*. What enhanced the merit of this gift, was, that, though the *English* were themselves, at that very time, in great want of grain, a considerable part of the sum was remitted in corn, flour, rice, and *Irish* beef; supplies, which came very seasonably for the poor *Portuguese*; and for which the king of *Portugal* returned his thanks, in the warmest terms, to the *British* crown and nation. The number of seamen (including mariners) for the service of the ensuing year, was fixed at 50,000; that of the land-forces, at 34,263, besides ten new regiments of foot, and eleven troops of light dragoons, that were voted to be raised. 115,000 *l.* were granted as a reward for the services done by the people of certain colonies of *North-America*; and 5000 *l.* as a gratuity to Mr. *William Johnson*, who was created a knight and bart. The whole supply amounted to 7,229,117 *l.* 4 *s.* 6  $\frac{1}{2}$  *d.* The land tax was 4 *s.* in the pound. The parliament rose on the 30th of *May*.

Q. What were the principal events of 1756?

A. As the *French* threatened *Great-Britain* with an invasion, his majesty demanded of the empress queen, the auxiliary troops which were stipulated to him by treaty; but these were refused upon the most frivolous pretences. He then made a like demand upon the states-general, and met with a like refusal. Some proposed, that a regular and well-disciplined militia should be raised for the security of the kingdom; but as this experiment could not be immediately tried, and the present juncture would admit of no delay, a body of *Hessians* and *Hanoverians* was brought over for the defence of the island. The *French*, instead of invading *Great-Britain*, made a descent upon *Minorca* with a body of 16,000 men under the duke de *Richelieu*, escorted by a fleet of twelve ships of the line, and five frigates, commanded by M. de la *Gallisoniere*. The troops were no sooner landed than *Richelieu* laid siege to fort *St. Philip*, which was defended by a small garrison, under general *Blakeney*. The *British* ministry, being informed of these particulars, dispatched



patched admiral *Byng*, with ten ships of the line, to the relief of *Minorca*. On the 9th day of *May*, *Byng* came to an engagement with *Gallisoniere's* squadron off *Cape Mola*; but neither side behaved with any great spirit. *Fort St. Philip* surrendered the 28th of *June*; and general *Blakeney* was created a lord for his bravery. *Byng* was superseded by the admirals *Hawke* and *Saunders*, was sent home in arrest, was confined to *Greenwich-Hospital*, was tried for misconduct, and condemned to be shot; and this sentence was actually executed on the 14th of *March* of the ensuing year, on board the *Monarque* man of war at *Portsmouth*. By this time, *Great-Britain* and *France* had mutually declared war against each other: the former, on the 18th of *May*; the latter on the 9th of *June*. In *America* the forts of *Oswego* and *Ontario* were taken by the *French*, under the marquis *de Montcalm*, notwithstanding all the efforts of lord *Loudon*, who commanded the *English* forces in that part of the world. In the *East Indies*, *Calcutta* was taken by the nabob of *Bengal*, who shut up the *English* garrison in a place called the *Black-hole*; where of 146 persons, who were confined in it, 123 miserably perished, for want of fresh air and water. This loss, however, was, in some measure, compensated by the reduction of *Geriab*, the residence of the famous pirate, *Angria*, which was taken by the brave vice-admiral *Watson*, and the gallant colonel *Clive*. *Calcutta* too was soon after recovered from the enemy. In *Germany*, the king of *Prussia* made himself master of *Dresden*. He afterwards defeated the *Austrians* at *Lozoweschutz*; and he surpris'd, at *Pirna*, about 16,000 *Saxons*, most of whom he compelled to enter into his service. Great alterations were now made in the *English* ministry. The duke of *Devonshire* was appointed first lord of the Treasury; earl *Temple*, first lord of the Admiralty; Mr. *Legge*, chancellor of the Exchequer; and the duke of *Bedford*, lord-lieutenant of *Ireland*. Lord *Hardwicke* resign'd the great-seal, which was put in commission; and soon after *William Pitt* Esq; was declared one of his majesty's principal secretaries of state, in the room of *Henry Fox*, Esq. About this time a public subscription was set on foot by Sir *John Fielding*, by which 400 young vagrants were cloathed, and sent on board the king's ships. Soon after, was founded, by a

number of publick-spirited merchants in *London*, the *Marine Society*; which, during the course of the war, supplied the navy with about 10,000 men and boys. The fear of an invasion having now subsided, the *Hanoverians* were sent back to their own country; and they were, soon after, followed by the *Hessians*.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. On the 2d of *December*. The number of seamen was fixed at 55,000; that of the land-forces at 49,749. 50,000*l.* were granted for the *Americans*, and 20,000*l.* for the *East-India* company. The whole supply for the service of the year 1757, amounted to 8,350,325*l.* 9*s.* 3*d.* The land-tax was 4*s.* in the pound; and an additional duty was laid on news-papers, advertisements, &c. Among the laws enacted this session, was the militia-bill, which was brought in by general *George Townshend*, eldest son of the lord viscount *Townshend*; and which, to the great joy of every well-wisher to his country, passed through both houses, and received the royal assent. By this act the number of militia-men for *England* and *Wales* was settled at 32,340. The session ended on the 4th of *July*.

Q. What were the most remarkable incidents of 1757?

A. In *April*, *Mr. Pitt*, secretary of state, and *Mr. Legge*, chancellor of the Exchequer, were removed from their employments. Such was the popularity of these two worthy patriots, that the whole nation seemed to rise up, as one man, in vindication of their honour. The city of *London*, and most of the corporations in the kingdom, presented them with the freedom of their respective societies, in golden boxes. In a word, the popular clamour became so loud and universal, that *Mr. Pitt* and *Mr. Legge* were restored to their places. At the same time, the duke of *Newcastle* was appointed first lord of the Treasury; lord *Anson*, first lord of the Admiralty; and *Mr. Fox*, pay-master of the forces. *Sir Robert Henley* was declared lord-keeper of the great-seal; the privy-seal was given to earl *Temple*.

Q. What were the naval transactions of this year?

A. An expedition was undertaken against the coast of *France*. The fleet consisted of eighteen ships of the line; the land-forces of ten regiments of foot. The former was commanded by *Sir Edward Hawke*; the latter by *Sir John Mordaunt*.

*Mordaunt*. The design miscarried; the army having done nothing but demolish a fort in the little island of *Aix*. Sir *John Mordaunt* was tried for his conduct in this enterprize, and acquitted. Captain *Death*, in the *Ferrible* privateer, maintained a desperate engagement with a *French* ship of much superior force, called the *Vengeance* privateer of *St. Maloes*. Captain *Death* was killed, with all his crew, (amounting to 200 men) except twenty-six, who were grievously wounded. The crew of the *French* ship met nearly with the same fate. Captain *Gilchrist* likewise, in the *Southampton* man of war, fought five *French* privateers, with the most heroic courage. The *Antigallican* privateer took the duke of *Pentbievre* *Indiaman*, valued at 200,000 *l.* but this ship being carried into a *Spanish* harbour, was, by the court of *Madrid*, perfidiously restored to the enemy. Three *English* *East-India* ships fought two *French* men of war, and obliged them to sheer off. In the *West-Indies*, however, the *Greenwich* man of war of fifty guns, and a frigate of twenty, fell into the hands of the enemy. Admiral *Holbourne* blocked up *Louisburgh*; but afterwards met with a terrible hurricane, which did great damage to his fleet.

Q. What passed in *Germany*?

A. An army of observation was formed for the protection of *Hanover*, which the *French* were preparing to invade. The army of observation, consisting of thirty-seven battalions, and thirty-four squadrons, was commanded by the duke of *Cumberland*: the *French* army, amounting to seventy battalions, and forty squadrons, with fifty-two pieces of cannon, was conducted, first by marshal *D'Etrées*, and afterwards by the duke de *Richolieu*. The enemy attacked his royal highness, in his passage over the *Weser*; but were repulsed with some loss. They afterwards fought him in a pitched battle at *Hastenbeck*, where they laid claim to the honour of the victory. His royal highness retreated with a view to cover *Bremen* and *Verden*; and to keep open his communication with *Stade*, whither the archives, &c. of *Hanover* had been removed. At last, he was hemmed in, in such a manner, that he was obliged to agree to the famous convention of *Closter Seven*, for securing the neutrality of *Hanover*; by which the allied forces laid down their arms,

and were distributed into quarters of cantonment. In *October*, his royal highness returned from *Germany*, when he resigned all his military employments; and the first regiment of guards was given to Sir *John*, now lord *Ligonier*. Soon after, the *French*, having violated the convention of *Closter-Seven*, by committing the most shocking outrages in the electorate of *Hanover*, the allied troops resumed their arms, under the command of the brave prince *Ferdinand of Brunswick*. With regard to the operations of the *Prussians*, the prince of *Bevern*, in the month of *April*, defeated the *Austrians* under count *Konigseg*, at *Recchenberg*. The king of *Prussia* obtained a complete victory over count *Brown*, and prince *Charles* of *Lorraine*, in the neighbourhood of *Prague*. Count *Brown* was mortally wounded. His majesty then laid siege to *Prague*; but being worsted by count *Daun*, at *Collin*, he was obliged to abandon the enterprize. Nevertheless, on the 5th of *November*, with a force not exceeding 20,000 men, he defeated, at *Rosbach*, an army of 65,000 *French* and *Imperialists*; 3000 of whom were killed upon the spot, and about 8000 taken prisoners. The loss of the *Prussians*, in killed and wounded, amounted only to about 500. On the same day of the following month, he beat count *Daun* at *Lissa*, slew 6000 *Austrians*, and made upwards of 20,000 of them prisoners. His own loss consisted only in 500 killed, and about 2,300 wounded. Soon after, he retook *Breslaw* and *Schweidnitz*, which the enemy had reduced. Count *Daun*, however, defeated the prince of *Bevern* near *Breslaw*, and took him prisoner. By this time the *Suedes* and *Russians* had invaded the *Prussian* territories; but were obliged to evacuate them by the bravery of marshall *Lehwald*, who attacked the *Russian* camp at *Norkitten*, where 10,000 of the enemy were slain.

Q. What happened in the other parts of the world?

A. In *America*, *M. de Montcalm* took *Fort William Henry*, where the most shocking barbarities were committed by the *Indians* in the *French* service. In the *East-Indies*, the brave colonel *Clive*, assisted by admiral *Watson*, deposed *Suraja Dowla*, nabob of *Bengal*, and advanced *Jaffier Ali Cawn* in his place. By this revolution, the *East-India* company, *Mr. Clive*, and all the officers gained immense riches. Soon after, admiral *Watson* dying, was succeeded in command by

rear-

rear admiral *Pocock*. *January* the 6th, one *Damien*, an obscure fellow, who appears to have been disordered in his senses, stabbed the *French* king in the breast with a knife. The wound did not prove mortal; but *Damien* was put to death with the most exquisite tortures. *December* the 28th, died the princess *Caroline Elizabeth*, third daughter of his *Britannic* majesty; a lady possessed of every amiable virtue.

Q. When did the parliament meet this year?

A. *December* the 1st. The number of land forces for the service of the year 1758, was fixed at 53,777 men; the number of seamen at 60,000. The whole supplies amounted to 10,486,457 *l.* 1 *d.* The land-tax was 4 *s.* in the pound. A duty of 1 *s.* was laid upon every dwelling-house in *Great-Britain*. And 500,000 *l.* were to be raised by a lottery. Bills were passed for repairing *London-Bridge*, prohibiting the exportation of corn, regulating the price and assize of bread, &c. A new treaty was concluded with the king of *Prussia*, which was signed by most of the privy-counsellors. The session ended the 9th of *June*.

Q. What were the principal events of 1758?

A. Captain *Lockhart*, of the *Tartar* man of war, took a great number of *French* privateers; for which he was rewarded with a splendid piece of plate, by the merchants of *London*; and with a gold cup by those of *Bristol*. Captain *Forrest* of the *Augusta*, with the *Dreadnought* and *Edinburgh*, fought a *French* fleet of four ships of the line, and three frigates, and obliged them to sheer off. Soon after, with his own single ship, he made prize of nine merchant vessels in the neighbourhood of *Hispaniola*. The *Foudroyant* man of war, with the *French* admiral *Du Quesne* on board, was taken by the gallant captain *Gardiner*, of the *Monmouth*, who lost his life in the engagement. The *Orpheus* and *Raisable* men of war were likewise taken. The *Belliqueux*, a *French* ship of the line, surrendered to captain *Saunarez*. About the same time, commodore *Holmes* recovered the town of *Emden*, which had fallen into the hands of the enemy. The commodores *Keppel* and *Tyrrel*, with the captains *Dennis*, *Harvey*, *Falkener*, and others, distinguished themselves in the sea-service. The joy, however, arising from our successes, was considerably damped by a terrible disaster that befell the prince *George*

ship of war, commanded by rear-admiral *Broderic*. She was burnt in her passage to the *Mediterranean*. The admiral, and the captain, and about 300 of the crew, were saved; but 500 of them perished miserably in the ocean. This summer, *Thurot*, in the marshal *Belleisle* privateer, made a great many captures off the coast of *Scotland*; but always treated his prisoners with remarkable humanity. An expedition was undertaken against the coast of *France*. The fleet was commanded by the admirals *Anson* and *Hawke*, and commodore *Howe*: the land forces by the duke of *Marlborough*. The troops were landed at *Cancalle*, near *St. Maloes*. They were too weak to reduce that town; but they destroyed about 100 sail of shipping in the harbour. Soon after, another descent was made upon the *French* coast. The land forces were commanded by general *Bligh*; the fleet by commodore *Howe*, with whom prince *Edward*, now duke of *York*, entered himself as a volunteer, in order to learn the rudiments of the sea service. The troops were landed at *Cberburg*, where they destroyed its famous bastion and fortification, and burnt all the ships in the harbour. They likewise took about twenty pieces of brass cannon, which were afterwards lodged in the tower of *London*. The fleet then sailed towards *St. Malces*, and the troops landed in the neighbourhood of that place. They penetrated a good way into the country; but being attacked, while they were re-imbarking at *St. Cas*, by the duke d'*Aiguillon*, governor of *Brittany*, about 600 of them were killed, and 400 taken prisoners. Among the former were Sir *John Armitage* of *Yorkshire*, and general *Drury*, who, being dangerously wounded, ran into the sea, where he perished. In *Africa*, the *English* took *Senegal* and *Goree*. The conquest of the former was originally projected by Mr. *Cumming*, a quaker, who superintended the enterprize. The latter was reduced by commodore *Keppel*. In the *East-Indies*, admiral *Pocock* beat monsieur d'*Apché*, the *French* commodore; but fort *St. David's* was taken by the enemy under Mr. *Lally*, who has since been executed at *Paris*. In the *West-Indies*, *Louisburgh* was besieged by the *English*. The fleet was commanded by admiral *Boscawen*; the land forces by general *Amberst*. The place surrendered on the 27th of *July*; and the garrison, consisting of 5637 men, were

made prisoners of war. Five ships of the line were destroyed in the harbour, and one taken. General *Wolfe* distinguished himself greatly on this occasion. The *English* were less successful in *America*. General *Abercrombie* advanced towards *Ticonderago*, in his march to which the gallant lord *Howe* was slain. He attacked the *French* intrenchments at that place; but with such bad success, that he was obliged to retire with the loss of 2000 men. He afterwards dispatched colonel *Bradstreet*, with about 3000 provincials, against fort *Frontinac*, which he took, and demolished. In another quarter, general *Forbes* marched against fort *du Quesne*, which the *French* abandoned. Having changed the name of the place into that of *Pittsburgh*, in honour of Mr. secretary *Pitt*, he returned to *Philadelphia*, where he soon after died; his constitution having been broken by the fatigue of the expedition.

Q. What were the transactions of the war in *Germany*?

A. The *French* were masters of *Hanover*; and, indeed, they acted, in every respect, as the absolute sovereigns of that country. They appointed commissioners for collecting the public revenues, and took several other steps for deriving advantage from their own conquests. Prince *Ferdinand*, however, who had now re-assembled the allied army, resolved to drive them from the electorate. In this he was greatly assisted by his nephew, the hereditary prince of *Brunswick*, who distinguished himself remarkably by his courage and conduct. This young hero reduced *Hoya* and *Minden*; soon after which the *French* evacuated the whole country of *Hanover*. Upon their retreat from that city, the duke *de Randan*, the *French* governor, with a generosity truly noble, instead of burning his magazine of provisions, according to the usual practice of war, caused it either to be sold at a low price, or distributed *gratis* among the poor inhabitants. On the 23d day of *June*, prince *Ferdinand* obtained, at *Crevelt*, a complete victory, over the count *de Clermont*, who had succeeded marshal *Richelieu* in the command of the *French* army. This campaign proved fatal to the duke of *Marlborough*, who, on the 20th of *September*, died at *Munster* in *Germany*, universally lamented. The king of *Prussia* invested *Olmutz*, but was obliged, by count *Daun*, to raise the siege. On the 25th of *August*, his

majesty defeated the *Russians* under general *Fermer* at *Zorn-dorf*, where the enemy are said to have lost 21,529 men. The loss of the *Prussians* did not exceed 2000. Immediately after this battle, the *Russians* evacuated the *Prussian* dominions; and their example was followed by the *Swedes*. *October* the 14th, marshal *Daun* surprized the *Prussian* camp at *Hockbirchen*, where 7000 *Prussians* were killed upon the spot, among whom were prince *Francis* of *Brunswic*, and field-marshal *Keith*.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. Prince *Charles* of *Saxony* was elected duke of *Courland*; and the empress of *Germany* received, from the pope, the title of apostolical queen of *Hungary*. A conspiracy was formed against the life of his *Portuguese* majesty, who, on the night of *September* the 3d. was attacked by two *russians*, and dangerously wounded. In *England*, a few rioters were hanged for obstructing the militia-act; and about the same time, the temporary wooden-bridge over the *Thames*, built for the convenience of passengers, whilst the workmen should be employed in widening and repairing *London-bridge*, was burnt by some villains. Dr. *Florence Hensley*, being convicted of acting as a spy for the *French* ministry, was condemned to death; but was afterwards pardoned, on condition of his going into perpetual exile. Dr. *Skebbiare*, for writing a libellous pamphlet, intitled a *Sixth Letter* to the people of *England*, was sentenced to stand in the pillory, to pay a small fine, to be imprisoned three years, and to give security for his future good behaviour. In *May* was instituted, upon a plan drawn up by Sir *John Fielding*, the *Asylum*, or house of refuge, near *Westminster-bridge*, for orphan girls, from the age of ten to thirteen years, residing within the bills of mortality, whose settlements cannot be found. And, in *August* following, was opened the *Magdalen-House*, in *Prescot-street*, *Goodman's fields*, for the reception of penitent prostitutes. These excellent charities are, both of them, supported by voluntary contribution.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. *November* the 23d. The number of land and sea-forces were continued at their former establishments. The land-tax was 4 s. in the pound; at which rate it has continued ever since. The whole supply amounted to  
12,761,310 l.



12,761,310*l.* 19*s.* 5*d.* The session was closed on the 2d of *June* 1759.

Q. What were the most memorable events of 1759?

A. A great number of *French* ships were taken by the *English*: the *Bellona*, by captain *Hood*; the *Mignonne*, by captain *Elliot*; the count *de St. Florentin*, of sixty four guns, by captain *Barrington*; the *Duc de Chartres* of sixty guns, by captain *Faulkner*; and the *Danae* of forty guns, by the captains *Gilchrist* and *Hotbam*. Captain *Tyrrel* attacked three *French* men of war, and obliged them to sheer off. *Havre-de-Grace* was bombarded by rear-admiral *Rodney*. The squadron of *M. de la Clue* was defeated by the brave admiral *Boscawen*, who took or burnt four large men of war. But the most signal defeat which the enemy sustained, was that given them by the gallant admiral *Hawke*, who, on the 20th of *November*, attacked their fleet under *M. de Conflans*; took or sunk six of their capital ships; forced seven of them up the river *Vilaine*; and entirely dispersed the rest. This was one of the most glorious naval victories that ever was obtained in any war, or by any admiral. It defeated an invasion, which the *French* intended to have made upon *Great-Britain*; and it gave a finishing blow to the navy of *France*. Sir *Edward Hawke* received the thanks of both houses of parliament, and a pension of 2000*l.* a year was settled upon him and his son. In the *West-Indies*, commodore *Moore* and general *Hopson* made a fruitless attempt upon *Martinico*; but, in a little time after, the same commodore, and general *Barrington*, reduced the island of *Guadalupe*, together with those of *Desseada*, *Los Santos*, and *Marigalante*, which surrendered in *May*. In *America*, *Ticonderago* and *Crown-point* were taken by general *Amherst*; and *Niagara* by Sir *William Johnson*, who defeated the *French* in a pitched battle. But the most important conquest, that was made this campaign, and indeed during the whole war, was that of *Quebec*, the capital of the *French* empire in *North America*; which was taken by the heroic general *Wolfe*, who lost his life on the occasion. General *Monckton*, the second in command, was dangerously wounded. The place surrendered to general *Townshend*. The death of general *Wolfe* was lamented in *England* as a national loss; and a vote was passed, in the house

of commons, for erecting a monument to his memory in *Westminster-Abbey*. In the *East-Indies*, admiral *Pocock* obtained a fresh advantage over *M. D'Apché*. General *Lally* made an unsuccessful attempt upon *Madrafs*. He was afterwards defeated by the brave colonel *Coote*, who likewise reduced the whole province of *Arcot*.

Q. What happened in *Germany*?

A. Prince *Ferdinand* fought a drawn battle with the *French* under marshal *Broglio*, at *Bergen*, where the prince of *Isenburg* lost his life. He afterwards, on the first of *August*, attacked, at *Minden*, their whole army commanded by marshal *Contades*; and, after a fierce and obstinate dispute, obtained over it a complete victory. The enemy are said to have lost 10,000 men in this battle: the loss of the allies was very inconsiderable. The victory was chiefly owing to the extraordinary bravery of the *English* infantry and the *Hanoverian* guards. The hereditary prince of *Brunswick* performed several gallant exploits in the course of this campaign. The *Prussian* general *Wedel* was worsted by the *Russians* at *Zullichau*. His *Prussian* majesty himself was afterwards defeated by the same enemy at *Cunnersdorf*, with the loss of 20,000 men. The *Russians* lost about 10,000. At the conclusion of the campaign, the kings of *Great Britain* and *Prussia* made proposals for opening a congress in order to settle a general peace; but this invitation was not accepted by the enemy.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. *January* the 12th, died her royal highness, *Anne*, princess of *Orange*, eldest daughter to his *Britannic* majesty; a lady endued with the noblest accomplishments. The conspirators against the life of his *Portuguese* majesty were seized, tried, and executed. Among these were the duke of *Aveiro*; the marquis of *Tavora*, with his lady, and their two sons; and the count of *Attenuia*. The *Jesuits*, being concerned in this conspiracy, were expelled the kingdom. The king of *Spain* dying, was succeeded by his brother, *Don Carlos*, king of the two *Sicilies*, who appointed for his successor on the throne of the latter kingdom, his third son, *Don Ferdinand*; his eldest son, *Philip*, being declared an idiot. *June* the 4th, the prince of *Wales* (his present majesty) having entered the 22d year of his age, the anniversary

versary of his birth was celebrated with great rejoicings. Addresses of congratulation on the majority of the prince were presented to his majesty by the city of *London*, and by most of the corporations in the kingdom. *September* the 4th died, greatly lamented, the princess *Elizabeth Caroline*, second daughter to the late prince of *Wales*. Subscriptions were opened for raising soldiers, and great numbers enlisted. Large sums of money were likewise subscribed, for rewarding the *British* infantry, who had behaved so valiantly at *Minden* and *Quebec*: as also for supporting the widows and orphans of such as had fallen in those actions; and for cloathing the *French* prisoners:—all of them charities of the most excellent nature. The *Dutch* had long carried on a contraband trade with the *French*, and several of their ships had, on that account, been confiscated by the *English*. Some hostilities had likewise happened between the two nations in the *East-Indies*. Three of the most reputable members of the States-General now arrived in *England*, in order to settle these differences; and all disputes were, at last, compromised. Several shocking murders were committed about this time, and the criminals were brought to condign punishment. Among these were, *Halsey*, a ship-master, for murdering a sailor; *Darby* and his two sons, for whipping a sheriff's officer to death; *Mary Edmonson*, for cutting her aunt's throat in *Rotherhithe*; five *French* prisoners, for murdering *Jean de Munaux*, their countryman and fellow-prisoner; and *Eugene Aram*, for a murder he had committed in 1745. Two dreadful fires happened in *London* this year: the first in *November*, in the neighbourhood of the *Royal Exchange*, which consumed a great number of houses: the second in *December*, in *King-Street, Covent-Garden*, which destroyed no less than fifty houses. In the spring died the celebrated musician, *George Frederic Handel*. The crew of a ship, called the *Dolphin*, bound from the *Canaries* to *New-York*, were reduced to such extremity for want of provisions, that, after devouring their dog, cat, and all the shoes on board, they cast lots for their lives; and this falling on one *Antonia Galaxia*, a *Spanish* gentleman and passenger, they killed and eat him. They then lived twenty days on a pair of leather-breeches, and were proceeding

ceeding to cast lots a second time, when they were taken up by one captain *Bradshaw*.

Q. When did the parliament meet this year?

A. In *November*. The number of seamen for the service of the year 1760, was fixed at 70,000: that of the land-forces at 57,294. The sum total of the supplies amounted to 15,503,563 *l.* 15 *s.* 9½ *d.* The national debt, as it stood on the 11th of *January*, 1760, was 90,365,586 *l.* 8 *s.* 2¼ *d.* The session ended the 22d of *May*.

Q. What were the most remarkable transactions of 1760?

A. In *February*, the famous monsieur *Thurot* made a descent in *Ireland* with about 1000 men. He took *Carrickfergus*, and raised some contributions. He then re-imbarked his troops, and set sail for *France* with three frigates, which composed his whole fleet; but being attacked, near the *Ile of Man*, by the brave captain *Elliot*, with the same number of frigates, *Thurot* was killed, and all his ships taken. Captain *Skinner*, of the *Biddesford*, and captain *Kennedy* of the *Flamborough*, fought two *French* ships with great gallantry: captain *Skinner* lost his life in the action. The *Ramillies*, a ship of the line, was lost in the *Channel*; and all her crew, amounting to 700 men, perished on the occasion, except one midshipman, and twenty-five mariners. Captain *Byron*, of the ship *Fame*, destroyed, in the gulph of *St. Laurence*, three *French* frigates, with twenty-two schooners. In *America*, the *Cherokees* having committed hostilities upon the *English* settlements, colonel *Montgomery* marched against them, and ravaged their country with fire and sword. About the same time, the *French* invested *Quebec*, which was defended by a small garrison under general *Murray*. The general marched out, and gave the enemy battle; and though he was worsted in the engagement, he soon obliged them to abandon the siege with the utmost precipitation. In *September*, general *Amberst* reduced the town and island of *Montreal*, and thus completed the conquest of all *Canada*. This year a dangerous insurrection was raised in *Jamaica* by the negro slaves, who butchered a great number of the white inhabitants. The rebels, however, were at last subdued, and some of them brought to condign punishment. In the *East-Indies*, the gallant colonel *Coots* reduced *Pondicherry*, and obliged M.

*Lally*,

*Lally*, the *French* governour, to surrender himself and his garrison prisoners of war. Four *English* ships of the line were destroyed by a storm.

Q. What passed in *Germany*?

A. Several skirmishes happened between the *French* and the allies. The hereditary prince of *Brunswick* distinguished himself greatly in these rencounters. He was worsted, and even wounded, at *Corbach*; but he afterwards retrieved his honour by defeating general *Glaubitz*, at *Exdorf*, where *Elliot's* light-horse behaved with uncommon gallantry. He likewise obtained some advantages at *Zierenberg*, and other places. *July* the 31st was fought the glorious battle of *Warbourg*, between part of the allied army and the greatest part of the *French*; in which the latter were defeated with the loss of 1000 men killed, and as many wounded. The *English* forces, under the marquis of *Granby*, performed wonders on this occasion. In *June*, the *Austrian* general, *Laudohn*, defeated the *Prussians* under *Fouquet*, and reduced *Glatz*. The king of *Prussia* made an unsuccessful attempt upon *Dresden*. He afterwards obtained a complete victory over general *Laudohn*, at *Lignitz*, and compelled the enemy to raise the siege of *Schweidnitz*. In *October*, the *Russians* and *Austrians* penetrated into *Brandenburgh*, and made themselves masters of *Berlin*, where they committed the most shocking outrages. *November* the 3d, the king of *Prussia* fought a bloody battle with count *Daun*, at *Torgau*. The advantage remained with the *Prussians*. The loss was great on both sides. The king received a slight contusion in his breast, by a musket shot. Marshal *Daun* was dangerously wounded in the thigh. The armies were then put into winter quarters.

Q. What were the other occurrences of this year?

A. Lord *George Sackville*, being tried by a court-martial for his conduct in the battle of *Minden*, was declared incapable of serving his majesty for the future in any military capacity whatsoever. *William Andrew Horne* was executed for the murder of a child, which he had had by his own sister in 1724. In *April*, prince *Edward* was created duke of *York* and *Albany*, and earl of *Ulster*. *May* the 5th, *Laurence Shirley*, earl *Ferrers*, was executed at *Tyburn*, for the murder of Mr. *Johnson*, his steward. In *August*, *Francis David*  
Stirn,

*Stirn*, a *Hessian*, was condemned to die for the murder of one *Matthews*, a surgeon; but, before his execution, he put an end to his own life by poison. July the 3d, a dreadful fire broke out in his majesty's yard at *Portsmouth*. October 31, was laid the first stone of the new bridge, now building over the *Thames*, at *Black-Friars*. The crew of a ship, belonging to *Galway*, in *Ireland*, in their passage from *Norway* to their own country, were reduced to such distress for want of provisions, that they cast lots for their lives, and four of them were successively killed, and devoured by the rest. Four others died of famine and fatigue; so that, of the whole crew, consisting originally of nine persons, none survived but one man, called *Michael M Daniel*. One *Bruluman*, a silversmith, at *Philadelphia*, being determined to put an end to his life, and yet being afraid to do it with his own hand, resolved to commit some crime, which might get him hanged by the law. He accordingly shot one Mr. *Scull*, a person, whom he had never seen before; in consequence of which he was condemned, and executed.

Q. When did his late majesty die?

A. October the 25th, between seven and eight o'clock in the morning, in the 77th year of his age, and the 34th of his reign. He had risen at his usual hour, called his page, drank his chocolate, and inquired about the wind, as if anxious for the arrival of the foreign mails; soon after which he fell speechless on the ground, and being laid on the bed, expired in a few minutes. The immediate cause of his death was the rupture of the substance of the right ventricle of his heart, by which the circulation was instantly stopped.

Q. What is the character of his late majesty?

A. *George II.* was, in his person, rather lower than the middle size, well-shaped, straight, with eyes remarkably prominent, a high nose, and fair complexion. In his temper he is said to have been sudden and violent; but this, though it influenced his private behaviour, made no impression on his public conduct, which was always sufficiently deliberate, and attentive to his own interests and those of his subjects. His parts were not lively or brilliant; but the whole of his administration demonstrates, that he had a judgment both solid and comprehensive. His virtue was proved by two of  
the

the greatest trials to which human nature is subject; the trust of absolute and unlimited power; and the most exalted station, limited by the strictest laws. For these two, so very different situations, very different and almost opposite tempers and talents have been always thought necessary. But that king had a mind perfectly adapted to both; for, whilst, in *England*, he kept the liberties of his people inviolate, and, like a wise magistrate, was pleased to make his authority co-operate with law, and his will freely subservient to the wisdom of ages; in *Hanover*, like an indulgent father, acting only from the sentiments of a paternal heart, his affection and his equity supplied the want of law and constitution. He left, indeed, to his illustrious successor, an admirable example, which he has, hitherto, not only followed, but, in many respects, exceeded; and his subjects take the greater interest in his virtues, as they look upon them as more peculiarly their own; and they now boast of a prince, who neither has, nor can have any partiality but the best, and who is, in birth, as well as inclination, a *Briton*.

Q. How many children had *George II*?

A. By his queen, *Caroline*, he had two sons and five daughters, who attained the age of maturity: *Frederic*, prince of *Wales*, father to his present majesty, *George III*; *William*, duke of *Cumberland*; *Anne*, the princess royal, married to the late prince of *Orange*, and mother of the present stadtholder; *Mary*, landgravine of *Hessel-Cassel*; *Louisa*, late queen of *Denmark*; *Amelia* and *Caroline*, who were never married.

Q. Who were the most celebrated writers that appeared in *England* during this reign?

A. *Sherlock*, *Hoadley*, *Secker*, *Leland*, *Conybeare*, *Warburton*, and *Foster*, learned divines: *Maclaurin*, *Stuart*, and the two *Simpsons*, excellent mathematicians: *Huxham*, and *Pringle*, skilful physicians: *Hunter*, *Monro*, *Chefelden*, and *Sbarpe*, ingenious anatomists. The most eminent poets were *Young*, *Thomson*, *Akenside*, *Armstrong*, *Glover*, *Wilkie*, *Brown*, *Mallet*, *Home*, *Cibber*, *Hoadley*, *Mason*, *Gray*, the two *Whitebeads*, and the two *Wartons*. The earl of *Orrery* and lord *Littleton* distinguished themselves by their literary productions. The most remarkable historians were *Guthrie*, *Ralph*, *Carte*, *Smollett*, *Robertson*, and *Hume*. *Johnson* rendered

dered himself famous by his dictionary of the *English* language, and his admirable essays in the *Rambler*. The principal novel-writers were *Fielding*, *Smollett*, and *Richardson*; the last of whom, particularly in his *Clarissa* and *Grandison*, discovers a surprizing knowledge of human nature, and command over the passions. The art of music was successfully cultivated by *Handel*, *Geminiani*, *Green*, *Howard*, *Arne*, and *Boyce*. The most noted painters were *Hogarth*, *Hudson*, *Reynolds*, *Ramsay*, *Pyne*, *Wootton*, *Seymour*, *Lambert*, *Scot*, and the two *Smiths*. Many fair monuments of sculpture or *Ma-tuary* were raised by *Ryfbach*, *Roubilliac*, and *Wilton*.

## C H A P. L.

GEORGE III. LI<sup>th</sup> King of England,  
And Ninth of Great-Britain.

From 1760.

	<i>Pope.</i>		<i>King of Portugal.</i>	
CLEMENT XIII.	1758	JOSEPH	1750	
	<i>Emperors.</i>		<i>Kings of Denmark.</i>	
FRANCIS STEPHEN	1745	FREDERIC V.	1746	
JOSEPH II.	1765	CHRISTIAN VII.	1766	
	<i>King of France.</i>		<i>King of Sweden.</i>	
LEWIS XV.	1715	ADOLPHUS FREDERIC	1751	
	<i>King of Spain.</i>			
CHARLES III.	1759			

Q. WHO succeeded George II?

A. George III. his grandson, our present most gracious sovereign, and eldest son of *Frederic*, late prince of *Wales*. He ascended the throne in the 23d year of his age.

Q. What were the first acts of his reign?

A. *October* the 25th, (the very day on which the late king died) his majesty assembled the privy-council, at *Carleton-House*, and addressed them in the following terms:

“ The loss that I and the nation have sustained by the death of the late king, my grandfather, would have been severely



severely felt at any time ; but coming at so critical a juncture, and so unexpected, it is by many circumstances augmented ; and the weight now falling upon me much increased. I feel my own insufficiency to support it as I wish ; but, animated by the tenderest affection for this my native country, and depending on the advice, experience, and abilities of your lordships ; on the support and assistance of every honest man ; I enter with cheerfulness into this arduous situation ; and shall make it the business of my life to promote, in every thing, the glory and happiness of these kingdoms ; to preserve and strengthen the constitution, both in church and state : and, as I mount the throne in the midst of an expensive, but just and necessary war, I shall endeavour to prosecute it in the manner the most likely to bring about an honourable and lasting peace, in concert with my allies." This declaration was immediately published for the satisfaction of the nation. On *Sunday*, the 26th of *October*, his majesty was proclaimed, with the usual solemnities, at the *Royal-Exchange*, and in other parts of the capital, which resounded every where with joy and acclamations. Never prince, indeed, at the time of his accession, enjoyed a larger share of the public favour ; and never prince fulfilled more exactly the high expectations, which the people had entertained of him. Addresses of condolence and congratulation were presented to his majesty by the city of *London*, the two universities, and by most of the towns and corporations in the kingdom. *November 10*, the remains of the late king were interred, with great funeral pomp, in *Westminster-Abbey*, the duke of *Cumberland* walking as chief mourner on the occasion.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year ?

A. *November* the 18th, when his majesty made a most excellent speech to both houses, in which, among many other endearing expressions, were the following : " Born and educated in this country, I glory in the name of *Briton*. The civil and religious rights of my loving subjects are equally dear to me, with the most valuable prerogatives of my crown ; and, as the surest foundation of the whole, and the best means to draw down the divine favour on my reign, it is my fixed purpose to countenance and encourage the practice of true religion and virtue." The annual sum  
of

of 800,000*l.* was granted for the civil-list, *i. e.* for the support of his majesty's household, and of the honour and dignity of his crown; and this grant is to continue in force during his majesty's life. The number of seamen was fixed at 70,000; that of the land-forces, at 64,971. The land-tax was 4*s.* in the pound. An additional duty was laid upon beer; and a lottery was established for 600,000*l.* The whole supply for the service of the year 1761, amounted to 19,616,119*l.* 19*s.* 9½*d.* A bill was passed this session for securing the independency of the judges, by augmenting their salaries, and continuing them in the enjoyment of their offices, during their good behaviour, notwithstanding the demise of the sovereign, which formerly used to vacate their commissions. Another act was passed in favour of insolvent debtors. The parliament rose the 19th of *March*. It was soon after dissolved by proclamation; and writs were issued for electing a new one.

Q. What were the most remarkable events of 1761?

A. His majesty now proceeded to settle his ministry. The office of lord-high-chancellor was bestowed upon lord *Henley*, baron *Grange*. Lord *Bute* succeeded the earl of *Holderness* as secretary of state for the northern department: Mr. *Pitt* was the other secretary. The duke of *Newcastle* continued first lord of the Treasury; earl *Granville*, president of the council; lord *Anson*, first lord of the Admiralty; earl *Temple*, keeper of the privy-seal; Mr. *Legge*, chancellor of the Exchequer; Mr. *Charles Townshend*, secretary at war; and Mr. *Henry Fox*, pay-master to the army. The duke of *Devonshire* was appointed lord chamberlain of the household; earl *Talbot*, lord steward; and the earl of *Hallifax*, lord lieutenant of *Ireland*. Several titles of honour were conferred at this time. Lord *Delaware* was created earl of *Cantalupo*; *John Spencer*, cousin to the duke of *Marlborough*, viscount *Spencer*; *George Doddington*, lord *Melcomb-regis*; and *Mary*, countess of *Bute*, baroness *Mountstuart*, of *Wortley* in *Yorkshire*; the title of baron to descend to her lawful issue male by *John* earl of *Bute*. July the 8th, his majesty in council declared his resolution to demand in marriage the princess *Charlotte* of *Mecklenburgh Strelitz*. The earl of *Harcourt* was nominated ambassador-extraordinary for this purpose. The fleet, appointed to escort her most serene

serene highness, was commanded by lord *Anson*. The princess landed at *Harwich*, *September* the 7th, and next day arrived at *St. James's*, where, about nine in the evening, the nuptials were celebrated. *September* the 22d, the ceremony of the coronation was performed, with great pomp and magnificence, in *Westminster-Abbey*. On the Lord-Mayor's-Day, their majesties honoured, with their presence, the entertainment given at *Guildhall*, on that occasion.

Q. What were the military transactions of this year?

A. An expedition was undertaken against *Belleisle*. The land-forces were commanded by major-general *Hodgson*: the fleet by commodore *Keppel*. The island surrendered on the 9th of *June*. In the *West-Indies* *Dominique* was reduced by lord *Rollo* and Sir *James Douglas*; and in *America* the *Cherokees* were severely chastized by colonel *Grant*. In the *East Indies*, *Mibie* was taken by major *Hector Monro*; and the *Mogul* forces defeated by major *John Carnack*. *Jaffer Ali Cawn*, nabob of *Bengal*, was deposed; and *Cosim Ali Cawn*, his son-in-law, advanced in his stead. Great numbers of *French* ships were taken by the *English* cruisers: the *Warwick*, by captain *Hood*; the *Entreprenant*, by captain *Nightingale*; the *Comete*, by captain *Deane*; the *Courageux*, by capt. *Faulkner*, &c. In *Germany*, *Fritzlar* was taken by the hereditary prince of *Brunswick*; and on the 15th of *July*, the *French* army, under *Broglio* and *Soubise*, was routed at *Kirch-Denkern*, by prince *Ferdinand*, with the loss of 5000 men. The *Austrians* took *Schweidnitz* by surprize. A conspiracy was formed against his *Prussian* majesty; but was happily discovered and defeated. Prince *Henry* of *Brunswick* lost his life in a skirmish.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. Negotiations for a peace were carried on between the courts of *London* and *Versailles*; but they did not prove successful; and their want of success was supposed to be owing, partly to the insincerity of the *French* ministers, partly to the unwarrantable conduct of those of *Spain*. These last had, for some time, discovered a strong antipathy towards the *English*: they now presumed to interfere in the negotiation, and to blend their interests with those of the *French*: they had even entered into a treaty (known by the name of the family-

family compact) with that ambitious people: and it was generally thought, that it would not belong, before they declared war in form against *England*. Mr. *Pitt*, reflecting on all these particulars, proposed, that a fleet should be immediately sent to the *Mediterranean*, to intercept the *Spanish* fleet, or strike some other blow of importance, in case the ministry of *Spain* refused to give instant satisfaction to the court of *Great-Britain*. This proposal was disapproved by all the members of the privy-council, Mr. *Pitt* and earl *Temple* excepted; upon which these two ministers resigned their places; the former, as secretary of state; the latter, as lord-privy-seal. Mr. *Pitt*, as a reward of his important services, was gratified with a pension of 3000 *l.* a year for three lives; and, at the same time, a title was conferred upon his lady, who was created baroness *Chatham*, the title of baron to descend to her heirs male: a pension the best bestowed, and a nobility the most honourably acquired, and most truly merited, of any that is to be found in the *English* annals. The resignation, however, of this great minister, excited a loud and universal clamour; and the public was over-run with a deluge of pamphlets, and papers, on the occasion. He was succeeded, as secretary of state, by the earl of *Egremont*. Soon after, the earl of *Bristol*, the *British* ambassador at *Madrid*, was ordered to demand a communication of the family-compact; or, at least, a declaration, that it contained nothing to the prejudice of *Great-Britain*; or, in the last resort, an assurance, that *Spain* had no intention to take part with *France* in the present war: and upon his meeting with a refusal to all these demands, and the hostile designs of *Spain* being no longer doubtful, the earl left *Madrid* on the 17th of *December*. In the beginning of this year, *Theodore Galle*, a *Genevese* painter, was executed in the *Hay-Market*, for the murder of one Mrs. *King*, in whose house he had lodged. In the month of *September*, was hanged, in *Smithfield*, *John Perrot*, a bankrupt, who had concealed part of his effects. *December* the 15th, was executed, at *Strabane*, in *Ireland*, *John M'Naughton*, Esq; for the murder of Miss *Knox*; a young lady, to whom he pretended (but very unjustly) that he had been married, and whom, instead of shooting her, he intended, he said, only to have carried off.

Q. When did the new parliament assemble?

A. *November* the 3d, when the commons chose, for their speaker, Sir *John Cust*, bart. member for *Grantbam* in *Lincolnshire*; a gentleman of knowledge and probity, and every way qualified to supply the room of Mr. *Onslow*, who had so long and so worthily discharged that important office. On the 6th, his majesty made a speech to both houses, who returned the most loyal and affectionate addresses. The number of seamen for the service of the ensuing year was continued at 70,000; that of the land-forces was fixed at 67,676. The annual sum of 100,000*l.* together with the palace of *Somerset-house*, and the lodge and lands of *Richmond-Old-Park*, were settled upon the queen during her life, in case she should survive his majesty. Twelve millions were raised by annuities. The whole supply for 1762 amounted to 18,299,153*l.* 18*s.* 11½*d.* The national debt, as it stood *January* 5. 1762, amounted to 110,603,836*l.* 8*s.* 2¼*d.* The annual interest payable on the above was 3,794,594*l.* 3*s.* 5*d.* The compelling cause in the insolvent-act, having been abused to the purposes of fraud and perfidy, was now repealed. The session ended on the 2d day of *June*.

Q. What were the most memorable events of 1762?

A. In the beginning of this year, the duke of *Newcastle* resigned his post of first lord of the Treasury, which was bestowed upon the earl of *Bute*. Mr. *George Grenville* succeeded lord *Bute* as secretary of state; and the earl of *Halifax* was appointed first lord of the Admiralty, in the room of lord *Anson* deceased. These changes in the ministry tended still farther to encrease the popular clamour, that had been raised by the resignation of Mr. *Pitt*. In *May* three *Indian* chiefs arrived in *England*. *August* 12, the queen was happily delivered of a prince, who was created prince of *Wales*, and christened by the name of *George Augustus Frederic*. This summer the weather was so excessively hot, that several woods were set on fire by the influence of the sun; and the succeeding winter was so intensely cold, that the *Thames* was frozen over at *Richmond*. This year happened the famous (or rather infamous) affair of the *Cocklane* ghost, which made so much noise. *John Kello* was executed for a remarkable forgery; as were likewise *Sarah Metyard*

*Metyard* and her daughter *Sarah Morgan Metyard*, for the murder of *Anne Naylor*, their apprentice-girl.

Q. What were the other transactions of this year?

A. *January* the 4th, war was declared against *Spain*. In the month of *February*, *Martinico* was reduced by the *English* forces under general *Monckton*: the fleet was commanded by rear-admiral *Rodney*. In *March*, an expedition was undertaken against the *Havannab*, the capital of *Cuba*. The fleet, consisting of nineteen ships of the line, &c. was commanded by admiral *Pocock*: the land-forces, amounting to 10,000 men, who were afterwards re-inforced by 4000 more, were conducted by the earl of *Albemarle*. The troops landed in the island the 7th day of *June*; the trenches were opened against the *Havannab* the 1st of *July*; and the place surrendered on the 13th of *August*. The treasure and merchandize, found in the town, was valued at 3,000,000 *l.* sterling. Nine ships of the line were likewise taken. Several rich captures were made by the *English* cruizers; particularly that of the *Hermione*, a *Spanish* register ship, estimated at above 1,000,000 sterling. In the course of this year a surprizing revolution happened in *Russia*. The empress *Elizabeth* dying the 2d of *January*, was succeeded by her nephew, *Peter III.* a prince of weak parts, though of good intentions; who, instead of adhering to the system of his predecessor, not only concluded a peace with the king of *Prussia*, but even joined his arms to those of that monarch. He proceeded, at the same time, to make many other innovations, which disgusted the whole body of his subjects. In a word, by his rash and impolitic conduct, he rendered himself so universally odious, that, after possessing the crown for the space of six months, he was deposed, and thrown into prison, where he soon after died. His consort, and successor, the present empress, departed so far from the plan of her husband, as to withdraw her forces from those of the king of *Prussia*; but she did not think proper to renew hostilities against him. She concluded a neutrality, which she strictly observed; and her example was followed by the crown of *Sweden*. Thus, by a succession of events, equally unforeseen and unexpected, was his *Prussian* majesty happily saved, when he was generally thought to be on the brink of ruin. He now besieged and took

took *Schweidnitz*, defeated the *Austrians* at *Freyberg*, and obtained over them an indisputed superiority. Prince *Ferdinand*, at the head of the allied army, was no less successful. He beat the *French* at *Graebnsstein*, *June 24*; drove them from *Homburg*, *July 6*; and harrassed them so on every side, that they were obliged to call their army from the *Lower Rhine* to their assistance. The hereditary prince, however, was worsted, and even wounded, *August 30*, at *Johannisberg*; but *Cassel* surrendered to the allies. *June 24*, *Newfoundland* was taken by the *French*: *September 18*, it was retaken by the *English*. *France* and *Spain* declared war against *Portugal* as an ally of *Great-Britain*. Their combined armies entered *Portugal* in the month of *May*. The *Portuguese* forces were commanded by the count *de la Lippe Buckeburg*: the *British* auxiliaries, which were sent to their assistance, were conducted by the earl of *Loudon*, lieutenant-general *Townshend*, lord *George Lenox*, the brigadiers *Crawford*, *Burgoyne*, &c. The enemy took *Miranda*, *Braganza*, and *Chaves*, and laid siege to *Almeida*; but being repulsed, *Oct. 6*, at *Villa Velha*, they were obliged to evacuate the *Portuguese* dominions, and retire into *Spain*. In the *East-Indies*, an armament was fitted out against *Manilla*, the capital of the *Philippine* islands. Admiral *Cornish* commanded the fleet; general *Draper*, the land-forces. The troops were debarked *Sept. 24*; the place was invested in two days after; and on the 6th of *October*, it was taken by storm. The town was ransomed for a million sterling. The *Acapulco* galleon, valued at half that sum, was likewise taken. This was the last conquest made by the *English* during the late war; one of the most glorious and successful wars, that had ever been carried on in any age or by any nation. In the space of seven years, *Great-Britain* had made herself mistress of the whole continent of *North-America*: she had conquered twenty-five islands, all of them distinguishable for their magnitude, their riches, or the importance of their situation: she had won, by sea and land, twelve great battles: she had reduced nine fortified cities and towns, and near forty forts and castles: she had destroyed or taken above an hundred ships of war from her enemies; and acquired, as is supposed, about twelve millions in plunder. Uncommon, however, as were her successes, she was far from being averse to a peace. The

grand object, for which the war had been originally undertaken, was now fully attained: her supplies of money, however great, were by no means equal to her expences: and she began to feel a sensible deficiency in her supplies of men, which were not procured but with some difficulty, and at a heavy charge. The other belligerent powers, for more solid and substantial reasons, were still more pacifically inclined. The marine of *France* was intirely ruined; and her dominions exhausted of men and money. *Spain* had nothing to hope, but every thing to fear, from a continuance of the war; and *Portugal* was in a still worse condition. All parties therefore concurring in these pacific sentiments, conferences for a peace were opened, at *Paris*; and, after some negociation, it was finally concluded the 10th of *February*, 1763. *Great-Britain* received *Florida* in exchange for the *Havannab*. She retained *Canada*, *Cape-Breton*, and *Goree*; but restored all her other conquests. Soon after, a peace was concluded at *Hubertsburgh* between the emprefs-queen and his *Prussian* majesty; and thus the general tranquillity of *Europe* was happily re-established.

Q When did the parliament meet this winter?

A. *November* the 25th. 30,000 seamen were voted for the service of the year 1763: the number of land-forces was fixed at 56,360. The sum total of the supplies amounted to 13,522,039 *l.* 14 *s.* 4  $\frac{1}{2}$  *d.* The national debt was 122,603,336 *l.* 8 *s.* 2  $\frac{1}{4}$  *d.* the annual interest 4,409,797 *l.* 13 *s.* 8 *d.* The preliminaries of the peace were approved by both houses; by the lords, without a division, by the commons, with a very great majority. A duty of 4 *s.* a hoghead was laid upon cyder; which duty (with some qualifications) was to be subject to all the laws of excise. This tax met with a violent opposition, both within and without doors. Two strong protests were entered against it in the house of lords; and a petition was presented against it by the city of *London*. In a word, by this and several other means, the national discontent was raised to such a height, that lord *Bute*, who was considered as prime-minister, thought proper to resign his place of first lord of the treasury, which was bestowed upon Mr. *George Grenville*. The earl of *Hallifax* succeeded Mr. *Grenville*, as secretary of state. The parliament rose the 19th of *April*.



2. What were the most remarkable occurrences of 1763?

A. Addresses of congratulation were presented to his majesty, on the conclusion of the peace, by the city and merchants of *London*, by the clergy, by the two universities, and by many of the towns and corporations of the kingdom. The terms of the peace, however, though approved by the parliament, and by a great part of the nation, did not appear to give general satisfaction. They were violently attacked in several periodical writings; particularly in a paper, called the *North-Briton*, conducted, it is said, and principally composed, by Mr. *Wilkes*, member of parliament for *Aylesbury*. This gentleman having, in N<sup>o</sup> 45 of the *North-Briton*, remarked, with an indecent freedom, upon his majesty's speech to the parliament, a general warrant was issued by the secretaries of state for taking up the authors, printers, and publishers of that paper. In consequence of this warrant, Mr. *Wilkes* was seized, and committed prisoner to the *Tower*. Several printers, &c. were at the same time apprehended; but they were soon after released, and obtained large damages from the messengers, who had arrested them. Mr. *Wilkes*, too, brought his *Habeas Corpus* before the court of Common-Pleas, the judges of which unanimously declared, that privilege of parliament extended to the case of writing a libel; and thus that gentleman was discharged from his confinement. The house of commons, however, which was then sitting, seem to have been of a different opinion. They resolved, that N<sup>o</sup> 45 of the *North-Briton*, was a false, scandalous, and seditious libel; and that privilege of parliament does not extend to the case of writing such a libel. The lords also concurred in this resolution; though not without a violent debate, a protest being entered against it by seventeen peers. As a farther mark of their displeasure, the two houses ordered the *North-Briton* to be burnt at the *Royal Exchange* by the hands of the common hangman; and this order was accordingly executed, though with some difficulty and danger. Notwithstanding these vigorous proceedings, Mr. *Wilkes* commenced an action, in the court of Common-Pleas, against Mr. *Wood*, under-secretary of state, for seizing his papers; and a verdict was given in his favour with 1000*l.* damages, and full costs of suit. A stop, however,

was put to the progress of this affair by an unfortunate accident. Mr. *Wilkes* having, in the course of his writings, reflected, with great severity, upon Mr. *Martin*, a member of parliament, and late secretary of the treasury, a duel ensued between these two gentlemen, when Mr. *Wilkes* was dangerously wounded in the belly with a pistol bullet. He had no sooner recovered, than he thought proper to retire into *France*. January 19, 1764, he was expelled the house of commons. On the very same day, a complaint was exhibited against him in the upper house, for affixing the name of a right reverend member of that house to a book, full of indecent and profane ribaldry; which book Mr. *Wilkes* had privately printed, and dispersed among his friends. The peers proceeded against him for breach of privilege, while he was indicted in the courts below for blasphemy. And now expelled by one house; under the censure of the other; under a double prosecution for a libel and for blasphemy, he began to be abandoned even by many of his warmest friends. November 1, he was run to an outlawry for not appearing to the indictments against him; and the suits, which he had commenced against the secretaries of state, fell, of course, to the ground.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. The house of lady *Moleworth* in upper *Brook Street*, *Grosvenor-Square*, *London*, being accidentally set on fire, was soon reduced to ashes. Her ladyship, her brother captain *Usher*, her second and third daughters, and four or five servants perished in the flames. August 16, the queen was happily delivered of a prince, who was baptised by the name of *Frederic*, and soon after presented to the bishopric of *Osnaburgh*. Some disturbances were excited in *Ireland*, by a set of rioters, called *White-Boys*. In *America*, a new war broke out between the *Indians* and the *English* planters; but it was not attended with any material consequences. The *Indians* were defeated in several skirmishes. A dangerous mutiny happened at *Quebec*; but was soon suppressed by the spirited conduct of general *Murray*, the governor. In *Jamaica*, the powder-magazine of *Fort-Augustus* was blown up by lightning; and about forty persons were buried under the ruins.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

*A. November* the 15th. The number of seamen was fixed at 16,000; that of the land forces, at 17,532. The whole supply amounted to 7,712,562 *l.* 18 *s.* 7  $\frac{2}{3}$  *d.* The national debt was 129,586,789 *l.* 10 *s.* 0  $\frac{1}{4}$  *d.* The annual interest 4,688,177 *l.* 11 *s.* Violent debates were maintained this session concerning the illegality of *general warrants*; but, after a long and obstinate dispute, the question was adjourned, and the point left undecided. An act passed for paving the streets of *Westminster*. The parliament rose the 19th of *April*.

2. What were the most important transactions of 1764?

*A. January* the 16th, her royal highness, the princess *Augusta*, eldest sister to his majesty, was married, at *St. James's*, to the hereditary prince of *Brunswick*. Her portion was 80,000 *l.* Sir *Jacob Gerard Downing* left an estate of 6000 *l.* per ann. for building and endowing a college in the university of *Cambridge*. His majesty's sister, the princess *Caroline Matilda*, was betrothed to *Christian*, the prince royal of *Denmark*. This year died several eminent personages; particularly the dukes of *Devonshire* and *Athol*; the lord chancellor *Hardwicke*; the earls of *Bath*, *Macclesfield*, *Cork* and *Orreery*; the lords *Townshend* and *Cholmondeley*; *Henry Bilson Legge*, Esq; Sir *John Barnard*; *Churchill*, the poet; *Hogarth*, the painter, &c. *April* the 1st. was an eclipse of the sun. In the course of the same month, the archduke *Joseph* was elected and crowned king of the *Romans* at *Frankfort*. The tranquillity of *France* was greatly disturbed by a misunderstanding that had arisen between the king and his parliaments. The throne of *Poland*, having become vacant by the death of *Augustus III.* which happened, *October* 5, of the preceding year, count *Poniatowski*, a *Polish* nobleman, was, on the 7th of *September* of the present year, elected king in his stead. In *Russia*, prince *Ivan*, or *John*, (son of *Anthony*, prince of *Brunswick Wolfenbuttle*, and the princess *Anne* of *Mecklenburgh*) who, in 1739, had succeeded the empress *Anne Iwanowna*, and was deposed soon after; and who, ever since, had remained in close custody, was now murdered by his guards. The reason assigned for this barbarous action, was, that one *Mirowitz* had attempted to set him at liberty, in order to raise an insurrection. The guards were rewarded: *Mirowitz*

was put to death. In *America*, peace was concluded between the *English* and the *Indian* nations. In the *East-Indies*, *Cossim Ali Cawn*, the new subah of *Bengal*, was deposed, and *Mir Jaffier* restored to the throne. Major *Adams*, at the head of the company's forces, defeated those of *Mir Cossim* in several engagements. That ruffian, enraged at the progress of the *English* arms, and unable to avenge himself in the field, issued orders for massacring all the *British* prisoners, who had been taken at *Patna*. Above forty gentlemen were put to death in the most barbarous manner. One *Somers*, a *German*, a deserter from the company's service, was the perpetrator of this execrable villainy.

Q. What were the principal events of 1765?

A. The parliament met the 10th of *January*. The number of seamen continued at 16,000; that of the land-forces was fixed at 17,421. The sum total of the supplies amounted to 7,763,090 *l.* 13 *s.*  $\frac{1}{4}$  *d.* As no new debts were contracted, the national debt was the same as in the preceding year. A stamp duty was imposed upon the *American* colonies; a tax, that inflamed them with the highest animosity; and to which they, almost unanimously, refused to submit. It was therefore repealed in the succeeding session. As his majesty had been lately indisposed, a regency-bill was now passed. The parliament rose the 25th of *May*.

Q. What were the other incidents of this year?

A. Great changes were made in the ministry. The marquis of *Rockingham* was appointed first lord of the Treasury, in the room of *George Grenville*, Esq; The duke of *Grafton* and Mr. *Conway* succeeded the earls of *Sandwich* and *Hallifax* as principal secretaries of state. Mr. *Dowdeswell* was constituted chancellor of the Exchequer; the duke of *Newcastle*, lord privy-seal; the earl of *Egmont*, first commissioner of the Admiralty: and several other alterations took place in the inferior departments of government. Lord chief justice *Pratt* was raised to the peerage by the title of lord *Camden*. His majesty purchased the sovereignty of the *Isle of Man* from the duke and dutchess of *Athole* for 70,000 *l.* *August* the 21st, the queen was happily delivered of a prince, who was baptised by the name of *William Henry*. This year

year was distinguished by the death of several eminent personages; particularly the emperor of *Germany*, who was succeeded by his son *Joseph*; the dauphin of *France*; his royal highness, *William*, duke of *Cumberland*, who died *October* the 31st, in the 44th year of his age, universally lamented; and his majesty's youngest brother, prince *William Frederic*, who expired *December* 29, in the 16th year of his age. On the 30th of the same month, died at *Rome*, aged 77, the old pretender, commonly known by the name of the chevalier *de St. George*. A duel was fought between lord *Byron* and Mr. *Chaworth*, in which the latter was killed. Lord *Byron*, being tried by his peers, was acquitted of murder, but found guilty of manslaughter. He was exempted, however, by virtue of his peerage, from the usual punishment in such cases, *viz.* burning in the hand. A barbarous murder was committed on board the ship, the earl of *Sandwich*, by *George Gidley*, *Richard St. Quintin*, *Peter M'Kinlie*, and *Andrew Zekerman*, who massacred the captain, *John Cockeran*, and the rest of his crew; together with a captain *Glass*, and his lady and daughter, who were passengers. The assassins were afterwards apprehended; and being brought to trial, were condemned, executed, and hung in chains. Two ruffians, named *Barny Carrol*, and *William King*, were, by virtue of the *Coventry-act*, condemned to death, for way-laying, and slitting the nose of *Cranley Thomas Kirby*, Esq; in the streets of *London*. A terrible fire broke out in *Cornhill*, which consumed above an hundred houses, and destroyed effects to the amount of 100,000 *l.* Great disturbances were raised by the *Spittalfield-Weavers* on account of the importation of *French* silks; but they were soon suppressed. In the *East-Indies*, two victories were obtained over the forces of *Sujah Doula*; the first, by major *Hector Monro*; the second, by Sir *Robert Fletcher*, who likewise made himself master of the enemy's capital, *Eliabad*.

Q. When did the parliament assemble this year?

A. *December* the 17th. 100,000 *l.* were granted as a marriage-portion to the princess *Matilda*, the future queen of *Denmark*. The cyder-act was repealed, as was also the stamp-duty, which had been imposed upon the *American* colonies.

Q. What events distinguished the beginning of the year 1766?

A. *January 30*, died *Frederic V.* king of *Denmark*, and was succeeded on the throne by his son *Christian VII.* *February 8*, her royal highness, the hereditary princess of *Brunswick*, was safely delivered of a prince, who was christened by the name of *Charles-George-Augustus*. On the 23d of the same month, died *Stanislaus*, king of *Poland*, and duke of *Lorraine* and *Bar*. Great disturbances were raised in *Spain*, on account of the court's attempting to alter the fashions of the nation, and for several other reasons. *May 23*, the duke of *Grafton* resigned the seals as one of the principal secretaries of state, and was succeeded in that high post by the duke of *Richmond*.

F I N I S.









PJOTA

1090





